

LAURANA.

PARISMUS.



THE  
Most famous, delectable,  
AND PLEASANT  
HISTORY  
OF  
PARISMVS  
The Renowned  
PRINCE of BOHEMIA.

THE FIRST PART.

. CONTAINING  
His Noble Battels fought against the *Persians*, His love to  
*Laurana*, the King's Daughter of *Thessaly*: And of His  
strange Adventures in the *Desolate Island*;

*Dum spiro spero.*



LONDON;

Printed by B. Alsop, dwelling neere the Upper Pumpes in  
Grubstreet, 1649.



To the Right Honourable, Robert  
RATCLIFFE, Earl of Sussex, Viscount  
Fitzwaters, Lord Egremont and Burnell,  
B. A. (*in the Authors behalf deceased*)  
*wisbeth Health, Honour, and  
Happinesse.*



He most mighty Monarch Alexander, as wel beheld the crooked counterfeite of Vulcan, as the sweet Picture of Venus, Philip of Macedon accepted a bunch of Grapes presented by a simple Country Swaine. The widdows mite, was as greatly esteemed, as the great gifts of the wealthy. So he (Right Honourable Lord) did presume to present your Honour with this Fancy, intituled *Honours Triumph*. Imboldned thereunto by the view of those admired gifts of true Nobility, that abundantly adorn your verruous inclination: Not for the Worthinesse thereof, but for the good intent of the Writer, who most humbly did sue for your favour and protection, to countenance the well-intended practise of a Scholler, and did dedicate himself in all humble regard, to your Honours command: with the poor Country man, presenting somewhat to shew his duty and affection: and willing to have



## The Epistle Dedicatory

given a worthier gift, if it had consisted in his poor ability. *Apollo* gives Oracles as well to the poor as to the Rich. The Noblest minds have alwayes as wel esteemed the intents of the well-meaning, as the performance of the best able. Even so (Right Honourable Lord) I humbly craving pardon of your Honour for my boldnesse) have thought good to observe the will of the Author deceased, in reviving it to your Honour, to whom of right it doth belong.) I trust your Honour (in whom the Essence of true Nobility and vertue are united) will (under the protection of your Wisdomes favourable censure) regard my dutifull meaning therein. Resting in hopefull assurance, that notwithstanding, whatsoever wanted in him, or the works worthiness, yet your Honour will dain to accept this small present, or rather therein his good will, which did yeeld to none in regard of dutifull devotion, though unable to compare with the least of the learned writers, that have past their works under the Title of your Honourable Patronage. Which favour, he humbly desired your Honour of your abundant liberality, to impart to his poor talent, as to one that of dutie intermitted not to sollicite the Almighty, that the would alwayes direct you in the commendable race of Vertue, inrich you withall Spiritual and Temporall blessings; augment your Honours to the highest degree, and in the end, reward you with immortall felicity.

*The humble well-wisher of your  
Honours increase.*

B. A.



## To the Courteous Reader.



*Even as an unskilfull pilote lying in safe Harbour, should in time of foul weather launch into the deepe, and so bring his Ship in danger: So I (Courteous Reader) have adventrously thrust forth this Fancy, to abide your censure: which if kind, care is past: If otherwise, to abide Shipwrack by your discontent. But howsoever, I rely upon your courtesie, that although the matter procure you not that delight my Travels did expect, yet you will allow the writers good intent; And although the phrase be not altogether agreeable to your fancie, yet that you will favourably judge thereof as the first fruits, of my labours.*

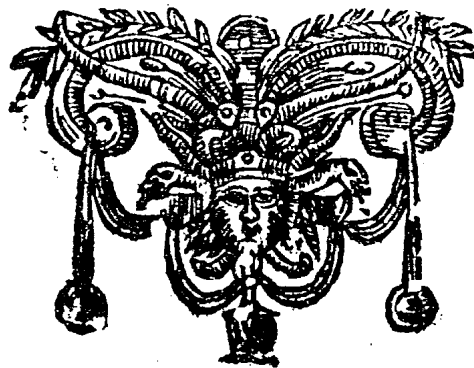
*If my self were present to Answer all Objections, then those that are discontented should rest better satisfied. But (in the mean time) in my absence: I crave your kind opinion, wishing no other shelter where-under to shrowd the defects, then your gentle Courtesie.*

*This Knight was long since bred in Bohemia, but in Thessalia he won his Title of Honour, where first began his famous deeds: which if they please, my reward is sufficient: If not, yet pardon: And by your Clemency & favor, to the second part, whose being resteth in your power.*

Expect not the high stile of a refined wit, but the plaine discription of Valiant Knights, and the constant Truth of Loyall Friends. Condemne not unkindly, but censure favourably, and impute the defects of my want, not my will that my desire my wished effect, which is to please all, and give offence to none: yet carelesse to satisfie the curious discontented, who condemn all things, but amend nothing.

And thus for my recompence, let me have your kind words and lawfull favour, and I ask no more. Farewell.

E. FORD.



THE

THE  
MOST DELECTABLE  
and pleasant History of Parismus,  
the famous Prince of Bohemia:

WITH  
His Noble Battailles fought against the *Persians*, his  
Love to *Laurana*, the Kings Daughter of  
*Theffalie*, and of his strange adventures in the Desolate Island.

The first Part.

CHAP. I.

How *Parismus*, Son and Heyre to the King of *Bohemia*, arrived in *Theffalie*, how hee was entertained by *Dionisius* the King, who kept his Court at the City of *Thebes*, and of a strange Adventure that befell to *Osiris*, one of *Dionisius* his Knights:



In the most rich and famous Country of *Theffalie*, reigned a King named *Dionisius*, whose discretion in government, and singular wisdom in ruling so mighty a nation, made the splendant fame of his renown to spread it self to the uttermost confines of all the world: and most Countries

tries made continuall traffique thither by reason of the good and equitable Lawes he had instituted for the peace and quiet of his whole Countrey.

Amongst the rest of his external blessings, wherof he enjoyed abundance, his Court was much renowned by the exceeding beauty and vertuous gifts of Olivia his Queen, by whom he had one onely daughter named Laurana whose rare Beauty so far excelled all other Ladies, that she was esteemed (in those parts of the world) the onely Paragon for beauty; besides the vertuous qualities, and precious gifts of nature, wherewith her mind was abundantly adorned, did so much extoll her high commendations, that many Princes of farre Countries, did travell thither to attaine her Love. Insomuch that by continuall access of many strange Knights the court of Dionisius, daily increased in dignity who gave, most courteous entertainment, to all, as best befitted their honours, and accorded with his most bounteous wisdom.

Amongst the rest of the Knights that came to be Eye-witnesses of the beauty of Laurana, it fortuned the young Prince Parismus, Son and heire to the King of Bohemia, to arrive in the confines of Thessaly, being accompanied with divers Nobles of his Fathers Court who having before heard of the fame of Dionisius, the courteous entertainment he gave unto strangers, and the exceeding beauty of his Daughter Laurana, determined to travell thither, to try his Fortune, to winne her love, as also to be partaker of his beauty, being drawn thereunto by a vertuous inclination to imitate his honorable examples. And calling unto him one of his Knights named Oristus, willed him to go unto Dionisius his court, and to signifie unto his Majesty, that he was desirous to visite him, if so be it would please his Highnesse to accept of him as a Guest.

Oristus making all possible speed, soon arrived at the City of Thebes, where the King then kept his Court, and being admitted his presence, delivered his Message. Which when Dionisius understood, he told Oristus, that he would very willingly

ingly gratulate the Princes kindnesse; and withall desiring him to certifie his Lord, that he should be most heartily welcome, whereupon Oristus departed.

Dionisius presently willed his Noblemen to be in readinesse the next day, for he purposed to meet the Prince himself. And in the mean time he commanded all preparation that might be devised to be made in readinesse, for his more honorable entertainment.

Early the next morning, Dionisius attended by his Noblemen rode forth to meet the Prince, some three miles from the City, whom being met, he most lovingly embraced and welcomed with exceeding great courtesie.

Parismus marvailling very much at this unexpected kindness in him, sayd: Most high and magnificent King, I being altogether unworthy of this your exceeding favour, most humbly intreat your pardon to my presumption, desiring you to impute my rashnesse to my youth, which hath attempted this boldnesse, without any hope in the least degree, how to deserve such kindnesse.

Dionisius taking him by the hand, desired him to leave off those speeches, for that he esteemed his Court and Country insufficient to entertain him according as he desired, telling him that he was the most welcome guest to his Court, that might be: wherewith they joyfully departed towards the city: but as they rode, they heard a most grievous groan in the thicket of a Wood hard by. Whereupon Dionisius commanded his Knights to beset the Wood on every side; himselfe, Parismus and divers Noble men, entred the Thicket, where they found an armed Knight most grievously wounded: At which pittifull spectacle, Dionisius alighted from his Horse, viewed his face, and knew him to be his trusty Knight Oris, whom he most dearely loved. And with all speed he commanded him to be conveyed to the Court, that his own Physicians might look to him, and bind up his wounds.

In the mean time, the King, Parismus, and divers other Knights, made very diligent search in the Wood, but could find

And no creature there, whereby to know any certaintie how Ofris should be thus wounded. And being thus discontented, on a suddain the King was certified there was great hope of his recovery. who speaking to Parismus said: Most Noble Prince, I hope this mischance hath not disquieted you, for I should be sorry you should conceive any occasion of sadness thereat, being I trust by that time Ofris be recovered, we shall easily come to the knowledge thereof.

My Lord replied Parismus, I have no cause to be grieved for my part, but to see your Majesty hereby disquieted. And said Dionisius it somewhat griebeth me, because Ofris is one that I love, being well worthy thereof, for his vertues do far exceed many men, of whose faith and fidelity I have had sufficient tryall that a more loyal Knight cannot be found. By this time they were come to the Pallace Gate, where was the Queen with all her train of Ladies, to welcome Parismus, which was such a pleasing sight to behold that the Prince with the suddain blow of their beautie, was driven into a deep studie from which he was reborn by the Queene, who most graciously came and welcomed him, saying to all kindness, I bid your Honour welcome into Thessalie, where wee will indeavour to requite your friendship in comming unto us.

Most vertuous Princeesse (quoth he) for this your honorable favour, both my self and all that is mine, shall be continually bound to do you all dutifull service. The great glorie of the Pallace made Parismus so marvell, this honorable entertainment, the sumptuous banquets, the rare Musick, and gallant dances, so tedious to rehearse, made him thinke that Fame had altogether darkned the glory of that place so that all his senses were greatly refreshed with the varietie of severall delights.

At such time as King Dionisius and the Prince entered the Court, Laurana hearing of the Princes comming, standing at her Chamber window, viewed them well, and knew, at least thought that to be Parismus, that came with her Father, and

and the Queen, attended by a gallant train of Knights, and calling her said Leda unto her: she said, surely this is the famous Knight Parismus, (which doth come with my Father) the Prince of Bohemia? Yes (quoth Leda) I think so, for a more gallant Knight did I never behold. Wherewith the crimson colour in Lauranas cheekes began to revive: which Leda perceiving, said: It would become our Court well to have his presence continually, for by all likelyhood it cannot chuse but a Knight of so safe proportion, must needs be endued with as excellent gifts. Why quoth Laurana, this Court cannot long continue such Guests: whereupon presently she going to dinner felt on a sodain, a kind of alteration in all her parts, which seemed very strange unto her, for even then, love began to kindle in her tender heart, which as yet she did not well understand, but afterwards grew to a burning heat, as shall hereafter be declared.

She used seldom to go abroad but sometimes privately of recreation, for such was her strange resolve, that she delighted in nothing but vertuous meditations.

To relate the conference the King and Parismus had, were too tedious and impertinent to the history. But the Prince much marvailling he could not see Laurana so famous for her Beauty, was hereby drawn into many deep cogitations, by which thoughts, and remembrance of the late journey he had passed only to behold her person, and now could not be assured he had seen the beauty he expected, was fallen into such a sad study, that in a manner he neither heard what was spoken, nor regarded where he was. At the last, reviving his senses that were dalled with passions he suddainly sighed, and smiling said: (feeling lest his heavinesse had been noted) your Majesty may peradventure note my sadness: the remembrance of your Knights injury, maketh me study how he should be so grievously wounded, and no man found that should at the same, which words he only spake to excuse himself.

Surely, answered the King, some man by secret treachery hath wrought him that harme, which (without doubt) at more conve-

convenient time we shall find out the truth thereof, which I would effect with all speed, but that I hope to be ascertained by himself, whom my physicians say, to be in good estate of attendance. With these and many other such like speeches they pass away the time for the present.

Dinner being fully ended, *Dionisius*, *Parisinus*, and the Queen, walked into a most pleasant Garden, when after a while he was entertained with a most costly and rare Banquet, provided in an Arbour or Banqueting-house, adjoining to a Grove fraught with many pleasant Birds, whose sweet harmony much augmented the pleasure of the place, all things being most artificially contrived for delight, which when *Parisinus* beheld, he then began to think with himself, how shall I see the *Princesse Laurana*, for whose sight I have undertaken this my travail, whose delightful presence would refresh my tired senses, and likewise expell these inward cares wherewith I am thus perplexed.

But when he saw none but the King and Queen, he began to waxe much troubled in his mind, to think what might be the cause, that the whole same had long since come to his knowledge, was not to be seen, that by constrained mirth, he pass away the time in such Banqueting and other pastime, as the King entertained him with all, which were such, as he much wondered at. And night being come with all fatelnesse that might be, he was conducted to his Lodging, which was most sumptuously adorned with most costly and rich hangings, that the place seemed a new *Paradise*, for there wanted nothing that might either delight the ear or eye. As for Lodgings for his Noblemen Knights and followers they were placed in such manner, that they seemed by their situations to be Guardians to their Lords person: having then taken his leave of the King and Queen, he betook himself to his rest.

## CHAP. II.

Now *Parisinus* having sojourned some dayes in the *Thessalian* Court, being frustrated of seeing the *Princesse Laurana*, imparted his mind to *Oristus*, one of his Knights, by whose meanes afterwards he came to have a sight of her. And what afterwards happened.



After *Parisinus* was come to his Chamber, he called to him *Oristus*, the onely man whom he trusted, and asked him how he liked the Court of *Dionisius*. My Lord (quoth he) the small continuance I have had therein, might be sufficient to excuse me for censuring thereof, but to satisfy your demand, I do esteeme and thinke of it, as a most renowned and honourable place. But said *Parisinus*, what if thy Lord should here purchase that which shall be worse then death unto him, unlesse he have remedy? What wouldst thou then thinke? I would my Lord (said he) speake my opinion, if I knew whence the originall of that evil should proceed. From my self said *Parisinus*, for thus it is. Thou I am sure hast heard of the renowned *Laurana*, and of the honorable report that is spread of her beauty and vertues, which driveth me into many thoughts, because I cannot behold that beauty; therefore I impart my mind to thee, as to the onely man I trust, that unlesse I can by the meanes have some hope of comfort, I will both curse the hour of my nativity, and remain hereafter in continuall grief: therefore counsell me what I were best to do herein.

My Lord (said *Oristus*) since it hath pleased your highnesse so much to favour me, as to chuse me to be your ayde herein, I will most faithfully and speedily, do to the uttermost, to accomplish your desire. I pray thee then do it (said *Parisinus*) with all speed, for my restless passions require counsell, I have (said *Oristus*) some acquaintance with Lord *Remus*, who is greatly favored of the King, continually resident in the Court, and

and well beloved of all, by whose meanes I do not doubt but both to have some certain knowledge of the *Princesse*, as also to bring you to her speech: and according as you have put me in trust, so I will use all the means I can to purchase your content.

Most part of the night being past, *Parismus* betooke himselfe to his rest, and *Oristus* to his lodging. In the morning *Dionisius* being early up, used his accustomed manner to visit his *Gaests*: and comming to *Parismus* Chamber, he found him not there, but walking in a Gallery thereto adjoining, and saluting him, said, Noble Prince, if you are not weary of your late journey, I would request your company to go on Hunting this day, for that I have appointed to meet a noble friend of mine at the Forrest of Red Deer for so it is called, for the abundance of those Beasts that the Countrey breedeth (where you shall see what pastimes the Hounds can make. Which *Parismus* kindly excepted *Oristus* he stayed behind, to the end to bring his purpose to effect, and walking into the Garden, he chanced according to his desire to meet with Lord Remus, who having saluted him, said he was glad to find him at leisure, to have some conference with him about their acquaintance: so that walking into a solitary arbour, talking of divers matters, it chanced the *Princesse* Laurana thinking to recreate her selfe in the Garden, for that she thought all the Nobles had bene gone one hunting with the King her Father, chanced to come accompanied with her Maiden Leda, unto the solitary place where Lord Remus and *Oristus* were then talking, and espying Lord Remus whom she presently knew, My Lord (quoth she) I had thought you had been on hunting this day; but I see your mind is busied with some other exercises. Most Noble *Princesse* (quoth he) if I had gone on hunting, I should have left this honorable Lord without company, so that I thought it my duty to keep him from better studies with my homely talk. So she kindly saluting them told *Oristus* he was welcome to her Fathers Court, and therewith departed.

Quoth

Quoth *Oristus*, My Lord, is this the *Princesse* Laurana, of whom I have heard such rare commendations in *Bohemia*: it is said be, the very same, and the most vertuous and courteous Lady that liveth this day, who very seldom commeth abroad, but continually giveth her mind to practise excellent qualities, amongst other vertuous Ladies. During this their talk, they had walked about the Pallace, to the end that *Oristus* might behold the stateliness thereof, who having seen all things, and knowing which was Lauranaes lodging, was in some measure comforted by that knowledge.

Thus the day being spent, and the King returned from hunting, *Parismus* came to *Oristus*, and required of him, if he had heard of Laurana, and what comfort there was for him. My Lord (quoth he) I have beheld her, and heard her heavenly voice, which is able to assent any man with her exceeding beautie, relating unto him all the conference he had with Lord Remus, which did greatly rejoyce him to hear, and so betooke himselfe to his rest, where he spent the most part of the night, in meditating how to come to talke, or have sight of her.

Very early the next morning, taking a booke in his hand, he went into the Garden that was under Lauranaes Chamber Window, where having walked a while, he espied her looking out, that he stood as one halfe amazed, to behold her wonderfull beauty, for though he had never seene her before, yet his fancie perswaded him it was she, which she perceiving slipping back called Leda unto her, asking her, if she knew the knight that walked under her Window, who certified her it was the Prince of *Bohemia*: whereat Laurana blusht so exceedingly, that her heart seemed to leap within her, then secretly looking out, she diligently beheld him, taking such generall view of his comeliness that presently her fancie began to commend his person, feeling in her selfe a kind of delight to behold him: but *Parismus* seeing her gone, began to reprove himselfe of folly, that by his rashness had deprived himselfe of her sight.



By that time he had walked there a good space, Oristus came to tell him, that the King expected his coming into the great chamber, which caused him to depart, giving a sad look to the window, as very unwilling to leave the sight thereof, recounting to Oristus, how fortunately he had beheld Laura. By this time they were come to the King: who saluting Parismus, desired his company to go visite Oris's, at their coming they found him very cheerful, which rejoiced Dionisius to see, and coming to him, told him that he with the young Prince of Bohemia, was come to visit him, and to be assured the occasion of his hurt, I yield my humble thanks said Oris to your Highnesse, and to that noble Prince, for the care you have of my welfare, being sorry that by my misadventure you have been all disquieced.

What to satisfie your Highnesse herein, thus it was; The same day your Excellency found mee sore wounded, I being up somewhat early walking at the nether end of my Orchard, spied an Armed Knight halting and pulling a beautiful young Sparden, in most rude and discourteous manner, and notwithstanding the manifold intreaties he used, would not leave his cruelty, but used these speeches unto her: content thy self to be thus used at my hands, and take it for a favour that I use thee not worse: for the injury thy brother hath done me, will I revenge on thee.

Why said she, it was not by my offence, nor procured by my knowledge, he is a Knight, and beareth armes, revenge your selfe on him, and do not attempt to dishonour me, that am a Sparden, but rather take my life, that thereby I may be rid from the shame you intend to my honour. Say proud Damozell quoth he, if thou thinkest the shame I intend a shame, I will it the rather do it to vex thee.

I listened so long as I could to heare their talk, and marking which way they tooke, I went in, and with all speed I could, armed my selfe and followed after them, but could not overtake them before they were gotten in to the Wood, where by the cry of the damzel, I found him ready to accomplish his

Willany

villany, threatening me grievously to torment her, if she did not yield unto him. Traytor, said I, what moveth thee to use this Lady thus discourteously? It ill becometh a Gentleman & a Knight as thou seemest to be, to use such rigor to a distressed Virgin. So it begone, said he againe, or I will quickly send thee against thy will, and then tel thee my reason, wherewith the Sparden desired me, I would pity her estate, telling me that she was daughter unto a Knight belonging to the King of Salmatia, and was by this Knight violently taken forth of her Fathers garden, none being by to ayd her, and brought unto that poore estate, by the cruelty of that wicked homicide, who meant to dishonour her, desiring me if I were a Knight, and not bent to be inhuman, that I would release her from his tyranny. Wherewithall (his mind being puffed with villany) he ran upon me, and I defended my selfe, we had not continued long, but there issued forth of the Wood two other in Armour, being as it seemed of the firsts acquaintance, and violently running upon mee, not speaking one word lest me in that estate you found me, but when the two last came forth, the Sparden fled away, and whether they found her againe or no, I know not, This my Sovereigne is the true occasion of my mischance.

Parismus at this while stood very sadly musing, having his mind more buſſed on his Love, then to listen to Oris's speech, being far enthralled to the beautie of Laura, on whom he placed all his felicity; till that Dionisius wakened him from his damps with this speech. My Lord, said he, how was it possible that those men should escape our hands, we coming so neare, and besetting the Wood presently upon the noise, and I marvel how the Damozell could escape unſcene, we having so nearely searched the Wood throughout. My Lord (quoth he) either they have some privy Cave wherein they convey themselves, or I cannot thinke, how they should so secretly depart, not knowing that there was any at hand to rescue Oris. Thus having conferred and every ones censures diversly given, Dionisius said: My heart earnestly de-

Heeth to know how this is come to passe, and to find that po<sup>r</sup>  
distressed maiden.

### CHAP. III.

How *Sicanus* Son to the King of *Persia*, the King and Queene  
of *Hungaria*, the Prince of *Sparta*, and the Lady *Isabella*, ar-  
rived at *Dionisius* Court, and how *Parismus* in a mask (ac-  
companied by Lord *Remus*, and divers others Knights of  
*Theffalia*) courted the Princesse *Laurana*, and how she be-  
came enamoured of him.



When *Dionisius* and *Parismus* had visited *Oli-  
vus* and returned to the Court, they heard  
the sound of most sweet according Musicke,  
which made *Dionisius* wonder but it was soon  
certified him that there, was come to his  
Court, divers Ladies of great account, from  
forth of *Hungaria*, and *Sparta*, in great mirth and royaltie,  
whom the Queene had entertained, not knowing what they  
were, because they concealed themselves, and that there were  
divers Knights hunting in the Forrest of red *Deere*, and  
intended that night to come to the palace, which made *Dio-  
nisius* both admire what these new come guests should be,  
and studie how to entertaine them on such a suddain. There-  
fore leaving *Parismus* to be accompanied with others of  
his nobles, he gave order for the entertaining that company  
of Strangers.

When *Parismus* was alone, he got himselfe to his cham-  
ber and began to think, that now there was such a company  
of states that concealed themselves coming to the Court, he  
being so unfortunate, as not yet having made known his  
love to *Laurana*, some of them might become his rivall, and  
make first suite unto her, and so be first accepted, and he disap-  
pointed of his chiefest felicity; therefore he determined that  
evening to use all possible meanes he might to make knowne  
his affection: having spent most part of the afternoone in these  
and

and such like meditations, he was certified by *Oristus*, the  
strange knight, were come to the Court, and that he knew  
them to be *Antenor* the young King of *Hungaria*, and the  
young Queene, the Kings sonne of *Sparta* named *Turnus*, and  
one young knight that concealed himselfe, who seemed to be  
the greatest personage in the company; and that the Ladies  
that came before, were the Queene of *Hungaria*, Lady *Isa-  
bella*, sister to the Prince of *Sparta*, and with them divers La-  
dies of account, which made *Parismus* muse what that un-  
knowne knight should be, and began to be jealous of that,  
which as yet he had no likelihood himselfe to obtaine. Being  
thus troubled in mind, he resolved that night by a Masque to  
honour *Dionisius* his Guests, thereby to win occasion, if it  
might possible be, to court his mistress. Therefore he willed  
*Oristus* to make some of the young Nobles of the Court ac-  
quainted with his intent, and so to certify *Dionisius* that he  
was scarce well, and desired to keep his Chamber, which  
when *Dionisius* heard, he desired *Olivia* to see that he wanted  
nothing, for he was the onely Guest he esteemed.

The Queene coming to *Parismus* Chamber to visit him,  
found him very busie with the other knights about their  
Masque, who stopping her, began to be somewhat abashed,  
saying: Most noble Queene, I desire your pardon, having  
taken me thus on a suddaine, I did certify his Highnesse  
that I was not well, to the intent to bring our Masque un-  
looked for.

Noble Prince (replied the Queene, I am glad that you are  
in this good estate of health, & thus ready to honour us with  
your vertuous exercises, promising to keep your intent secret  
to my self: and if it you want any furtherance that I can plea-  
sure you withall, it shall be ready at your command; where-  
with she departed to *Laurana*, telling her that she intended to  
make the new come states a banquet: & therefore willed her to  
give order to have the same performed: which newes rejoiced  
*Laurana* so hear for she hoped there to see the Prince of *Bo-  
hemia*, to whom she bare an inward love, & desire of acquain-  
tance:

rance: so that hastning all things to a readinesse, and adorning her selfe in most costly ornaments, she expected the wished time of their comming.

When supper was ended, the Queen commanded a Gentleman, to invite Dionisius, the King of Hungaria, the Prince of Sparta, & all the rest unto a banquet, in an exceeding stately Gallerie, where they were by the Queen most royally entertained, all in generall admiring the exceeding beautie, and comely statelinesse of the Princess Laurana, that almost they fed themselves as much with her surpassing beautie, as with the dainties that were prepared. Laurana on the other side, marvelled that among all those knights she could not behold the Prince of Bohemia, which had drawn her into manifold thoughts, only resting in hope to be afterwards assured of the truth.

By that time the Banquet was ended, and all ready to depart, they were stayed by the sound of most sweet Musick, which unexpected noise, made Dionisius to wonder: but to drive him from those thoughts, the maskers entred in this sort: first entred two torchbearers, apparelled in white satten beset with spangles of gold, after whom followed two Eunuches, apparelled all in green, playing on two Instruments then came Parisius, attired all in carnation satten, most richly beset with precious stones, that the glittering reflection thereof, with the light of the candle did dazle the eyes of the beholders: next followed two other torchbearers and Eunuches apparelled as the former, and playing one several Instruments, then came two knights apparelled in tawrie, most richly adorned: next them followed two other torchbearers and Eunuches, apparelled as the first: after whom followed two other knights, apparelled in tawrie as the other; and last came two torchbearers and two Eunuches apparelled, and playing on several Instruments: after whom, followed Lord Remus, apparelled in carnation like Parisius, but not in such gorgeous manner: altogether marching thrice about the Gallery, whiles their Musick sounded, all the assembly

seemly well liked this mask, especially Dionisius wondered of whence they were, for that he was altogether ignorant, nothing suspecting that they were of his owne Court, saying to the Prince of Sparta, there is a young Prince in my Court that is now sick, otherwise I should think he had been chiefe amongst them: the eyes of the whole company were busied with beholding their comely persons, and their ears delighted with the sweet sound of their Musick. Laurana advisedly beheld those knights, thinking verily Parisius was one in the company: for she knew not of the message he had sent the King her Father. While he was in the midst of this meditation, Parisius came with great reverence to take her by the hand to dance, which she courtously accepted. Lord Remus took the Prince of Spartas sister, Lord Orilus another Lady of Sparta, and likewise the rest.

The first measure being ended, Parisius reverently saluted Laurana, with these speeches. Most vertuous Princess, pardon me for presuming to trouble your sacred ears with my speeches, for the vertue of your beautie hath overmastered my affections, and my poor life is devoted to your service, desiring you to accept me for your poor servant, though altogether unworthy. And though the small tryall you have of my truth, may discourage you to credit me: yet notwithstanding my unworthinesse, I desire you to imploy me any way, thereby to try how willing I will be any way to merit your favor. Sir quoth Laurana, I thank you for your kindnesse, neither can I blame your speeches if your meaning be good. But as I am unworthy to entertaine such a servant, so would I not willingly trust him I know not, but hereafter when your disguise is banished, as I shall see good, I will entertaine you.

Noble Lady, said Parisius, I have taken this habit, onely thereby to be so happy, as to make manifest my affection to deserve your favor: that if you will bechuse to conceive a right of my good meaning, you would say, he that professeth his service, would refuse to do it to any but your most worthy self. Sir quoth she, as I know you not, so I am ignorant

of your meaning, and therefore count me not unmannerly to make no more estimation of your proffered courtship. Parismus being ready to speake, the second measure sounded, which being ended, Lord Remus began to parly with the Lady Isabella, sister to the Prince of Sparta. Courteous Lady, I being unknown proffer my humble service unto your selfe, unto whose perfections I am so wholly bound, that unlesse it please you to accept of my loyalty, I shall consume my wearisome dayes in sorrow. Sir, quoth Isabella, your undeserved kindnesse I know not how to requite, and I would be sorry that by my occasion you should be grieved, and I promise you, as occasion serveth, hereafter I will entertaine you.

All this while Parismus was talking with Laurana, using these speeches; Most worthy Princesse, because I am disguised, you may count my words to proceed rather of course, then of true affection: but assure you, never did any with truer zeal utter his fainting words, nor more abhorre unfaithfulnesse then my selfe doth: being also unknowne to you, you may thinke my boldnesse to proceed of hope not to be known: but to acquaint you with my name, it is Parismus, who have forsaken my Countrey and friends, only to serve your vertuous selfe, and doe you service. But since my coming into your Fathers Court, I could never be so happye untill this happye houre, as to enjoy your presence, which is the onely comfort whereon my happinesse dependeth: therefore vertuous Princesse, weigh my intent in the ballance of equitie, and let me by your comfortable speech be revived.

Appoble Lord replied, Laurana, I heartily thank you for taking so much paines for my sake, being unworthy thereof and also unable to be sufficiently thankfull unto you for the same; & for that you say your happiness resteth in my power, if I can any way work your content, to the uttermost of my endeavour, I will doe it. Parismus was so ravished with the heavenly voyce of Laurana, that he could have wished no other happiness, then to enjoy her presence, and was by her kind and modest answer so much comforted, that he resolved no misery

or calamity whatsoever, should alter his affection.

Laurana on the other side, whose mind was never before in thraldome, began now to be so farre tyed in the bonds of friendship, & good liking to Parismus, that she was altogether unwilling to leave his company: By this time the rest of the Maskers having ended their speeches, the sound of the musick made them remember their third measure, which being ended, Parismus kissing the Princesse, hand with a heavy sigh, left her in the place where he found her, and being ready to depart, Dionisius coming unto them, said: Most courteous Knights, I know not what entertainment to give you, for that you are to me unknowne: but request this at your hands, that you take a Banquet my Daughter hath provided: which words caused Parismus to be willing unto it, because it was the Princesse doing, whose presence was the sweet preservative of his life. Your Majesty (answered Parismus) maketh us so kind a proffer, that we cannot (being bound at your command) deny your request: so unmasking himselfe, he came with great reverence to Dionisius, who knowing him embraced him, and said he was glad he had no worse sickness then that; and that he was much indebted unto him for honoring his Court with his pastime. So saluting all the company, the Knight that concealed himselfe, suddenly departed the presence, upon occasion as shall hereafter be declared.

All the assembly greatly commended Parismus, being much delighted to behold his vertuous behaviour, and was indeed worthy to be accounted the Prince of courtship. The Queene then told him, she had been his secret counsell-keeper, and he humbly kissed her hand, thanked her, and being come to the place where the Banquet was provided, Dionisius told them, hee would leave them to be welcomed by the Queene and Laurana, whilst he went to accompany his other Guests: which Parismus was very glad of, and Laurana also, who all this while had so fastidied with beholding his comely person, that the deep impression of love, was now fully settled in her heart. But Parismus not forgetting to salute the Saint he served,

terbed, with reverence kiss her, thanking her that she vouchsafed to take such pains, to prepare entertainment for such undeserving Guests: using many other speeches which delighted her to hear, & him to utter, that they were so far delighted one in anothers company, that it was death for them to part, she not knowing that his love was grounded upon such firm resolve, nor he thinking she would so kindly accept his proffer'd service. During the time of the banquet, a simple judging eye might discern their love by their looks, that all the company began to deem, that which afterwards proved true. Every one with kind salutations being parted to their several lodgings. *Parismus* told *Oristus*, what kind and undeserved favor he had received at *Lauranaes* hands, which *Oristus* was very glad of, the very recitall whereof, affected the Princes heart with an exceeding joy.

*Laurana* making all the haste she could to be rid from the company of *Isabella*, and other Ladies that accompanied her because her heart was desirous to meditate of her love, went into her chamber, where being alone, & much troubled in her thoughts, she uttered these speeches. How happy am I, to be thus disquieted with the sight of *Parismus*, not knowing whether his words proceed of custome or affection. I that was earst at liberty, am now become captive to mine own affections, and inthrall'd to a stranger. What of that, peradventure he is in the same mind I am, neither have I any cause to doubt, but that his words proceed from the good will he beareth me, and that the intent of his coming to my Fathers court, was only for my sake, as he saith. might I be happily assured of the truth of these doubts, then would my disquiet mind rest highly contented: and untill that time I shall but spend my time in endless care and heaviness: if his words proceeded from the depth of true meaning, then will he still prosecute the suite he hath begun: no other have I any cause to suspect his honourable meaning. Well, I will content my self so well as I can, and seek some means thereby to be assured, and rid my penive heart of these doubts.

Carely

Early the next morning, she called *Leda* unto her, saying, that she had a secret to impart unto her, that did concern her life and honor, and therefore willed her to be secret, telling her all that had passed betwixt *Parismus* and her; and how that unlesse she might be certain of his intent, she should consume her selfe with care.

## CHAP. III.

How *Parismus* by the meanes of *Leda*, *Lauranaes* Waiting-mayd, came to the speech of the Princesse, and how they met in the Arbour in the Garden. And how *Sicanus* discerned the love betwixt *Parismus* and the Princesse *Laurana*, and fearing to be disappointed, declared the cause of his coming to the King, and what ensued thereon.

**D**ionigus was early up as his custome was, to visit his Guests, and busie in entertaining them with all royalty that might be. *Parismus* being as busie in his mind (more then any knew) got himself into the Garden, under the window of *Lauranaes* lodging, being frustrated of all other hope to see his beloved: where he had not long walked, but was soon espied of *Laurana*, who being delighted with his sight, called *Leda*, and willed her to make some excuse into the Garden, where he was walking, to see if his coming into that place were for her sake or no.

*Leda* thereupon taking a fair cloath in her hand, went into the Garden, as if she intended to gather some hearbes, and had not seen him. When she came near the place where he was sitting under an open Arbour in deep study, having a sight of her, he suddainly started, & knowing her to be the servant to *Laurana*, kindly saluted her, saying fair *Damozell*, quoth he, if I be not deceived you are attendant on the Princesse *Laurana*. Sir, answered *Leda*, I am, I pray you (saith he) how fareth your mistress, for I am in doubt our last nights

expect-



Prerelle disquieted her, which if I knew, I would not hereafter attempt such boldness. Indeed (quoth Leda) I know not, but I hear my Lady much commend the Prince of Bohemia to be a gallant knight, and that she was much beholding unto him, & used many gracious words in his commendation. Do you not (quoth he) know Parismus if you saw him? So he said Leda: I am the man said he, and thou bringest me that comfort, by reporting that my Mistress thinketh well of me, as if thou hadst saved my life, and I am to intreat a labour at thy hands, which if thou grant I shall rest bound unto thee for the same. He said (said Leda) I humbly desire you to command me, and I will both faithfully & secretly accomplish your request. Then this is my request, quoth he, that thou wouldst commend me to thy Lady, & deliver unto her this paper, certifying her, that I have thus boldly presumed to trouble her, being thereto compelled by her commanding countesse, on which hope I fully rely for pardon, withall giving her a rich jewel, all she departed towards her Mistress, telling him that she would return with an answer the next morning.

Parismus being much quieted in mind with this hope of comfort, went into the great Hall, where he found the King and the rest of the Nobles and having saluted them he espied Sicanus, son to the King of Persia, brother to whom and his Father the King of Bohemia, had been long time in continual wars: but now latelie a peace was concluded. This Sicanus was the knight that concealed himself, who the night before, seeing Parismus so much honoured and beloved, could not endure to stay any longer, for that he envied him still as an enemy. Parismus seeing him & noting his last nights sudden departure, dissembling as though he had not known him spent the rest of the day in companie of Dionisius. Leda likewise being returned unto her Mistress Laurana, told her all the speeches Parismus had with her, and delivered the letter he had sent: which when she had received, she went into her Closet, and with great joy opened the same, and found the contents to be these.

To

To the most vertuous Princessse *Laurana*,  
Parismus wisheth hearts content.

**M**OR Honourable Princessse, I presume thus boldly to write unto your vertuous selfe, thereby to ease my heart of the care wherewith it is perplexed, only procured by your heavenly excellencies, that I here prostrate my self your thrall, desiring you of pittie to mitigate my martyrdom by your clemencie. I desire your gentle acceptance of my love, which have vowed constantly to continue perfectly to your selfe: which being grounded upon the truest foundation of sincere affection, is not to be blemished with any dishonour, I cannot protest, but performe the part of a faithfull Servant, my true heart shall not harbour untruth, but I rest yours, to preserve or destroy. If your excellencie would admit that I might come to speak with you, then would I give you further assurance of my fidelity, which if you vouchsafe to grant, it shall be no way to your disparagement: and as from your selfe I first received my wound of disquiet, so let your clemency salve my perplexed misery. And thus committing with this poor paper, my life into your custody, I cease.

*Yours ever, or his own never. P.*

When Laurana had read the Letter, she began to meditate with her selfe, how she should accomplish his request, in such sort, that it might no way blemish her honour, nor give him cause to suspect that she were light, to be easily perswaded, for she esteemed her credit more then her life, and his love more then both. At last she resolved to answer his Letter, and give directions to Leda how she should come to talke with her, and no man privie thereto but themselves: and calling Leda, told her that she should deliver the answer to the Princes Letter, and withall this message. That if she would



would take the paines, the next night, he should finde her in the Arbour at farther end of the Garden, that was under the window, about midnight, upon condition that her mayd Leda might be with her, and that he should bring no man with him, for that he might easily come thither without danger. Leda being up early hied her with all speed to Parismus Chamber, where being come, she delivered the message Laurana gave her in charge, which rejoiced Parismus to hear, and withall the answer to his Letter, which when he had received at the first, he was unwilling to tear the seale that her sweet hand had impressed: oft blewing the superscription, but hoping the contents within would bring more ease to his heart, then the outward blew, he opened the same, and read as followeth,

*Laurana, saluteth the Prince*  
PARISMVS.

**M**Y Lord, blame not a Maidens rash reply, neither doe you impute any fault to my doubtfull care. I was unwilling to answer your Letter, yet the credit I repose in your vertue, makes me thus much to digresse from my former resolution, that I could not chuse but congratulate your kindnes: I yield to your request to speak with me, pretending that your Princely mind cannot harbour any ill meaning: and the rather, for that I find my heart yeelding without my consent: therefore I commit my selfe into your custody: my honour being unblemisht, which I trust you will not any way violate; So relying upon your vertuous disposition, and good opinion of my rash attempt, I cease.

*Yours as she may, Laura*  
na.

Paris-

Parismus was so ravisht with this courteous reply, that he esteemed himselfe the fortunatest man living, a thousand times kissing and reading those sweetlines, that in his fancy he never felt any joy comparable to this his sweet meditation shewing Oristus the sacred lines, and sweet message Laurana had sent, willing him to be ready to go with him to the place appointed, but unseen, least that the Princesse should blame him for not fulfilling her command, Thus spending the day which he thought to be longer then two days, he again returned to his chamber, esteeming the time too long, and a thousand times wishing the approach of the appointed hour. Laurana in the mean time being not unmindfull of her promise onely with Leda was gone down into the Garden, by a doore that opened out of her lodging: where being come, Cynthia was proud to give light unto her Majestieall presence, and by the cleernesse of her splendor, had any beheld her, she might have been esteemed to surpass the comelinesse of Diana, walking in her chaste conceits.

Parismus somewhat before the houre, was likewise gone forth in his Night gown, with his sword under his arme, and coming to the Gate he was wont to go in at into the Garden, found it shut, and having no other meanes, he got over the wall, and was gotten into a secret place to entertaine Love with a full delight; but when he beheld, his Divine Goddess, who was into the Arbour, his heart was so surprized with joy, that at her presence, that at his coming to her he could not utter a word, but with great reverence taking her tenderly in the soft hand, which he was afraid to touch without her leave at last he said most vertuous Lady, since it hath pleased you to grant me this exceeding favour, I here vow, that I will not speake a word, nor doe any thing that shall not accord with your mind. My Lord, said Laurana, had I not presumed upon your vertue, I would not thus have come hither. Which kind speech so much emboldned Parismus, that he embraced her in his armes and kiss her, and sitting downe together, folded each in the others armes. Paris-

risinus began to recount unto her his love, and how that his coming to Thessaly, was onely to do her service, vowing never to depart if she would not accept him for her poore servant: with many other kind protestations, proceeding from his unfeigned affection, that Laurana, being wounded with his intreaties, could not chuse but accept of his love, uttering these speeches.

My Lord, for that I am perswaded of the constancy of your love, and for that you vouchsafe to proffer such kindness to me, that have not deserved the same, I will manifest that which rather I should conceale, for that you may suppose my yielding so soone, might proceed of light-bred affection: but my Lord, I assure you, that at such time as I saw you coming first into this Court, my heart was then surpris'd (procured as I think by the Destinies) that ever since I have vow'd to rest yours assured to command, so that you no way pretend my wrong: and therefore committing all that is mine to give into your hands, I heer give you assurance of truth, and true constant love. Thus they spent the night in kind salutations and curteous embracing, to the unspeakable joy and comfort of them both. Leda all this while walking about the Gardens, and carefully looking about her, espied a light in Oliviaes Chamber, whereof she gave these two lovers intelligence. Parismus thought that newes unwelcome, whereby being compelled to depart, which was done with much heavinesse, Parismus desired to know when she would vouchsafe him her presence again, which she told him should be at his appointment, for that she was now his to dispose of: so with many a sweet embracing they parted.

Laurana, going into her chamber sad, in that she had so soone lost his company, and could not tell what misfortune might befall him, and glad in heart to recount and thinke of his past promise. Parismus quickly got over the wall, and was soon safely come to his Chamber, where he recounted to Oristus his happy successe in love, asking his counsell how he might procure Dionisius good liking, to effect the marriage betwixt them,

them which first he thought to motion himselfe, then also hee thought that Dionisius would not like thereof, without the consent of his Father first had, and withall might blame Laurana of uncharitablenesse, if he knew it were with her privacy. Again he thought it best, to send Oristus into Bohemia, to give his Father knowledge thereof, and to intreat him to send Embassadors to that effect. Contrarily, he thought, that in the mean time, some other of greater birth then himselfe, might demand her in marriage of the King, and so have the first grant, though he were sufficiently assured that Laurana would never yeeld her consent.

Being in this perplexity, he could not resolve upon any thing; but walking in the garden to ease his heart with some recreation, he met the King, and with him was the King of Hungaria, the Prince of Sparta, and Sicanus son to the King of Persia, though unknown. The King for more honorable entertainment of his Guests, made one most royall banquet for all in generall: the Queen and a gallant train of beautiful Ladies, were there likewise, which was not a custome; amongst the rest it so fel out, that Parismus was seated right opposite to the Princessse Laurana, which agreed to his hearts desire, whereby he had meanes to satisfie himself with beholding that inestimable jewell, which as far excelled all the rest of the Ladies, as the Sun doth the Moon, or white his contrary: who with such comely modesty behaved her self, that her look did rightly resemble a countenance full of mild, vertuous, pittie, able to ravish a multitude, being also not a little glad, that she had occasion to bestow a kind look on her Parismus. Sicanus more narrowly marked Lauranaes behaviour then any other, because his coming was onely to request her in marriage of her Father, and though both the young Princes were very circumspect: yet Sicanus his curious eye, found, or at least suspected, that there was some love betwixt them, which they full little thought of, having their hearts busied with more pleasant meditations: and ever after that, Sicanus inwardly envied Parismus in his heart.

Dinner being ended, the Knights spent some part of the afternoon in Dancing, which being ended, every man betooke himselfe to what exercise liked him best. *Parismus* and Lord *Remus*, accompanied the *Princesse Laurana* and the Lady *Isabella*, to their lodgings, which made *Sicanus* to fret inwardly, to thinke that *Parismus* his onely enemy as he thought, had gotten such possession in *Lauranaes* love, which might debarre him of his wished hope.

*Parismus* seeing Lord *Remus* talking to *Isabella*, saluted *Laurena* with these speeches: My dear Lady, although I confesse myself far unworthy of that kindnesse you have already granted me, yet I humbly request one favour more at your hands, which is, that you would vouchsafe to meet me to morrow at night, in that happy place where I receiv'd the first assurance of your comfortable kindnesse for my passions are so extreame, that my life would perish, were it not onely maintained by injoying your love, where I would impart a secret unto you, that now I have no time to utter.

My Lord said *Laurana*, you need not use such intreaties to her, that is not unwilling, neither hath the power to deny your request. The Queene coming into that place where they were, caused *Parismus* with a beaule sigh to depart, & Lord *Remus* with him, betwixt whom there began a firm league of friendship. Now Lord *Remus* did bear great affection to the Lady *Isabella*, and had oftentimes solicited his suite unto her, which she in a manner yielded unto, which made *Parismus* the rather chuse him for his companion, by keeping him company to have the oftner access unto *Laurana*. The King of *Hungaria*, the *Prince* of *Sparta*, and *Sicanus*, were walked into the garden, where they were encountred by the King, unto whom the King of *Hungaria* began to declare, how that the *Prince* of *Sparta* and himself had a matter to treat with his Majestie if he would vouchsafe them audience, from the mightie King of *Persia*, who having a great desire to be allied unto him, and having heard manifold reports, of the vertuous *Laurana*, had sent them to intreat a marriage betwixt her and *Sicanus*, his

Sonne

Sonne and heire of *Persia*, who was there present with them, though untill this time unwilling to make himselfe knowne.

*Dionisius* most kindly embraced him, telling him, that hee thought himselfe much honoured with his company, and that since it pleased his Father to treat of alliance betwixt them he would willingly give his consent, so that he would first get his Daughters good will, who he would not willingly match contrary to her liking, promising to use his commandement unto her for performance thereof. For which *Sicanus* thanked him. Thus having spent the day in this & such like talk, supper was ready: which being ended they betook themselves to their lodgings.

## CHAP. V.

How *Dionisius* sent for *Laurana*, & declared to her the cause of *Sicanus* coming; and how she made it knowne to *Parismus*, and gave him full assurance of her love.



Arise in the morning *Dionisius* sent a messenger, to call *Laurana* to come unto him, *Laurana* marvailling at her Fathers sudden sending for her, suspected that he had heard some newes of her love to *Parismus*; otherwise shee could not tell what the cause might be, but making her selfe readie presently came to him; having reverently done her duty, he used these speeches unto her.

*Laurana*, my chiefest care is, to see thee married according to thy fate, which hath made me send for thee, to know whether that thou hast already placed thy affection on no; otherwise there is come into this countrie, a Knight of great estate and honourable parts, son and heir to the King of *Persia*, who concealed himself untill yesterday night, in whose behalf the King of *Hungaria*, and the *Prince* of *Sparta*, are come from his Father to crave thee in Marriage. Now if thou canst sanctifie him thou shalt highly honour thy selfe, have an honourable hus-

band, and reioyce my heart to see thee so well matched before my death, which will come very shortly: I have given my consent, so it be with thy liking: for so dearly I love thee, that I would as well have thy fante pleased, as mine owne mind satisfied, therefore let me know thy mind.

Laurana answered, My deare Lord and Father, I humbly thanke you for the manifold benefits receivd by your favour, being yet at liberty from all, knowing it my duty to have your consent before I would presume to match my selfe, trusting that I shal so place my affections, as shal be agreeable to your pleasure. Well, doe so then said her Father, and this was the cause I sent for you:

Laurana departed with a heavic heart, wishing that the time of Parisimus coming were at hand, that she might impart this newes unto him, which grieved her, and she knew would not please him, resolving with her self never to give consent.

After dinner, Laurana by the commandement of Olivia the Queene, accompanied the Ladie Isabella, by means wherof of Sicanus, had occasion to court her; whom he found to be of so mild behaviour, and yet so farre differing from his mind, that he saw no likelihood of attaining her Love.

His importunate demands (which he builded upon her Fathers promise and his owne hope of assurance) she answered so wisely and courteously, that his love thereby increased, but his hope was no whit augmented, that seeing such a vertuous resolution, or in a manner absolute denial to his suite, he was perswaded Parisimus was the onely man that hindered his love; which she rather vexed him, because he saw his vertues of every man commended, and himself by the beautie of his excellent gifts disgraced, that ever after he sought all meanes he could to worke his harm. And fearing least he should be frustrated of his expectation began very narrowly to pry into the behaviour of Laurana towards Parisimus, that they could at no time talk, if he were in compaignie but he would be attentive to their speeches, nor seldome were they at any time together, but he would be in their company, dissembling a countenance of great

great friendship to Parisimus, having the greater occasion to crosse their loves, because of the motion he had made to Dionisius, and of the Kings speech to Laurana. In this sort he continued his jealous behaviour, yet farre from the least hope of procuring Lauranas favour.

The wished time of these two Princes appointed meeting being come, Parisimus secretly leaping the Wall which parted him from his delight, found Leda all alone tending his coming, and asking her where her Mistress was, she told him, she stayed in her Chamber for him, which she thought to be the fittest place for their private conference, for that she was now fully assured of his honourable meaning, so directing him the way, he quickly found Laurana, who was come to the staires head to meet him, whom he kindly saluted, and she as lovingly welcomed him, spending their times in sweet greetings, but farre from any thought of unchastities, their imbracings being grounded upon the most vertuous conditions that might be, and sitting together upon the beds side, Laurana taking Parisimus by the hand, the teares standing in her eyes, told him all the speeches her Father had used unto her, and of Sicanus his love, repeating to him all that had passed betwixt them, which extremely grieved Parisimus to hear, not that he doubted her change, but for that he was thereby disappointed of the first grant from Dionisius, whom he was fully perswaded would have given his consent.

Deare Lady (said Parisimus) since these mischances are unfortunately happened, I know not how to remedy him: but it regeth onely in your power, either by granting them love, and so to destroy me, or still continue your favourable kindness towards me, and thereby purchase displeasure of your Parents, which would be more grievous unto me then death.

My Lord, replied Laurana, you need not use these speeches, or any way trouble your mind, for I promise and protest, that the losse or displeasure of my friends, nor any other misery or torment whatsoever, shall make me any way infringe that promise I have made to you: for your love is more dearer un-

to me then my life; but I desire you to tell me how I may any way work your content, and I will do it: ~~where~~ she would have habes spoken, but the Chyristall teares that fell from her eyes, and extreame hearts sorrow to see *Parismus* so sad, stopp'd her speech, who likewise was drawne into such an admiration to thinke of her kindnesse, that he could use no words to comfort her, but with his cheeks wiped away the wet teares that bedew'd her face, and bestowed sweet kisses on her corall coloured lips. At last he said, dear *Laurana*, dear *Laurana*, I would desire you not to thinke that I any way call your loyalty in question, but used these speeches onely to assure you, that whatsoever please you I account my greatest bliss; but since you vouchsafe to grant me that labour, to be content to endure your parents displeasure for my sake, that am unworthy of that kindnesse, I will hereafter so fully rest at your command to do whatsoever lyeth in my small power, that you shall say, *Parismus* is not unwilling, though unable to be sufficiently thankful. Thus thinking too much of their stoll time, spent about the unpleasant newes, they began to use words of more comfort, which were such as proceeded from the kindest friendship that might be.

For so pleasantly sweet were their lovely joyes, and true hearted meanings, that it far surpass'd the admirable kindnes of *Robers* but might be termed the true subjects of perfect pleasures: where in these two harmlesse soules continued in the greatest part of the night with such top, that had *Sicanus* who most envied *Parismus*, seen and beheld them he would never have attempted to part such kind friendship.

Now the dymall hour of their departing being approached, by reason of the light that the Sunne began to give unto the Chamber, *Parismus* taking *Laurana* in his armes, drawing sweet breath from her lips, told her that now (to his grief) he must leave her to be courted by his enemy *Sicanus*, relating unto her the long Warres that had passed betwixt their ~~fr~~ there, and the late peace that was concluded, and how that he knew *Sicanus* at his first coming into *Thessaly*, desiring her  
to

to let him understand such newes from her as did concerne their love, which she promised him she would, and withal that she would never yeeld to love him that was an enemy to *Parismus*; but would hate her own heart, if it should but thinke a thought to wrong him. Thus a thousand times embracing one another, they parted, he to his lodging, and she to her rest.

## CHAP. V I.

How *Sicanus* hyred three *Tartarians* to murder *Parismus*, and how he was taken up by certaine Outlawes, and had his life preserved. What sorrow *Laurana* made for his losse, and what befell at *Dionisius* his Court.

**T**he next Morning, *Sicanus* sought all the means he could to sollicite his love againe, but *Laurana* used the matter in such sort, that she kept her Chamber thre or four dayes, to the end he should have no occasion to speake to her, which made him almost mad, and seeing himselfe frustrated of his desire that way, his mind being apt for any impression, began to devise how he might either finde out the cause of *Laurana*s strangenesse, or revenge himselfe on *Parismus*, whom he thought was the onely man that hindered him in his love. And studying how to bring that about, he began to weigh how greatly *Parismus* was esteemed of *Dionisius*, and that his vertues made him so well beloved of all, that to offer him a base openly, every one would condemne him, and thereby his honour should the more increase, and he himselfe be evill thought of by *Dionisius*, and condemned by *Laurana*, and yet nothing the nearer his purposed determination.

At length giving his mind over unto all wickednesse and cruelty, he thought the best course he had, was to murder him by some treachery; therefore calling unto him thre of his servants being *Tartarians*, he used a long circumstance of kind speeches unto them, promising that if they would devise



some meanes how to revenge him on an enemy that had done him great injury, he would preferre them to great dignity, when he returned into his owne Countrey, and in the meane time, he would give them a thousand pounds amongst them, for their maintenance.

These Villaines being greedy of gaine and preferment, being poor and needy, swore that they would performe whatsoever he commanded them, so they might know the man. Sicanus then giving them the money, told them that it was *Parismus*, who had of late done him a monstrous injury: (at whose name the villaines began to stare one upon another, as though they had repented them of their promise) and that, when as sometime was he rode forth on Hawking, they might waite opportunity untill he was alone, and then accomplish their intended murder without suspicion. These Villaines being fully bent upon their intended mischief, being Heathens, therefore the more easily drawne with the hope of reward to any treachery, waited their convenient time with unmovable resolution, *Parismus* being all that day in company of the King and other Nobles, having given his mind to quietnesse, for that he was fully assured of *Lauranaes* favour, nothing doubting the treason of *Sicanus*; told *Dionisius*, that he intended to go on Hawking, desiring him to bouchsafe to see his Faulcon flye, which *Dionisius* promised to do, for that his Hawke was esteemed the best of all other. At theise, *Sicanus*, the King of Hungaria, and the Prince of Sparta, would bear him company.

The next morning very early, King *Dionisius*, *Parismus*, and the rest of the company, addressed themselves to that pastime, and having spent most part of the day, towards the evening, *Parismus* lost his Hawke, which he loved exceedingly well, being procured by a Tempest that suddenly arose; and thereby being wandred from the rest of his company, chanced to heare the noise of her Whels, as he thought, in the wood hard by, where he could not ride, and therefore alighted from his Horse, and got in on foot: where he was not

not entred farre, but those villaines that *Sicanus* had hired, having followed him all that day, and now thinking and finding this the fittest opportunity to execute their purpose, were come into the wood and hard at *Parismus* heels, who spying them, looking with ghastfull countenances as he thought, and with their weapons about them, (the villaines indeed being amazed with his very countenance) began to call to remembrance the late mischance that *Ohris* had received in the same place: but that thought was soon extinct for that he knew them to be *Sicanus* servants: at last, he asked them if they had not seen his Hawke, they answered not a word: but one of them stared about as if he heard her near at hand, which caused *Parismus* to look diligently the same way. And in the meane time one of them drawing his sword, strook *Parismus* so violently upon the head, that he being bare-headed by reason of the heat, the blow having nothing to mitigate the force thereof, so grievously wounded him, that he fell to the earth, and before he could recover himselfe, and withall being disarmed of his weapon, (for otherwise those three could not have withstood his force) they had given him two or three mortall wounds: and seeing that he was now not able to resist them, they began to consult what they should doe with his Body.

In the meane time *Parismus* having gotten breath, began to intreat them to spare his life. (for threats in such a case would not prevaile) promising to reward them with great kindnesse, if they would not murder him: perswading them withall, that this their deed would be knowne: for that such wickednesse is commonly revealed, and alwaies grievously punished: and he that had set them about that villany, would alwaies hate them in his heart, though outwardly he might pretend a shew of friendship, telling them that he was a Prince, and able to prefer and pleasure them, promising them that they should not need to feare *Sicanus* displeasure; if they would save his life, and all men would hate them for destroying him, and on the other side all men would commend them for being



being so pittifull as to spare his life, that had never offended them. All these persuasions could nothing prevaile, but without making him any answer, thrust their sword into his body in diverse places, that now thinking him dead, they covered him with moss and leaves, thinking that some wild beast would come and devour him: his horse they found tied without the sword, but him they unhorsed, and let goe, to avoid suspicion: their own weapons they sunk in the bottome of a deepe poole of water that was by the ~~the~~ was side and so departed.

While they were striving with *Parismus* in this sort, it chanced that there was a Knight as he seemed in armour, that heard the noise, and hasting by guesse so well as he could to the place, at last he came to the place where *Parismus* lay covered, and looking about he could see no body, but might perceive the earth troden and all to be smeared with blood, and the moss torn up and removed from his usual place, and looking attentively, he saw the lump of moss and leaves where under *Parismus* lay covered, which was the onely preservation of his life, for the moss lying close about him, kept the wind from his wounds, otherwise he had perished.

The Knight removing the leaves found the body of the gentlest man that ever he beheld, most grievously wounded, and gasping for his latest breath of life, which mollified the Knights heart, that he used all the means he could to recover him: but labouring in vaine to bring him to his senses, yet he might perceive the breath to seale forth by little and little out of his mouth, that he was persuaded he was not past help, therefore taking *Parismus* in his armes, he conveyed him to the place of his abode, which was within those woods: now you must understand that this Knight was one of the company of those Outlawes that kept in that wood, being driven to live in such an obscure sort for feare of punishment, for divers outrages they had committed: and taking felicity in that kind of life continued a great fraternity amongst them, being the very same that had wounded *Osiris* one of *Dionisius* Knights,

Knights (as is before rehearsed) amongst whom we will leave *Parismus* to declare what happened to *Dionisius*, who greatly marvelled that when the day was ended, *Parismus* was not returned, which made him and the rest (*Sicanus* excepted) diversely conjecture: most thinking that he was gone astray, and being unacquainted might be gone to the Palace, yet knowing which way to return to the place where he left them, *Sicanus* likewise seemed as careful as the rest. At last by the nights approach they all departed towards the City: where when they were arrived, *Dionisius* inquiring very earnestly for *Parismus* return, could hear no newes thereof.

That having no other thought to be pacified withall, he was persuaded that he might be gone so far in search of his Hawk that he could not attain to the City that night, and therefore might lodge by the way and so to come home the next morning. Thus with this hopefull persuasion, being persuaded for the time, they betook themselves to their rest. *SICANUS* being gladdened with the newes of *PARISMUS* want, called those three actors of his most wicked and desperate confederacy unto him and inquired what they had done, who certified him of all their villanous exploits, being no way suspected of any such fact, to whom he yielded many dishonorable thanks for so impious a deed.

Thus all continued in good hope untill the next morning, which being come, and most of the day spent, there was no successful newes of *Parismus* returne, but all his men were come, and no man but himselfe alone missing: and *Dionisius* being therewith wonderfully grieved, and vexed in his mind, speedily caused a hundred Knights to make all diligent search and inquiry that might be, to heare of him, who were all most willing, bearing an inward love to the young Prince, above all the Knights that ever arrived in *Thessaly*. The *Bohemian* Knights likewise made such lamentation for their Lord, that it was soon blazed to the hearing of all the Court, and City, that *Parismus* was not returned from *Hawking*, which at last came to the hearing of *Laurana*: who at the first newes thereof

of, was so tormented in her thoughts, that she could not containe her selfe from bewrapping her love by extreme complaints: as also by the manifold questions and inquiries she made, with whom he was, how long they mist him, and where, when and how they lost his company: Desiring an extraordinary care of his welfare, that being driven into a thousand sundry doubts of his welfare, as also to thinke what should become of him, she could enjoy no quiet nor content: but her greatest comfort was, that she still hoped she should heare some newes of his returne, by such knights as were gone in search of him: amongst whom were his own knights, whose care she thought would be greater then any others for his preservation.

Oristus likewise, took his want in such heavinesse, that he seemed to be out of his wits by extreme sorrow. Sicanus having now accomplished the thing he purposed, used oftentimes to visite Laurana, and earnestly prosecuted his former suite, wherewith Laurana was so much grieved (to remember any other love then *Parismus*, or to thinke that any other should offer *Parismus* that wrong) that she shewed her selfe so virtuously disdainfull to the Persians suite, and seemed so little to regard his words and protestations, that he began to despair of obtaining her good will: yet he was still comforted in this, that he had her Parents consent, which might be a meanes to procure her liking: besides, he thought the greatnesse of his birth might be a great help to his furtherance.

Dionisius, Olivia, and the rest, were diversly grieved to thinke of *Parismus* loss, whom they all deemed to be slain in some misadventure, otherwise they could not imagine what might be the occasion of his stay: so that the whole Court in generall, was driven into such sadness, that it seemed not like the same it was wont to be: especially the King and Queen took it so heavily, that their joy was wholly turned to sorrow, and their pleasant countenances into sad looks: but yet all continued in hope to heare some newes of him, by the returne of

of such as were gone in search of him, who most of them returned within some three or four dayes. Oristus being yet behind, at last returned, having by diligent inquiry found the speed whereon *Parismus* rode, who was taken up some twenty miles distant from the place where those villains had left him: this augmented their griefe, when they saw all that were in search of him, returned with no good newes, and Oristus, the last of their hope, instead of joyfull tidings, bringing further cause of sorrow, in that they were fully assured by finding the horse whereon he rode, and he by no meanes to be heard of, that hee was fallen into the handes of such as had murdered him, or by some misadventure might be devoured by some wild beast, that had seized on him unawares, that in general all made such sorrow for the losse of so vertuous a Prince; yet it was to be wondered at, that a man in so short a time of acquaintance, could behave himself so virtuously, as to be so well beloved of all: Laurana exempting her selfe from all quiet, and banishing from her mind all mirth and joy, withall hearing the newes Oristus had brought, fell into such an extreme passion of grief, that for a good space she continued as one wholly deprived of life, and notwithstanding Leda and the rest of her Maides used all the skill they had, yet could by no means bring her againe, that with wringing their hands, tearing their hair, and with grievous acclamation, they made such an out-cry, that the bruit thereof came to the hearing of the King and Queen, and all the rest; by which occasion a new sorrow began, farre above compare: by that time the King and Queen were come into the Chamber, the Princess began somewhat to come to her selfe, when heavily lifting up her eyes with a grievous sigh looking upon her Father and Mother with such a pittifull countenance, (that they could not refrain from teares) still looking earnestly about her, to see if *Parismus* were yet returned: at last being fully recovered, Dionisius asked her what might be the cause of this her suddain sicknesse, and if it lay in his power to comfort her: she might be full assured he would not deny her any thing

thing. Laurana kneeling downe, thinking to have spoken somewhat, was so overcome with the remembrance of her deare friends want, and extreme sorrow so fullie possesse her heart, that her speech was turned into tears, which abundantly fell from her eyes, which dyed the King and Queene into such sorrow that their hearts could not endure to see her heaviness and therefore left her with her Maids. When all were departed and she alone with Leda, she began to lament in this manner.

Unhappy Wretch that I am, to what a miserable stay am I brought, to have lost my greatest comfort; and the onely maintainer of my blisse, without whose comfortable presence I neither can, nor will enjoy my unfortunate life. Noble and most vertuous Prince, what is become of you? What misadventure hath befallen you? What Tyrant could be so barbarous as to do you injurie? What creature so inhumane, as to wish your harm? Or what mind so malicious, as not to wish your good? What is me for the losse of my *Parismus*, heaviness is my delight, care and sorrow shall be welcome to me, till my *Parismus* returne: No, my heart gives me he will never returne, he is surely dead, by some untimely accident. Or he would not all this while have been absent from me. My dear *Parismus* would I were with you, wheresoever you are, then would my heart be at quiet, then should I be happy, then should I be rid from fear, from grief, care, sorrow, and pain, for in you onely is my comfort, joy, pleasure, quiet and delight.

In these and such like plaints, she would have continued still, but that Leda comforted her, with all the persuasions that she could devise, telling her that she ought not to grieve so much, for that he might safely return again, and that he might absent himself for sundry and speciall causes, not yet known to her, using many other devices: to draw her from that extremitie of sorrow, in which estate she continually remained: but yet somewhat comforted with hope of his returne, being thereto perswaded by the speeches of Leda, who

used the same onely to alluage her spirits sorrow, though her self had no hope at all ever to see him againe.

*Parismus* being all this while amongst the Outlawes, (who kept themselves in a Cave that they had secretlie and artificially made under the side of a Hill, in the middost of a Wood, where they could hardly be found by any, and therefore there they thought themselves very secure;) which were the same that had wounded the Knight *Ofiris*, and had with them Dina the Virgin, in whose rescue *Ofiris* was hurt: yet by *Ofiris* meanes she was preserved from the outrage was intended to her: for those Outlawes were without a Captain, and therefore thought themselves equals, which happened well for the Virgin, for one of them that came forth with the noise of *Ofiris* and the others fight, took such good liking of her that he reproved the others crueltie, telling him, that it were a villanous act to defoule a Virgin that had not offended him: by whose persuasions he desisted from further crueltie, and carried the Maiden to their Cave, where she was appointed to dress such provision as they brought in, which she willingly did, to defend her selfe from further injurie. *Parismus* comely proportion made him so well liked of all of the who seemed to them to be a man of good account, by his apparel, and in time they thought might do them many pleasures: therefore they commanded this Virgin to use all her skill, and indeavours to recover him, and heale his wounds, who within two daies by her diligent indeavour, had brought him to his senses, that he began to speake to them: which rejoiced them to hear: who being thus well recovered, wondered into what place he was brought: because it was dark, and in a Cave, having in his presence a company of rude and shag-haired fellows, and onely one woman, could not fully persuade himself but that he was metamorphosed: but being of a manlike courage, he boldly demanded of them, how he came to that place, and what they were that had thus preserved his life: At last he that had brought him thither, told him that walking into the Wood, being directed by a noise that he heard

he found him covered with moss and leaves, almost past all hope of life, and pitying his Distresse, he had brought him unto that place, being all the habitation they had, for that they were such as wanted wealth, and were driven to take that course of life to maintain themselves, withall: and that he was by the diligent paines of the Virgin, brought unto the good estate he was in, and that their purpose was to elect him for their Captain, for that they thought very well of him.

Parismas thanked him, telling him withall that he was a Traveller, and had lost his way in those Woods, and meeting with some of their company (as he thought) was by them left in the cave they found him, without any cause of offence that he had done them. Thus ceasing to commune any farther with them, he began to meditate how fortunately God had ordained him to be preserved by them, (that had destroyed many) to live in hope to be revenged on Sicanus, that had so dishonourably pretended his ruine: that seeing himself in good estate of recovery, he used all kind meanes he could to purchase the good opinion of all those Outlawes, whom he durst not trust: because their minds were addicted to villany, but most of all, he marvelled why so beautiful a Damsel should frequent their company. On a time when Parismas saw all the Outlawes gone out of the Cave, and he left alone with Dina, he enquired of her of whence she was, and why she lived there, having also marked her behaviour towards them, he did wonder at her virtues, whereby she resisted the wicked behaviour of those rude people. She told him that she was daughter unto a Knight of the Province of Salmacia, whom one of those Outlawes had violently taken forth of her Fathers Orchard in revenge of a wrong he said her brother had done him: withall she told him the whole manner of her coming thither: whereby, Parismas understood that she was the very same, in whose rescue Oris was hurt.

By this time the Outlawes were come in: whereby the Virgin left off her speech, bringing in with them good store of money

money which they had taken from honest passengers. Parismas lying very weak, yet marked well their behaviour, which made him marvel that men could be so inhumane, as by their own reports they seemed to be, wishing himself with Laurana, who he thought would accuse him of disloyalty, or that he made choice of some other: if she did not so misdoubt him, then the sorrow he thought he endured for his loss, which might some way come to her knowledge, so galled him to the heart, that his inward passions would not suffer his outward physick to do him any good, and the continuall care he was in, did much hinder his health: being likewise as much tormented with remembrance of the grant that Dionisius had made to Sicanus, concerning the marriage betwixt him and Laurana, who he thought might now be enforced to yield her consent, when she was out of hope of recovering him: this grief farre exceeded all the rest, that all the whole company began to note his sorrows, for he was scarce able to contain himself within the bounds of reason.

In these perplexities he continued by the space of three moneths, in all which time he could not fully recover his health: Where we will leave him to speak of Dionisius, who by tract of time having somewhat mitigated the remembrance of Parismus want (most of his Knights being departed home into Bohemia, Orisus onely excepted, who by no meanes could be drawn to leave Thessaly, because there he had lost his Lord) began to confer about the marriage of Laurana, being often importuned by Sicanus, who caused the King of Hungaria and the Prince of Sparta, to be earnest suitors in his behalf: at whose instance, Dionisius promised to give them answer the next day: therefore sending for Laurana, he demanded of her, how she fancied Lord Sicanus, who was a most honourable Gentleman, and one every way worthy to be beloved; telling her that he had given his full consent, and therefore it should not with her virtue, to seem strange, or shew her self ungratfull. Laurana hearing her fathers speeches, being

much amazed, stood still and gave no answer a good space; at last kneeling down, she began in this sort: I most humbly intreat your Majesty: to vouchsafe to hear my words with patience, and not to impute any thing, I shall desire at your Highnesse hands to untruthfulness: I cannot as yet fancy the Prince, though I confesse my selfe farre unworthy the honour you proffer me, but have presumed (upon your favourable promise, not to marry me to any without my liking) to refuse the offer Sicanus maketh, for that my fancy perswadeth me, he shall bring some sorrow to your Highnesse, and all the rest of this Court and Country: as also for that I am unwilling to match with my betters, but would intreat your Majesty if your Highnesse will needs have me marry, rather to bestow me one some honourable Gentleman, of my degree; but most of all my desire is to continue this my happy life, where, in I intend, with your gracious liking) to spend the length of my dayes.

Dionisius wondring to hear her answer, began to waxe somewhat angry with her, and told her, that it was his pleasure she should marry with him, and he would have it so. My deare Lord and Father quoth she because I am yours wholly to dispose of, I humbly crave that I may have a moneths respite to advise my self, and then I will accompt your demand: to which he granted and so left her. Laurana being alone began to weigh in what estate she was, and how to avoid this injury she should do to her self, for her honourable promise past to Parisimus, and to him for his love, that she determined rather to destroy her selfe then yield to marry him, whom she accounted her dear loves enemy, and with this resolution went to her lodging.

Sicanus the next Morning attended Dionisius answer, who told him, that his daughter had given her consent, upon condition that he would grant her a moneths respite to consider of her duty therein: wherewithall he was highly contented, being now fully assured (as he thought) of his desire, and began more boldly to visite Laurana, who little esteemed his friend-

ship

ship, though he used her kindly, but farre from any shew of love, to the end to breed no suspicion in him, of that she intended.

## CHAP. VII.

How *Sicanus* treason was discovered, who suddainly fled into his Country, and how *Dionisius* departed towards *Bohemia* unknown to any in the disguise of a Palmer, and what sorrow *Olivia* the Queene made for his absence: who created Lord *Remus* Regent in the Kings absence.



When as these things, were afoot, it happened (contrary to Sicanus expectation, who now thought all things so buried in forgetfulness, that his treachery could by no meanes be revealed) that the Tartarians, which murdered Parisimus, began to contend about the money Sicanus had given them; in so much, that one of them strooke the other such a blow on the head, that he had well-near slain him, and would have strooke him againe, but that by chance Orisius coming by, reprieved the other that had strooke his fellowe, & defended him that was already wounded, from further harme, and divers other of Dionisius Knights coming together, they conveyed him that was hurt into a Chamber, and the other was carried before the King to be examined, upon what occasion he did strike him: who answered Dionisius that he would not be examined of any but his own Prince, which made Dionisius the more earnest to know the cause: therefore willed Lord Remus to intreat Sicanus to come unto him to end a doubt, which none but he could decide. Sicanus marballing what the case should be, immediately came, but being one of the Tartarians which he had hired to murder Parisimus, standing before the King began to feare (according to the guiltinesse of his conscience) that his treason was betrayed: notwithstanding, he demanded why he had so wound-

ed



had his fellow: the villain being amazed to see his Master so ready to examine him, and not rather to excuse him, could not readily tell what to say, but in that little respite of deliberation, he answered that he had done him wrong, and that was the cause he had strook him: which words, he uttered with great fear, staring upon Sicanus, as if he should have instructed him what to say. Dionisius noting Sicanus countenance, and the villaines answer, whom Sicanus would examine no further, began to misdoubt that some former mischief had bred this contention, commanding the other Tartarian that was wounded to be brought before him, who feeling himself almost past estate of life, confess the cause why they fell out, and how that they had the money of Sicanus for murdering of *Parismus*, whose want was procured by their meanes. Sicanus standing by, and hearing his speech, suddenly drew his dagger, and stabbed him, before he could utter any more of his treachery. Which amazed all the company, that a good space they knew not what to say, at last *Oristus* (being filled with fury) boldly stept to Sicanus, and challenged him as a villain, and traitor, for conspiring his masters death, who being likewise moved with rage, strook at *Oristus* to have stabbed him likewise: but he easily avoided the blow, and with his fist strook him with such violence, that the blood run exceedingly from his mouth, which his knights perceiving, began to drave upon *Oristus*, who had been there slaine, but many of Dionisius knights (dearly loving *Parismus*, and hearing the villaines confession) likewise drew, and assailed the Persian knights so fiercely, that many of them were wounded, and Sicanus himselfe had there died, had he not fled. And notwithstanding Dionisius laboured all that he could to pacifie this uproar, yet before he could do it, three of Sicanus knights were slaine, and the rest fled with their master.

After the tumult was appeased, Dionisius began to examine the matter more narrowly, and found by all circumstances the Tartarian had said true. Sicanus with great hazard of his life having escaped out of the court, with some forty

in his company, being ashamed (as knowing himself guilty of the fact) to tell the fact, that he could, got to the harbour where his ships lay, and withall speed hoisted saile, not once taking his leave of the King, which was a sufficient persuasion to all, that *Parismus* by his meanes was murdered, the remembrance whereof began their sorrow afresh.

The King of Hungaria and Prince of Sparta, being much ashamed of Sicanus behaviour, in whose company they came, desired Dionisius not to impute his impiety any way to their dishonour, for that they would for ever abhorre him for that monstrous act, and rest ready to defend him if ever he should stand in need of their aid to revenge this injury, who determined to stay still with Dionisius (if they could) to drive out out of his mind the remembrance of this mischance. Dionisius being most extremely overcome with rage and grief, began to take the murder of *Parismus* with such sorrow, that he determined to spend the rest of his dayes out of the company of all men, and the next morning giving delay no scope to hinder his purpose, having disguised himselfe that he could not be known in *Palmer*s weeds, he departed secretly from the Court: and first tooke his course to travell into *Bohemia*, to hear whether *Parismus* Father had knowledge of the death of his sonne, or no. Dinner time being come, Dionisius was wanting, which made the *Queene* marvaile, for that he was not wont to be absent, but thinking he was gone alone by himself to meditate, made no great enquiry: but after dinner, going her selfe to seek him could by no means find him, which made her make open enquiry: yet none could hear of him, that upon the sabbath there began such an uproare (when they had searched all the Palace, Gardens, *Orchards*, *Walkes*, and every place) such acclamations, such lamentations, and such outcries, that all seemed comfortlesse; yea, rather mad and lunatique, some running this way, some that way, every one carefully to do his best, yet all to no effect, which both made the *Queen*, the King of Hungaria, the Prince of Sparta, and all the rest, in that miserable estate



of misdoubt that they neither could tell what is do, nor what to conjecture of his absence, fearing lest Sicanus had likewise by some villany procured his death. Divers Knights went in search of him, but could not find him, and yet saw him, but knew him not: for they often met with him in Palmers disguise, and asked him for himself, which made him ostentatious in mind to return, but yet his former determination continued firm.

These newes of Sicanus departure and of Dionisus want happened in two dayes yet neither of them was come to the knowledge of Laurana, who absented her selfe from all company, by reason of the extreme care she endured for Parismus: Sicanus treason, and Parismus murder was concealed from her by Leda, who loved her dearly, and therefore would not let it come to her hearing: but contrary to Laurana's thought, and Leda's expectation, Olivia the Queen came to her lodging, wringing her hands, and making a great lamentation, and espying her, said: O daughter what shall befall us? That villain Sicanus hath murdered Parismus, hath likewise destroyed thy Father. Laurana hearing her Mothers speeches stood as one amazed, not once sitting speaking, nor moving her eye: at last thinking it was strange newes to be true, said: Dear Mother, I trust these unwelcome newes cannot be true, nor that your Grace speaketh of proof: whereupon the Queen told her all had happened to Parismus, by Sicanus procurement: where with Laurana (not being able to hear the rest that her Mother would have spoken) immediately fell down amongst the Ladies dead, who laboured so to recover her, but were not able to bring her to life againe, by the space of half an hour, which began a new sorrow among them: the seeming to be past all hope of recovery: all being tryed with extreme griefe, gave their mindes no respite to consider the adversity they were in, but still continued making such lamentations, as the place seemed a desolate habitation of sorrow. Laurana at length coming to her self, could not yet utter a word, for the extremity of care had such full possession

possession in her heart, that she could neither ease it by lamentation nor teares, that all the whole company were constrained to employ their best endeavours to remedy this present evil, the last of their hope, for if she had perished, the heire of Thessaly had beene lost. Lord Remus being a man of great wisdom and Government, began to weigh the sickle estate of the people and Country, who having beene a long time subject unto Peace, therefore was not able to endure the brunt of Warre, and that it was likely Sicanus would take to revenge himself against them, and take (if he could) out of their hands the Princesse Laurana heire apparent to the Crown, and thereby get the Kingdom into his possession, which the Thessalians could not endure: rebolting these thoughts in his mind, he came to the Queen and the rest of the Nobles, and requested her and them together, to have some regard to their Country, and not to shew themselves unprovided to defend themselves from further mischance: whose counsell all liked well, especially Olivia, who with the consent of the rest of the Peeres made him Lord Regent of the Country, upon which charge committed to him, he presently gave order for murthering of men, and fortifying of Castles, and places of defence, appointing Captaines and Governours, under whose charge he committed those places of defence, and within a short space brought all things to such perfection, that the Country was well fortified, and able to resist a great enemy.

The Queene being diversly tormented in thought, now was (by return of such as were gone in search of the King) ascertained that he was no where within the bounds of Thessaly alive, and therefore assuredly thought he was dead, which inwardly tormented her, that she gave her selfe only to mourning, not giving her mind one minutes respite of quiet, in which estate for a time we will leave her.

## CHAP. VIII.

How *Parismus* in Palmers Weeds found meanes to see the Princessse, unto whom he would not discover himself, hearing of *Dionisius* absence: And what befell *Dionisius* in *Bohemia*.



After that *Parismus* had well recovered himself, being able to walk up and down, he was desirous to hear some newes from *Dionisius* Court, but could not devise how to bring the same to effect: but thus fortunately it fell out, those Dut-laws were so farre in love with him, that they with one consent entreated him, that he would vouchsafe to continue among them, and be their Captain, for that they were without a guide, and thought so well of him, as that above all men they were desirous he should be the man: but he began to refuse it, alledging that he being a stranger in that Country, and unacquainted with their customes, was altogether unfit; using many reasons as excuses: but considering with himself it might much availe him to his purpose, at their intreaty was contented: and so behaved himself, that within a very short time, his word and counsell was an Oracle amongst them, and by his wisdoms he kept them from doing much harm, and yet seemed in their fancy to further them greatly.

Sometimes he was in minde to go and make himself known at the Court, and so to enjoy his Mistress sight, which grieved him to want, but being sincerely minded, at last this was his resolution: he fitted himself on a day in Palmers weeds, and disguised himself so artificially, that (by his disguise and long sickness which had somewhat altered his complexion) none could any way know him: telling the Dut-laws that he was determined to see the Court, which he had heard was so famous, and that he would return at night.

When

When he was somewhat near unto the City, he might see upon a plain hard by great preparation for warre, which made him much marvell; at last coming to the Kings Palace, he got himself unto the place where *Laurana* every morning usually at her coming from Chappel, gave her almes, and put himself amongst the rest of the Palmers; and being taller then any of them, he was much noted of many: when the Princessse came to give her alms (being in mourning attire) she called them all unto her, and began to demand of whence they were, what Countries they had travelled, and whether they had heard any newes of King *Dionisius*, who was missing: or whether they heard any in their travell speak of the dead body of *Parismus*, which by chance might be found being murdered by *Sicanus* of *Persia*: which words she uttered with such sorrow that the tears ran abundantly down her cheeks.

*Parismus* being ravished with the sight of his precious jewel, and seeing her weeping for his losse, and withall hearing from her mouth, the heavy newes of *Dionisius* want, could not (though he strived to the uttermost of his power) restrain from letting fall a few tears, which *Laurana* perceiving, and blessing him withall, began to feel a sudden alteration in all her parts; that she was not quiet till she had found meanes to commune with him, and giving all the rest their alms they departed, but to him she would give nothing, to the intent he should stay, but he seeing the rest gone, was departing with them, till *Leda* (being by her Mistress commanded) called him back, whom he very well knew, and being returned, *Laurana* demanded of him, what was the cause that he wept, when he heard her speak of *Dionisius* losse, and *Parismus* death:

*Parismus* said, Most vertuous Lady, I wept not to hear *Parismus* named but to hear of *Dionisius* losse; for *Parismus* I know is at this present living, and in good estate of health, with whom I had some talke within these three weekes, in the Country of *Salmacia*: which was the cause of my coming

ming hither, being sent by him unto a Lady in this Court, whom I know not how to speak withall, neither must I tell her name to any.

Laurana hearing the Palmers words, blushed exceedingly, and withall intreated him to tell out his newes, for that it might be, she was the parte Lord Parismus meant: for I am Laurana quoth she, whom Parismus did think well of, and with that she wept again.

Parismus kneeling down, said: When to your Highnesse I will be my Messenger, for unto you I was sent. Lord Parismus, growing in some good liking of me, & having receiv'd my oath to be his faithfull Messenger, willed me to give your Highnesse this Jewell, whereby you should be assured he was living, but constrained to absent himself, for causes that hereafter he will let you understand, he desireth you to let him (though unworthy) enjoy but the least of your vertuous promises, and he shall ever hereafter account himselfe to have receiv'd his life and liberty from you.

Laurana seeing the Jewell which she well knew to be the same she had before given him, and hearing the Palmers credible report, that he was in perfect health, and being fully assured of the truth of that message, by the certaine and firm protestation of the most Noble Parismus himselfe in the disguise of a Palmer: she was so surpris'd with joy, that she could not refrain from kissing the Jewell; saying, welcome sweet token from a faithfull friend: and calling Leda unto her, told her the newes the Palmer had brought, rejoicing with such vertuous kindness, that Parismus thought himselfe the happiest man living to enjoy the love of so vertuous a Lady. Laurana comming to him, told him that she was so much bound unto him for bringing her this happy newes, that she did not knowe which way sufficiently to recompence him for his paines: And were it not, quoth she, but that I stand in some doubt hereof (as being too good to be true) I should rest in such happy content by thy newes, that no adversity whatsoever, should cause my sorrow, but onely his absence; though my  
Fathers

Fathers losse doth nearly concern my happinesse. The Palmer (seeing her constancy) used such protestations, that Laurana could not chuse but beleve him: as also by reason of the Jewell which she knew she had given Parismus. So taking a Jewell from forth her bosome, she gave the same to him, which he willingly receiv'd and kissing her hand departed.

When he was out of sight, he began to meditate of the vertues of Laurana, and therein tooke such felicity, that before he was aware he met with Orisus, who had been walking solitarily abroad, in such heavinesse, that it would have caused any man to pittie him. Parismus seeing him was once in a mind to have revealed himself unto him only: but being passed by him, he could not chuse but turn and look after him, his mind was touch'd with such kindnesse; But the remembrance of the losse of Dionisius, did so much grieve him, that wasting the time with those thoughts, unawares in a heavy dampe, he was suddainly arriv'd at the Cave, where he was kindly welcommed of the Dullawes and he used such commendation of the Court as it liked them well to hear, and also told unto them how the King was missing, and no man could tell what was become of him, and that he thought there was some preparation for wars, by the mustring of Souldiers that he saw before the City.

When he was alone, he began to condemn himself of hard-heartednesse, that seeing the most constant and vertuous Lady living to mourn for his losse, yet he being safe and in her sight, would not make himselfe known to her, thereby to rid her from griefe: but yet his comfort was great on the other side, that he saw her love so firm, being past all hope of ever seeing him againe, that he accounted himself far unworthy the labour she had shew'd him, growing so far in admiration of her constancy, that no thought was pleasant, but the remembrance of her Love.

Dionisius as before is said, having met with many of his Knights, that went in search of him, was almost through remembrance of the sorrow he knew would arise by his absence altered

altered from his former determination, yet remembering *Parismus* murder, which he knew could not chuse but come to the knowledge of his old friend the King of Bohemia, whereby his honour might be called in question (of which he was jealous) he therefore resolutely determined to travell thither, and having journeyed many dayes, he arrived in Bohemia, where lighting into company with an ancient Palmer of that country, he enquired of him what was the newes at the Bohemian Court: Who taking *Dionisius* to be but a Palmer, told him that the newes was chiefly of the Prince *Parismus*, who being in the Court of *Dionisius* King of Thessaly, was there furthered, or by some other treason destroyed, but by whom, or how, it was not known: by meanes whereof, there was such heavy lamentation in that Country, and especially in the Court, that he thought the like had never beene heard of in any place. Which report caused *Dionisius* to grieve exceedingly, and was so much tormented in mind, that he resolved there to abide unknowne to any, untill he saw how the King of Bohemia would digest his griefe; and also to heare the generall report would be given of him, for that he did not re-venge the death of the Prince *Sicanus*, when he had him in Thessaly; as also to see the intent of these stratagems: Having good store of money and Jewells, he got him a lodging in an ancient Burgamasters house, where for his money he was kindly used. His wonted custome was every day to go to the Kings house, where he heard nothing to comfort him withall, but saw the King his old friend in most heavy plight for his Sonnes death, all the joy he had, was that he heard all men notwithstanding the death of their Prince, report very honourably of him, that he continued (as he thought) secure, being not known of any suspected, for the man he was; but at the last thus contrarily it happened.

The Burgamaster having diligently observed the behaviour of his Guest, found him farre differing from all other Palmers, in person and qualities; and besides, seeing the daily charge he was at, began to suspect him, having such store of

of coin to maintain that charge, that when *Dionisius* went to his lodging, he would lieth at his chamber doore to heare his speeches, and mark his behaviour, where he oftentimes heard *Dionisius* bewailing his estate in most heavy plaints, naming himselfe, and oftentimes naming *Parismus*, and on a time declared the same to a Nobleman of the Kings Court: who repairing secretly to the Burgamasters house, and having observed the Palmers behaviour, did suspect him to be some Spy, apprehended him, and caused him to be cast into prison, without any examination: which caused *Dionisius* to wonder, fearing lest he should be known, but yet he thought that could not be, therefore with patience he endured this imprisonment: where he continued in the most vilest place amongst Rogues and Rascals, being exempt from the clear light of the Sun to comfort him withall, by the space of some five dayes, by reason that the nobleman which layd him there was gone about affaires of his own, but at his returne, he certified the King of such a suspicious person that he had found.

Whereupon *Dionisius* was sent for, who being examined told the King that the occasion of his coming into that country, was to no ill intent, but if it liked him to hear him privately, he would declare unto him the whole intent of his coming. The King hearing his speeches, commanded all to depart, whereupon *Dionisius* disclosed himselfe.

The King of Bohemia knowing him, being amazed at his strange disguise, suddenly caught him in his armes and embraced him with great kindness. *Dionisius* discovered unto him the heavy losse of *Parismus*, and his own saddest departure out of Thessaly, requesting him that he would joyne with him against *Sicanus*, to revenge the death of so Noble a Prince: which the Bohemian King most willingly yielded unto: so with these and many other like speeches that passed betwixt them, let us leave *Dionisius* to be entertained by the King of Bohemia.

## CHAP. IX.

How the King of *Persia* at his sons intreaty, brought a mighty Army of Persians into *Thessaly*, and how Lord *Remus* slew a multitude of them at their landing. And how *Parismus*, wan both Horse and Armour from a Knight of *Persia*.

**S**icanus was no sooner returned unto *Persia*, but he was resolved, either to obtain *Laurana* in Marriage, or waite all *Thessaly* with continuall Warre; whereupon he came unto his Father, and told him, that being in *Dionisius* his Court, he was accused of two perjured Villains, for the death of *Parismus*, Sonne to the King of *Bohemia*: Whereupon *Dionisius* having before promised him his Daughter, both dreyed her unto him, and also had he not escaped by flight, he had been slain in the presence of *Dionisius*, with three of his Knights, that were slain in his rescue: and kneeling downe, most humbly intreated his Father to grant him a band of Persians, to revenge the disgrace and wrong he had received.

The King of *Persia*, by his countenance betrayed the inward fire of the heart, that without giving any consideration to the truth of his Sonnes report, he presently vowed to redresse those wrongs, or else bring perpetual Infamy to his posterity: and to that effect commanded a mighty Army to be made in a readinesse, which was so innumerable (having called all his contributaries together) that it was the mightiest host that ever went out of *Persia*; and also provided a mighty Navy of Ships: which being soon in a readinesse they with all the hast that might be, having wind and weather as will beleeve, sailed and made to the Countrey of *Thessaly*.

A good Fisherman of *Thessaly*, that was abroad at Sea, having espied such a mighty Navy of Ships, with all speed brought word to the Court, to *Olivia* the Queen: who desired Lord *Remus* to defend the Countrey by his uttermost indavours.

hours, because the trust thereof was wholly committed to his charge: who having some doubt (as before rehearsed) of such a mischief, of a sudden had gathered together, 60000. Footmen and 20000. Horsemen, being all expert Soldiers, and got them to the Haven secretly: where he knew the Persians would land, who thinking to find no repulse, whereby they might land without contradiction, had left on shore, some 20000. Persians, which Lord *Remus* and *Oristus* perceiving, suddenly issued out upon them, and slew the greatest part of them, being disordered, and thereby unable to resist the force of the *Thessalians* coming unawares: which when the King of *Persia* saw, being full of rage and fury, violently thrust all his Ships into the harbour, and with all speed, landed the whole Army, in which time of landing, the *Thessalians* had destroyed of the Persians, to the number of thirty thousand: that the colour of the waters were turned into purple, which so vexed the King of *Persia* and his Sonne *Sicanus*, that causing a Trench to be made for the fortifying of the place of their landing, without any further great impeach, they landed their whole Army, which was so huge, that the Lord *Remus* (though he were a man of invincible courage, and the *Thessalians* being but a handful in respect of so mighty a host) began somewhat to discomfirt themselves, and therefore returned to the City of *Thebes*, to defend that from the force of those Persians, that were sufficiently provoked to anger, by the slaughter the *Thessalians* had already made amongst them, and fortified the same with all kind of provision, being invincible, unless it were destroyed by famine.

The Queen seeing her self thus distressed, yet showed such magnanimous courage, that the like hath not been seen in a woman, which provoked the hearts of all her Subjects to such resolution, that they resolved never to yield to the force of the Persians.

The King of *Persia* having landed his Army, began to march into the Countrey, where they could scarce find victuals, to suffice such a multitude: the Countrey being large and full



fall of Desarts, Forrests, and Wildernesse, but at last they came to the Plain of Pharsalia, where in times past were the thundring warres of Caesar and Pompey, being of such a huge length and breadth, that they are thought to exceed all Plains in the world for largenesse and bignesse: on the one side whereof runneth the River Peneus, which running down from the foot of Olympus, by meanes the Hills being gently on both sides with woody bottomes, maketh the Thessalians Tent, where the Persians encamped themselves towards the farther end thereof, being distant not above twelve miles from the City of Thebes, whether they might easily march, and soeie return; and therefore fortified that place for their carriage. Immediately Sicanus with an hundred thousand Persians made toward the City, which the Watchmen perceiving, fired their Beacons: but the Lord Remus and Oristus gave present commandement, that there should be no signe or shew made in the City, whereby the enemy might know that they had any knowledge of their coming. Where too will leave them within the City, making all preparation that might be to withstand the enemy, and Sicanus at the Walls begittling the same, to speak of Parismus; who all this while being in the Cave amongst the Out-laws, still devised how he might have further triall of Lauranaes constancy, and therefore determined still to conceal himself, untill he might heare newes of Dionisius return, and also to know wherefore there was such preparation for warres.

And on a day, he could endure no longer from beholding his mistresse, but disguising himself in his Palmers weeds, he wandred from the Cave towards the City, with intent to have seen her giving her wonted Almes, whither he was no sooner come, but he espied the band of Sicanus souldiers, which wrought such an amazement in his minde, that he stood like one without sense: being enraged with fury to see the City begirt whereby his dear Lady was, which wrought him so near unto the heart, that sitting down upon the Mistle bank, he uttered these heaby plaints.

Unhappy

Unhappy wretch that I am, into what a distressed estate am I brought, that by my misgouhtfull mind, have so much wronged the constantest Virgin living, and thereby have deprived myself of her sight, which I might have enjoyed: but now by my own folly am shut from it by a multitude of enemies that seek the destruction of my beloved: what sufficient recompence may I make her for this my monstrous ingratitude? O how may I without shame call her my beloved, who I have shewn my self so strange, being in her sweet sight, and hearing the plaints she made for my absence, yet would not make my self manifest unto her, thereby to drive away such passions as I know she endureth for my sake; well, since my unlucky stars have allotted me this hard fortune, I will either recompence this wrong I have done her, and purchase her liberty by chasing away these enemies which bessege my beloved, or lose my worthless life in her defence. In this sort he complained untill that he was wearied with uttering such heaby passions: at last starting up as one new raised from a trance, he ranne with all haste towards the Cave, purposing to get some Armour and weapon, wherewith to defend himself, and by the way he met a Knight all in black Armour, being mounted upon a gallant black Courser, being a goodly proportioned man, with all furniture readily appointed for warre, making speed towards the City, whom Parismus supposed to be one of their company that besseged Thebes, and therefore boldly comming to him he said: Stay I pray you Sir Knight, and let a Palmer demand one question of thee. I may chuse, said the Knight, and so scornfully rode on. Wherewith Parismus was so enraged with fury, that catching at a great Stone, with all his might, he flung it at this discourteous Knight, and hit him with such violence on the back, that it made the blood start out at his nose: the knight turning about came back towards Parismus, and alighting from his steed pulled forth of his pocket a cord, wherewith he threatened to bind him, and so drag him at his horse heeles: and laying hands on Parismus (thinking easily to have bound him, for that he took him to be a Palmer)

©

who

who contrary to the Persian expectation, struck the knight such a blow on the face with his sword, that he staggered as one amazed; and wherewith catching hold on his sword, told him, unless he would declare unto him of whence he was, and what Army that was that besieged the City of Thebes, he should there die with his own weapon: which words the Persian took so disdainfully, being ashamed to be overmatched by a Gallie, that with his sword he struck Parisinus such a violent blow on the belly, that he with much pain could scarce stand, which caused him to strike the knight so vehemently with the pommel of his sword that he fell down half dead, and seeing himself in that estate, desired Parisinus to be contented, and he would declare the whole truth unto him.

I am quoth he, of Persia, my name is Toledo, belonging to the King of Persia, and am now come into this Country with my Lord the Persian King, and his Son Sicanus, and his contributory Kings, who are come hither to revenge themselves on King Diomitus, who falsely accused Sicanus for murdering Parisinus Prince of Bohemia, who I think is run away from his Court, for some notorious fact he hath committed, and since they have accused my Lord for his death: as also he is come to fetch from hence the Kings daughter by force of arms, & therefore my Lord is himself now before the walls of the City, with a hundred thousand armed Persians, and the rest of his forces have encamped themselves near hard by on the Plains of Phariaia.

Parisinus being moved with extreame choller, could not containe himself, but his mind being overcharged with fury, burst forth into these speeches: Traitor as thou art (quoth he) though unknown to any but thy self, behold Parisinus whom thou hast so falsely belied, and whom that Traitor Sicanus did intend to murder, though I was reserved by the Almighty, to be the death of twenty thousand Persians: and since I with gracele mind so far from piety, that in this extreame perill of thy death thou wilt scandalize that honourable King, of whom thy base tongue is not worthy to speak, thou

thou art the first that shall dye by the hand of Parisinus, where with waving our sword we will chase thee life, and will take the Armour from thy dead body, armed himself therewith, and mounting his horse set his spear in his rest, and made towards the City.

How Parisinus slew three of the Persian Knights in three several Combats. And how they had taken him prisoner, if he had not been rescued by the Knights of Thebaly. All which was done in the sight of the Queen and the Princesse Laurana.



When Parisinus came to Sicanus Camp, he waved his spear above his head, thereby challenging the knights in Sicanus company, wherewith one singling himself from the Army, came with his spear ready coated against Parisinus, who setting spurs to his horse, ran at him with such force, that his spear passed quite through the knights body, wherewith he fell down dead, and catching with such nimbleness (as it made the whole Army admire at him) the vanquished knights spear he waved the same the second time about his head, at the sight wherof another Persian knight ran at him, whom Parisinus likewise so valiantly encountered, that he overthrow both horse and man to the ground, in which fall the knight burst his leg, wherof he died.

Sicanus seeing two of his knights thus killed, commanded one Bruster a mighty huge proportioned man, and esteemed to be one of the best knights in Persia (except his two brethren) to encounter that knight, who coming forth on a mighty horse, met Parisinus with such violence, that snapping the speeres of their Lances into the ayre, Parisinus left one of his stirrups, and Bruster lay senseless backward upon his

Horse rump, but with the springing of the Horse was raised into his saddle, and by that time he came to himself, he saw Parismus flourishing his sword, which made him draw also, and betwixt them began so brave a combat, that their armour began to fly in pieces and the blood by reason of their wounds, issued out of many places, especially from the Persian knight, whom Parismus so fiercely assailed, that he drove him snely to ward such blows as Parismus lent him, which Parismus espying, taking the advantage, strook a forcible blow at his arm, and parted the same quite from his body.

The Persian seeing himself brought to that low estate, turned his Horse and fled towards Sicanus Camp, which so amazed Sicanus, that he thought the Black Knight (for so they called him) to be some monster in the shape of a man, sent to torment them who notwithstanding these his combates, seemed to be as fresh as he was in the beginning, still attending if any durst make any further assault.

The Queen of Thessaly, Laurana, the young Queen of Hungaria, Lord Remus, Oristus, and Ostris, having knowledge of the coming of these Persians to the City, were gotten to the top of a Tower to behold their Camp, and at their first coming they beheld the armour of Parismus in the black armour, and the three noble combates he had fought with the Persian knights, which made them marvel greatly who that knight might be that had so bravely slain three of their enemies. While they were in this meditation, Laurana having well marked the Black Knight, began to suppose that it might be Parismus; but again she thought that it was impossible; at last she saw a great troop of knights assail him all at once, which made her call and cry, help, help, her senses being so farre drawne with fear and remembrance of Parismus, that she neither thought of the place where she was, nor in whose company. Lord Remus and Oristus seeing this brave and worthy knight in such distresse, issued forth of the City with twenty thousand horsemen, and commanded twenty thousand of the best soldiers, to come out at another way

way on the back of the Persians, under the conduct of another brave Nobleman: all this while the Black Knight so bravely and courageously defended himself, that before the Thessalians were come to his rescue, he had slain above forty Persians, but being unable to strike with so many, he was constrained to lose his weapon. Contrarily, Lord Remus suddenly issuing out so amazed the Persians, and made such slaughter amongst them, that they quickly set the Black-Knight at liberty: who having recovered his horse, and being cheered with the sight of Lord Remus, and his trusty knight Oristus, with his sword made such havoc amongst the Persians that none durst abide his coming, but wheresoever he went, he made a lane for the rest to follow him.

The Persians by this time having joyned all their forces together, thronged by such multitudes upon the Thessalians, that they were constrained somewhat to retire, but in their retreat the Black-knight sent the Ghosts of many Persians to Hell, and behaved himself with such magnanimity, that all the whole Army was amazed at his valour. By this time the Thessalian foot men assailed the Persians one the other side, which drove them into such a feare, that thousands of them were determined to flee: but seeing no hope of safety by flight, were so amazed that their force was quite turned into cowardise; which the Thessalians perceiving, assailed them with such fury, that they had destroyed in a short space a great number of them, that all the Earth was stained with the blood. The Black-knight still followed his Enemies with such fury, that by the death of many Persians he was gotten into the midst of the whole Army, where he found Sicanus encouraging his Soldiers, and knowing him by the richness of his Armour, ran at him with such force, that with a mighty blow he beat him quite from his Horse, and had it not been for the two brethren of Braster who attended on him, he had bene frozen to death. The Black-knight still rushing amongst the thickest of the Persians, came where Oristus was unhorsed, and assailed grievously, who seeing him in that distress laid on his

his blowes with such swiftnesse and fury, that happy was he that could get him farthest from him, by which meanes Oristus recovered his Horse. Thus all the day the battell continued to the terror of the Persians, comfort of the Thessalians, and honour of the Black knight: who behaved himself with such magnanimity, that both the Persians and Thessalians admired his valour. Likewise the Queen and Laurana (who all this while beheld the Battell) could not otherwise judge, but the Black knight to be the most valiant knight in the World.

Thus the day being spent, the Thessalians sounded a retreat, which the Persians were glad of, onely the Black knight went away discontent, because he thought he had not yet sufficiently recompensed his kind loves labours; but secretly conveyed himself unseen of any, unto the Wood, wherein was his Cave. Where we leave him to be entertained of the Nymphs, and to be cured of his wounds, by the Virgin I spoke of before.

Lord Remus and Oristus (having retired their men into the City) sought for the black knight, but could not find him, which made them marvelle what was become of him, whose behaviour had been such, as it made him known to all the whole Army: but seeing themselves frustrated of seeing him, they gave order for such as were maimed, and having viewed their whole troops found but a thousand Thessalians missing, and with great joy went to the Palace: where they were joyfully received by the Queen and Laurana, and relating the whole circumstance of their exploit their chiefest talk was of the worthy solitude of the Black knight.

Sicannus on the other side seeing himself so bruffled with the fall he received, and all his Persians so weakened, and such a multitude of them slain, departed towards the Campe, on the Plaines of Pharsalia, being not able to lodge before the City walls, by reason the ground was so wet with the blood of the Persians: who lay upon such heapes, that had not the Thessalians the next day conveyed their Bodies into a deep

deepest, the stench of them would have annoyed the whole City.

## CHAP. XI.

How the King of *Persia* removed his Camp from the Plaines of *Pharsalia*, and besieged the City of *Thebes*: how *Dionisius*, the King of *Bohemia*, the Prince of *Sparta*, and the King of *Hungaria*, landed in *Theffaly*, with a mighty Army of Souldiers. And what afterwards befell to *Parisinus*, called the Black knight, with the Battell fought betwixt the Persians and *Theffalians*.



The King of *Persia* seeing his son thus killed, and so sore hurt, & such a number of Persians slain, and by so small a company of *Theffalians*, (his men being three to one) was so inwardly vexed & enraged, that he gave commandment to remove all his forces unto the City, which was so innumerable, that within three or four dayes, all the City was round begirt with souldiers. The King of *Persia* himself lay upon a hill hard by the City, in a Tent most richly and rarely contrived: and all the tents of his Contributaries round about him, which made such a show, as though a whole multitude of Nations had been gathered together to destroy the whole earth: which when the *Theffalians* beheld, they conjectured that unlesse God should raise some extraordinary succour to ayd them, it were impossible for them long to withstand this mighty force: but yet some hope they had in the King of *Hungaria* and Prince of *Sparta*, who were gone into their Countries to prepare souldiers to ayd the Queen and Laurana, and the time of their promised return was almost come.

The King of *Bohemia* likewise having knowledge of the Persians being in *Theffaly*, being urged with hope to revenge his sons death, mustered up all his forces, and gathered out

out of them a mighty band of expert soldiers: who were most desirous to deal with the Persians, because of all nations they hated them most, the one half marched under the conduct of Dionisius, and the other fifty thousand he led himself: and having all things in a readinesse, within a short space they arrived on the coast of Thessaly. Dionisius by his spies having knowledge where the Persian Camp lay, conveyed his men secretly into the wood where *Parismus* Cave was: and the King of Bohemia with his fifty thousand, marched over the Plains of Pharsalia, and encamped themselves near unto the City, and hard by the Persians: but soon the King of Persia had knowledge of the King of Bohemia. The same day the Prince of Sparta had landed threescore thousand men at arms, all under his own conduct, and encamped on the other side of the Persians. The king of Hungaria likewise with 50000. souldiers had pitched his Camp on the back of the Persians: so that they were environed round with Bohemians, Hungarians, and Spartans, and before them the City, which much amazed the Persians, but yet by reason of their multitudes they thought themselves secure.

Olivia, Laurana, and the Thessalian Lords, seeing such a multitude of souldiers encamped so neare the Persians, thought them likewise to be enemies: and being much disquieted, sent out a Messenger to know the truth thereof: who returning with joy, certified them, that onely the blew tents were Persians, and the red tents the Bohemians; the white tents the Spartans; the green tents the Hungarians forces: which newes so comforted the Queen, that she could not tell how to contain her self from exceeding rejoicing had not Dionisius been wanting. Laurana especially hearing that *Parismus* father was come to defend her, and revenge his sonnes wrong (whom all men thought to have been dead) continually praised God, and prayed for the preservation of that worthy King, and oftentimes her petitions proceeded from such kinde vertue, that together with the remembrance of his great kindnesse, her fathers losse, and *Parismus*

*rismus* absence, the Thessallian teares ran with abundance down her crimson cheeks, like drops of pearl: at last, the Queen called one of her Gentlemen to go with a message of thanks unto the Camps of her friends, but *Oristus* desired that he might be the messenger, whom the Queen well liked of: who departed out of the City unto the King of Bohemia, being his Lord, and kneeling down did his message from the Queen: The King knowing him, and withall remembryng that he was the onely man whom *Parismus* most esteemed, most kindly welcommed him, with tears for grief trickling down his white beard, and not able to speak one word with extreame grief for the death of his sonne.

*Oristus* likewise, was so moved to see his King so kinde, that he could use no words but joyful sadnesse, and having saluted the King of Hungaria and Prince of Sparta, returned unto the Queen.

Dionisius had so secretly lodged his troops in the woods, that the Persians had no knowledge of their being there, but would oftentimes disguise himself into the Palmers weeds, and so behold the City how it was encompassed with souldiers, which strook such sorrow to his heart, to see his Countrey ready to be wasted, his subjects in distresse, his Queen and his fair Daughter ready to be surpris'd and taken by the enemies, and such a multitude of bloody minded Persians, unto whom he never had done wrong, ready to destroy all things, that he could not refrain from exclaiming against fortune and his own destinies, that had allotted him such mischance: and having diligently viewed the Camp, he espied the tents of the Hungarian King, and of the Prince of Sparta, who had given him their faithfull promise to ayd him against the Persians; and therefore was somewhat comforted with their presence.

At last he espied *Osiris* coming towards the City, who had prepared in readinesse twelve thousand Thessalian Horsemen, and had lodged them some twelve miles from the City, and knowing him to be a man of most rare courtesie, he said, unto



unto him: *Worthy Knight*, might I be so bold as ask this one question, wherefore such a multitude of Souldiers have begirt this City?

*Oris* most courteously answered: Father, those with the blew Tents are the Persians, who without any just quarrell are come to destroy this Countrey. Those with the red tents are under the King of Bohemia, come in revenge of his sons death against the Persians. The green and white tents are the King of Hungaria and Prince of Sparta, who are come to aid the Thessalians. Indeed we are but a handful in respect of the Persians, but the greatest hope we have is in God, and we are also much comforted by the aid of a Black Knight (for so we call him, for that he is unknown) whose valour is able to discomfort a multitude of Persians, who have already tasted of his invincible force: for first he slew three of the stoutest Persians in three single combates, and at last he defended himself against a multitude of them, who like cowards came running upon him, but at last he was aided by Lord Remus and Orisus, who seeing his person so endangered by so unequal a company, issued out of the City with their power (but before they could come to him he had slain forty Persians) at which time by the assistance of that worthy Knight, there dyed of Persians almost fifty thousand: Amongst the rest, this Black knight encountered Sicanus of Persia, and at one blow, overthrew both horse and man, that had he not been taken up he had then bin troden to death: but this is our care, that we know not what is become of him, for he privily got himselfe from forth of the field. Whilst *Oris* was telling this news unto the Palmer, divers were gathered about him to hear his talk, by which meanes the report of the Black Knight came to the knowledge of the King of Bohemia, the King of Hungaria, and the Prince of Sparta, so that the whole multitude were desirous to see that valiant knight.

*Dionisius* hearing this news, was so comforted therewith, that he went unto his souldiers, and sent a messenger unto the Bohemian King, that he would have some conference with

the

the King of Hungaria, and the Prince of Sparta, to give a sudden onset on the Persians, (who were mightily enraged, when they heard that the King of Hungaria and Prince of Sparta were come against them.) The messenger returned answer, that they were determined to give the onset the next morning. *Parismus* by this time had fully recovered his health, therefore being still desirous to revenge himself on Sicanus, as also to be assisted in what estate his beloved *Laurana* was, thinking himselfe too slacke in performing his promised word, armed himselfe in the black Armour, and hasted towards the City, where he was no sooner come, but seeing such an alteration, he was so perplexed to see such a company of enemies encompassing the person of his beloved, that without any further advice, he determined to assault the whole multitude, and so die amongst his enemies.

At last calling to mind the former passion betwixt him and *Laurana*, he thought it an unadvisable part to destroy himselfe whom he so tenderly loved: and taking to himselfe a more stout resolution, he came into the Persians Campe, and viewed the same; next he espied the Greene Tents and thither he went: and coming to one of the Souldiers, demanded whose Tent that was, who answered him, that it was the Kings of Hungaria; and from thence he went unto the White Tents and asked of a Souldier whose that was: who told him, that it was the Princes of Sparta: at last he espied the red Tents, which he very well knew to be his Fathers, which caused an extreme feare in him, lest his Father should be also come against the Thessalians, and coming thither, he met with one of his Fathers Knights of whom he remembered the cause of the coming of the Bohemian King into Thessaly. The knight presently thought that he was the Black Knight, of whom such generall commendation had been given, and therefore told him the whole cause of their coming, and withall, that the Hungarians and Spartans were on their foot: which news so revived *Parismus*, that his joy seemed to exceed.

The

The Persians all this while blessed the behaviour of the Black-knight, and likewise the knowledge of his coming, was come to the hearing of the whole field, which caused many thousands to forsake their Tents to follow him, which he no sooner beheld, but getting himself into the midst of the Plain, which was betwixt the two Camps, and waving his spears above his crest, challenged the Persians, who beholding their terror came again to torment them, stood fighting on one another: At last, one Brant a mighty strong Knight, belonging to the Bosphore of Thrace, one of the Contributors, buckled on his Armour, and mounting himself, came out to meet the Black-Knight, who no sooner espied him, but putting spurs to his horse, encountered the Persian with such fury, that with the blow of his spear which hit him full in the right of his Weber, and shivering into small pieces, struck into his Brain, wherewith he tumbled from his horse dead: which the Persians seeing, none of them would come forth at that time, so that the Black-knight departed greatly discontented that he could make no further proof of his valour, leaving thousands praising him, some commending his person, some his comeliness, some his surtelle, and all his prowess: and as he was going towards the Cave, he espied a troop of Soldiers that lay hidden in these woods, which made him wonder greatly, but would not enquire of any, because he knew them to be his Subjects by their flags: so privily getting into the Cave, he declared to the Out-laws what a multitude of Soldiers were come into the Country.

Whilest he was in this discourse, one of the Out-laws came in, and began to tell that there was an Host of men in the wood, and withal affirming that Dionisius the King was amongst them which he provoked by so many likelihoods, that Parisimus could not chuse but believe him, being now stricken with such an inward joy that he shewed himself so pleasant and merry, that the Out-laws wondered at his sudden alteration, having never before in all the time of his being amongst them, seen him so merry.

Very

Very early the next morning, the Bohemians, Hungarians, and Spartans, by the sound of a drum which they heard within the City, had knowledge of all that were in readiness, therefore they marched all at once to the Persians, being half a mile a sunder upon a goodly Plain, where they were no sooner met with their Armies, but there began the cruellest fight that ever was fought, but all their force did nothing prebail against the Persians (though they assailed them in three severall places) who kept themselves so strongly together (being five to one) that the Bohemians, Spartans, and Hungarians had the worst.

By this time the Thessalians were issued out of the City: and so furiously invaded the Persians, that thousands of their ghosts were sent to Elysium: the fight continued for the space of two hours, in all which time neither party had advantage of other, but still the Persians kept with a head, that the adverse Party could not break their ranks. Also, by this time Dionisius was come near the battell, which when the Persians saw they could not tell what to think: likewise the Thessalians wondered at the Hungarians and Spartans, also fearing lest they had been Persians: at last Dionisius (being in his youth a most brave and gallant soldier) setting spurs to his horse ran furiously against a Persian knight, and with his Lance struck him through the body, wherewith his forces joined with the Bohemians, which somewhat discomfited the Persians, whereupon begun such shivering of Lances, clattering of armour, sounding of trumpets, beating of drums, neighing of horses, that all the City was filled with the noise thereof: wherewith Olivia, Laurana, and the rest of the Thessalian Ladies, were come to the top of a tower to behold them: at which very instant, they espied the Black Knight coming with all speed towards the Camp, who hearing the noise of the battell, was come to satiate himself with the blood of the Persians, rushing in amongst the thickest. The first that he met withall, he ran quite through the body, another's head cut off, that the Persians began to throng about him by multitudes,

whose

whose insincible force they were not able to withstand, he laid such blows upon them, that he that was next him, or within compass of his sword, died. The helmes of his coming was soon broken, which so encouraged those on the Thessalian party, that every one was resolutely determined to dye or conquer.

The Black Knight having continued an hour and more in this cruell fight, having slaughtered many of the Persians, waved his sword above his head: which the Thessalian horsemen perceiving, made a head after him, and by his valour disrankt the Persians, and was gotten into the middle of the Persian Battell, and with him the King of Hungaria, Oristus, and the Prince of Sparta; whom he very well knew, where thousands of the Persians died by the unconquerable force of these worthy knights. At last, they four encountered with four of the Contributaries, two of them being the brethren of Braster, two of the valiantest knights that ever were in Persia, exceeding the ordinary stature of men, the one named Brandor, the other named Ramon. The Black Knight encountered Brandor, the King of Hungaria encountered Ramon, and the Prince of Sparta and Oristus the other two: between whom began such a cruell battell, that the earth was all stained with the blood that issued from them. In this cruell manner they continued by the space of half an hour, where with the Black Knight was so enraged, seeing himself resisted by one Persian, that all his senses were turned into fury, and taking his sword in both his hands, he struck such a blow at Brandor, that with the force thereof his sword broke, and the lesser end thereof in the rebound struck his horse, that he fell down under him, and Brandor fell down from his horse as one dead: which the Black Knight spying, snatched his sword from him, and mounted Brandor's horse, and putting spurs unto him, ranne at Ramon with such fury, that had he not avoided his blow, he had greatly endangered his life, and so he left him. The Prince of Sparta, the King of Hungaria, and Oristus, still kept together. A while afterwards, the

the Black knight rescue Diogenus from the Persians: and thence did he mount his father having his horse slain under him, such noble and valiant exploits did he there perform, that my dulled pen is not able to expresse the same, that the Persians lay slaughtered upon heapes, and the earth was dyed in red with their blood. When it grew towards night, Christ came in with his twenty thousand horse, which fresh supply made such a slaughter amongst the Persians, that they were constrained to use all their skill, how to defend, and not to offend, with such an encouragement to the Thessalian party, that they seemed no more discomfited then at the beginning.

The Black knight all this while ranged up and downe amongst the Persians, being driven hither and thither with the throng of the soldiers, at last he came unto the place where the Persian King was, who ranne at the Black knight with his spear, and burst the same, but the Black knight would not strike at him, but bowed his head in reverence to him, which made him wonder: Also he met with Sicanus, with whom he could not meet before, and being glad he had gotten a sight of him, he determined either now to end his life, or dye hand to in pursuit thereof: therefore brandishing his sword he struck at Sicanus with such fury, that he made the first start out of his eyes. Sicanus likewise gave such a violent thrust at the Black knight, that lightning near the buckle of his Armour, it pierced into his side, where with the Black knight being cased with Sicanus, caught hold of his Beaver with his left hand and with the point of his sword struck him so violently, that the beaver burst, and the Beaver and helmet fell from his head, and the blow having passage by the weaknesse of his Armour, burst so his side that he fell from his horse, and had not Brandor, and Ramon been by, with other of the Contributaries, he had the second time died by the Black knights hands: which so enraged the Black knight that like a mad man he furiously lung up and downe, slaughtering infinite numbers of Persians, and destroying all that

he met, that his horse and armour was all to be stained with the Persians blood, and would have continued longer to the terror of the Persians, but that the day was ended, whereof the Persians were glad, and sounded a retreat, having left so many of their men, that all the earth was covered over with dead bodies.

The Persians having recovered their Tents in hastinesse, began to curse the Black-knight who had made such a slaughter, that all the Army was almost discomfited with the remembrance of him. Dionisus because it was night, conveyed his Souldiers into the Wood again. The Bohemians Hungarians and Spartans, being gone to their Tents, the Thessalians to the City, and Ofris back to the place from whence he came where I leave them to speak of the Queen and Laurana, who all this while had viewed the whole Camp, being amazed to see the slaughter that was made among the Persians, but especially by the Black-knight: they also marvelled what that force should be that came from the Wood, but most of all they wondered that the Black-knight concealed himself: which made Laurana so desirous to know, that she sent out a Page to attend his going from the Camp, and to tell him, that she intended him to lodge within the City, that the Queen & she might yield him some part of amends for his kindnesse for committing to arms him.

The Page diligently attending his businesse, espied the Black-knight hastning from the field, and calling unto him, told him, that the Princess Laurana had sent unto him, to request him to lodge within the City, that they might shew him thankfulness unto him, for the paines he had taken to defend them. The Black-knight willed him to render all dutifull thanks unto his mistress, whose request he would most willingly fulfill, but that he was bound to the contrary by a solemn vow, but within a short time he would most diligently attend her pleasure: for that he had dedicated his life to be spent in her service, which he would not desire to hazard, whilst he had an enemy living: whereupon he rewarding the Page

very beautifully, departed, and by the way he began to consider, that if he should not manifest himself, all men would think that Sicanus had been wrongfully attainted, and his own honour called in question: therefore yet again, he once more resolved not to manifest himself, untill such time as Sicanus had confessed the fact that was layd to his charge, and with this resolution went to the Cave.

Laurana expected the return of her Page, with such an earnest desire, that she could not be quiet untill he was come, who delivered his message according as Parismus had willed him, which drove her into a thousand sundry imaginations: one while she thought it was some strange knight that sought her love by his valour, and another while she thought it was Parismus, but that cogitation was soone extinguished by a thousand doubts, that with extremity of passions, she burst forth into these lamentations.

What distress and terror is this, that I endure for the want of my dear Parismus: who I cannot suppose to be living because he is thus long absent, who I know would not be out of my company if he might enjoy the same: but my Destinies by his want do intend to worke my destruction, yet nevertheless, were I but assured he were living, then should my heart be at quiet, for I know he would preserve his life for my sake: or were I but assured that he were dead, then would I soone resolve to follow him, that my fainting Ghost might enjoy his company: and know wee but how dearly I loved him, then I am sure that he would soone returne, but he hath heretofore met with some false Cressed, and therefore he onely absenteth himself, to make tryall of my Truth, were I but sure this were the effectual cause of his absence, then would I rest in quiet, but my lucklesse Stars bode me no such good fortune. And to my grief, I fear me, he poor soul is destroyed by the treachery of that wicked homicide Sicanus, who is not contented with his Treachery, but also seeketh my destruction. Well with what patience I may, I will live in hope once again to see my love, for I

do not doubt but the Palmers newes were true: or else how should he come to possesse the Helmet which my dear *Parisius* sent me: In these and such like complaints she spent all that night, refusing to be comforted; that the pure christall teares, ranne from her eyes abundantly, that it would have forced a stony heart to relent at her dolefull lamentation.

## CHAP. XII.

How *Dionysius* discovered himselfe to the Queene, and of the joy that was made in the City: How *Parisius* determining to see *Laurana* in his Palmers disguise, lighted upon a pretty Adventure; at the first dangerous, but in the end pleasant; And what Battells he afterwards fought with the *Perrians*.



**D**ionysius very early the next day after the Battell fought against the *Perrians*, came marching with his troops (of whom very few were missing) towards the City, from whence he found the *Perrians* removed further by half a mile: for they having viewed their forces, found them so much weakened, by the last dayes infinite slaughter, that they thought themselves scarce able to resist another assault, and therefore began to intrench themselves: by which meanes those of the Thessalian party had free access to the City, and by the appointment of *Dionysius*, all the Souldiers were conveyed into the City, every Band lodged severally by themselves, all things being ordered for a suddain assault (if need should so require). The Bohemian King requested the King of Hungaria, and Prince of Sparta, to go with him to the Pallace to visite the Queene amongst whom was *Dionysius*, not yet known to any but to the Bohemian, they marched in their Armour, with Drums and Trumpets.

The Queene having knowledge of their coming, came to meet them in mourning attire, and with her *Laurana*, and the

the Thessalian Ladies, the fair young Prince of Hungaria, and the Lady *Isabella* (who had all this while remained with *Olivia*) and all the Thessalian Lords, shewing by their outward habite, their inward sorrow, for want of him that was amongst them: By that time they were met, and most kindly saluted each other, the Queene giving them most hearty thanks for their friendship, and they protesting never to forsake her in time of need. *Olivia* marvelled who that might be that concealed himself, which both *Laurana* and all the rest diligently observed, and being drawn by that means in to brave a cogitation of her lost Lord, she uttered these speeches.

Most worthy King of Bohemia, I am sorry that the King of Thessaly is wanting, to give honour to your simple entertainment, whose absence is most grievous unto us, being our only defence and comfort, by which meanes we cannot give you such a joyfull welcome as we would, if our Sun were not darkened, but are compelled by our plaints to make you partakers of our woe: as also the death of that noble Prince your valiant Son (being unfortunately aded in our Court) hath so overwhelmed us with care, that you cannot expect ought from us but sighes and mourning, that all the entertainment we can give, is to bid you welcome to a feast of sorrow: Wherewith she and the virtuous *Laurana* shewing a countenance still of mild pity, stood weeping and lamenting, that all the whole company were grieved to see their sorrows, which struck such a deep impression of pity into *Dionysius* heart, that with the tears standing in his eyes, he embraced his Helmet, and comming suddainly to *Olivia*, said: Dear Queene, behold one salve to cure your sorrow: The Queene and *Laurana* were so amazed, that they could not tell whether they might give credit to their eyes or no, but at last with such unspeakable joy *Olivia* embraced him, that it delighted all to behold their kind resourings.

*Laurana* kneeling down did her humble duty, and *Dionysius* seeing her kneeling, and with blubbered cheeks as he thought bewailing his absence, most willingly took her up



and kissed her, which he had never before done, since she was a child: which so ravished Lauranaes passionate heart, that her joy for his return, and grief for Parismus want, might be compared to two mighty forces, striving to overmaster each other. The Lords of Thessaly were so rebited with the presence of their King, that twenty thousand hosts of Persians could not daunt their undaunted hearts, such mirth and rejoicing was throughout the whole City, that for ever after they kept that for a Holy and Festival day: so exceeding was the Citizens joy, that the Bells rang, the Drums and trumpets sounded, and they made bonfires and triumphs throughout the whole City: the noise whereof made the Persians to wonder, and were astonish'd to see them in such mirth, and so little to regard their forces, which doubts were soon ended by the news of Dionisius return, whom we leave now in his own Court in great joy, welcoming the strangers, and himself welcomed by his own subjects.

Parismus the same day was come out of his Cave in Palmers Woods, because he knew he should not have occasion to use his arms, and coming to the City, he found the Persians dislodged, and all the rest within the walls, and hearing the joy that was made, he marvelled what might be the cause, and easily got into the City (because under that habit he was not mistrusted) and soon had knowledge of Dionisius his return, which he had heard of before. He began then to think with himself in this sort how unkind am I, that will not manifest my self unto my dear and vertuous Laurana, whom I know endureth much sorrow for my sake, she will keep my being alive secret from men, and why then may I not comfort her and my self, by having some private conference with her, and with this resolution he went to the Palace, and there walked up and down not having a sight of Laurana, nor Leda her Maids all the day, nor possibly knowing how to come to give her knowledge of his being there, without suspicion.

Thus he stayed untill it began to be dark, and having no other

other meanes, he leapt over a mighty high stone wall into the Garden, where others times he had enjoyed the sweet presence of his beloved: and there hid himself in a little Grove that was by Art made for pleasure, whereunto seldom any came, in which Grove he was constrained to stay most part of the night, by reason that the King of Bohemia, and the rest, lodged in the Palace, and it was very late before all were at rest. Yet never the less when there was none to hinder him, he was without any hope to see his mistress, and all things being silent, he espied a light burning in her window, under which he got himself as near as he could, and to his comfort heard Laurana sing this song to her Love.

*Lauranaes Song.*

**V** V Hat carefull breast ere bid such bitter throbs;  
As vex my mind with sorrowes pinching smart;  
Which waste my life with warry eye swoln sobs,  
And breed sad cares that stick full near my heart.

Sorrows my food, and Griefe my whole delight,  
Care fills my heart, sad thoughts possesse my mind:  
Each object sweet, that counterviewes my sight,  
Soon turn to sowre, all pleasures prove unkind.

The cheersfull day renews my endlesse cryes,  
And *Phœbus* beames are shadowed with my teares:  
The silent night that lendeth rest to eyes,  
Yields me no ease, but hearts consuming care.

Thus am I wrackt, no rest to smart can find,  
The sin allest time to pain yeelds no relief:  
No fortune sweet will my ill fate unbind,  
But worse to worse, and Care I adde to Grief.

My love is lost by dismal lucklesse Fate,

My chiefest joy hath felt the sting of Death;

The bad survive, to work me more debate,

And vertue sweet can draw no longer breath.

Fraud counterfeiteth Fame, and Vertu's thrall to Vice,

Faith stands exil'd and Reason rules in place:

The Good proves bad, and Trust as brittle yce,

Inconstant deeds, do constant Love deface.

My Sun shines dim, and darkned by despright,

Spight sucks my blood, yet sueth for my Love:

Valour lyes thrall, despoiled of his Might,

Vain Flattery doth constancy remove.

Base minded Lust, hath Loyaltie betray'd,

False treachery, doth sue and seek for Grace:

Fraud by his force, hath honesty dismay'd,

And forced wrong doth right with might displace.

All this and more, by prose I find too true,

By hard mischance and absence of my Knight:

Whose lucklesse Death, my sorrowing sobs renew,

Whose prsence pure did breed my sweet delight.

He Valour was, whom Fraud hath brought to Death,

He honour was, where vertue shin'd most clear:

In his kind brest true Loyalty drew breath,

Fame in his looks and glory did appear.

Hope speaks me fair, and tells me Fame doth live,

Which addes more doubts unto my troubled head:

The Jewell sweet, the Palmer did me give,

Breeds firm belief, that valour is not dead.

My friendly foe, that sueth for my grace,

Hath hemm'd me in, with strickt besiege of Waste,

And seeks by force my vertue to deface,

And from my soul all comfort doth debar.

Had I my love here folded in mine armes,

Or might I once enjoy his pleasing sight:

I would him guard from force of *Persian* harms,

And love should quell frail Fortunes cankered spight.

But dismal waes expell such blissefull joyes,

My lucklesse starres such pleasures do detain,

Carking distresse and sorrowes me annoyes,

No ease to care, nor end I finde in pain.

Thus am I tost with endlesse misery,

Care is my bed, exceeding pain my rest:

Sorrow's my sleep, my ease adversitie,

And thousand griefs still tumble in my head.

Affliction gives me food, despair relief,

Danger hemis me in, death standeth still in sight:

Each day and night, each thing renews my grief,

And grisly War my senses do affright.

What resteth then for me to put in ewre,

But welcome *Cares* in absence of my friend;

Who for my sake such torments doth endure,

As hath, or will, soon bring his life to end.

*Parismas* hearing the contents of this heavenly harmony, and knowing the voles to be the persons *Lauranacs*, was so contentedly pleased with the same, that his spirits were drawn into a divine contemplation of her perfections, wherein he continued a great space, at length, when he heard that sweet

delighting Harmony to cease, he cast up his eye to the window, to see if he could have a sight of his beloved through the glasse, whereof he was disappointed, by reason the candle was suddenly extinct, which drove him into such cogitations, how he might give any instance unto her of his being there, but saw no possible meanes, being a thousand times in minde to knock at the staires door, that came into the Garden, from which he was discouraged, by as many contrary doubts, lest he should put her in some sudden fear by such an unwanted noise: Again, he knew not who might be in her company, which might be a meanes to bring her name in question, if he should be seen there. Whilist he continued in these doubtfull thoughts, the night was farre spent, and the clear day began to appear, which drove him into another study, which way to get out of that place again, for he was loth to linger there all the next day, and so by misfortune he discovered.

At last being driven to take any shift for currant, he got to the top of the back wall which encompassed the Palace, and thought that was the best way to scape without suspicion, for if he had attempted to have gone back by the same way he came in, he could by no means have escaped unespied, so adventurously leaping from the height of the wall, by great misfortune (the same being farre higher then he thought) he had a most grievous fall, and by the noise thereof, awaked two mighty fierce Watchmen, which were usually kept for to defend that place, wherein a rich Citizen continually laid great store of ware and Merchandise, who no sooner espied him fall down, but they ran upon him with open mouth, (the Dogs in Thebally being so strong and fierce by nature, that they fear not to encounter with the mightiest Lions) which drove Parismus to his uttermost shifts, having no weapon to defend himself withall but a little pocket dagger, drew back unto the corner of the wall, by which meanes the Dogs could not come behind him, that with ease he slew them both, and having escaped this danger, being bitten in divers places before

he

he could kill them, he knocked at the Marchants door, thinking to make some excuse to passe by that way through which he must needs go, for there was no other way for him to get out: the Marchants Daughter hearing one knock looked out at the window, and taking Parismus for another, came running down to the door, and kindly taking him in, locked the door again, and being in the dark entry, clasping her tender armes about his neck: Sweet Friend (quoth she) how could you escape the danger of the dogs, that you adventured to come in one this side of the house? But as I wonder, so I am glad you have escaped them, and most lovingly kissed him an hundred times.

Parismus marvelled much at this great kindnesse, and willingly dissembled as if he had been the man she took him to be: for her tender and kind embracings were sufficient enticements to procure his consent. That night she had appointed a young Gentleman unto whom she bore affection, without the consent of her Parents to come unto her, and with the joy of his coming she made no doubt how he could come in on that side, which caused him to use the like kind salutation to her, rejoycing in his mind, to see how suddenly he was fallen into so sweet a Labyrinth of love, having so lately escaped a mischief.

The Marchants Daughter thinking verily to have been her accustomed loving friend, used all courteous and most kind welcomes that might be, with wonderfull protestations of her Love, being such indeed as proceeded from deep grounded affection, which made Parismus use the like courteous embracings and thankfull gratulations, finding by her speeches and many other likely hoodes, that she was none of the basest, but might be of better Parentage then he took her to be, which some what inticed his mind to a wandring delight in her kindnesse, that he determined with her to taste what love was. By that time they had continued their kindnesse a good space, she desired him to come into her Chamber, where she ledde him in the dark, the poore soul having no other intent but

chast

chast and virtuous; and nothing suspecting him to be a stranger, which *Parismus* well perceived by her behaviour. As soon as they were come thither, she kindly desired him to sit down on the beds side, whilst she went to light a candle, as well to be delighted with beholding his person, as otherwise. She was no sooner gone, but *Parismus* secretly stepped to the door, with purpose to behold if her person and beauty were agreeable to her other conditions and take her to be a most gallant and beautiful Damsel, which sight so enticed his mind, that as soon as she was coming to him with the candle, he blew the same out, and told her, that a light fitted not at that time, for it might be a means to betray their secret meeting, which she allowed for a sufficient excuse: wherewith *Parismus* began to entertain her with such kinde dalliance, as erst he never tasted, she kindly reproving his behaviour, yet had no power to resist: at which time (to both their delights) he deprived her of the jewell she was unwilling to lose, but with his pithy persuasions yielded unto: he using such a sweet attractive vertue as was able to conquer the chaste. *Parismus* reaped such sweet content from this Virgins pure delightful body, that he was altogether unwilling to leave her pleasant embracings, but at last, remembering his estate, told her that he would work such means for safeguard of her honour, as she should well like of: the poor soul with weeping eyes and heavy sighes, bid him adieu; kindly kissing at the parting, he gave her a rich jewell, which he desired her to wear for his sake, and took from her finger a Ring which he promised he would everlastingly wear as her favour.

As soon as he was forth of doors, comes the appointed lover, who having stayed somewhat long, feared some displeasure, but yet knockt, which made *Violetta* (for so she was called) open the door again, marveling that he should be so soon returned: but he at his coming saluted her with a fresh salutation, and kissed her: excusing himself for his long tarryance, which gave her into such a perplexity, that she could not tell what to say, nor what to think: at last she said, what need you use

use such excuses. When you were so lately with me: Deare *Robert* (quoth he) account you it so lately when I protest I thought these three yeres since I saw you: to be longer then three yeres, by which speeches she perceived that another had overheard their appointment, and by that meanes deceived her, which made her grow so much in loathing of her present Partner, that ever after she shunned his company, and bett her mind wholly to meditate how to know him that had crept her love, knowing never to love any but him, and resolving never to enjoy any quiet, until she had knowledge what he was. *Parismus* was no sooner come forth of the merchants doors, rejoycing at his pleasant banquet, but presently he betted to his Chamber, where he found the *Duchesse*, sadly expressing his return, of whom being kindly welcomed, he betook himselfe to his rest, and the contented meditation of the merchants daughter, had not the remembrance of *Lauranaes* Vertues somewhat restrained his affection, he had satne to a loose and dissolute conceit. But calling to mind her perfections, and his unconstant Act, he tormented himselfe with griefe, that he had done her that wrong: but yet it troubled his mind the lesse because he knew it was not revealed to any but himselfe only, and likewise it somewhat urged his mind of ingratitude, if he should altogether forsake *Violetta* from whom he had taken the best jewell he had: in which diversities of thoughts he spent that mornings repose.

The King of *Percha* calling his Contributaries all together, by the advice of all, concluded to send into *Percha* for more forces, as also to request others of his adjacent countie in revenge of such injurious wrongs as he alleged he and his fore Sirens had sustained at *Dionysius* hands. This message being so secretly dispatched, that the *Thessalians* had no knowledge thereof, by which meanes they continued in great security and joy for the great victory they with the aid of the blacke Knight had obtained against the *Perchians*: and so secure would they have bene (had not the remembrance of *Parismus* death somewhat calmed their exceeding joy) that the *Perchians* might

many times have surprised them, but the Black Knight was still such a let unto them, that their enemies could attempt nothing but he would discover it, by which means the Thessalians had knowledge thereof. Many dayes continued the Persians before the Walls of Thebes, never giving any assault, nor once coming forth of their Trenches, which caused the Thessalians to count them halfe vanquished. During which time, Parismus (known by the name of the Black Knight) did fight many brave combats with the Persians, by which means the Court of Dionisius was filled with the resounding echoes of exceeding praises made in commendation of his prowess, and unconquered chivalry, but most of all they wondered at his strangeness to be knowne, and the rather, for that none could learn where he made his abode, knowing that it could not be farre from the City.

The Persian Messenger made such expedition in performing his message, that in short space there were gathered together of sundry Nations another mighty Army: first came the King of Natolia being neerly allyed to the Persian, with a great Army of Natolians, the King of Lybia, with thirty thousand Lybians, and the King of Licia with forty thousand men at arms, and of Phrygia twenty thousand: and to reinforce the decayed Camp of the King of Persia came fiftie thousand. His last Army being landed in Thessaly, and pitched their Tents on the plain of Pharsalia, of whose approach both the Persians and Thessalians had knowledge, to the comfort of the one, and to the discomfort and terror of the other: by means whereof the Thessalians being before in mirth began to take carefull of their estate: and therefore sent twenty thousand horsemen well armed out of the City, to this end, that at all times they might succor them with a fresh supply, for that they knew they should need all the help they could possibly make: who being abroad, soon took order that the Persians in their Marches should scarcely find any Castell or any other victual.

These new forces being all joined together with the Persians

ians beset the City anew with double Trenches and Fortifications round about, so that there could none passe in or out, which caused Dionisius and the Bohemian King, having made surbey of their store to consider that there was not provision enough within the City for such a number of souldiers for one moneth, making account that it was the onely course, either valiantly to drive back the enemy, or ignominiously to abide their mercy, and therefore determined the next day to issue out upon them, which they in policy did not with hope to vanquish such an Army, but to let the Persians know, that they were not discouraged with their huge multitudes: which purpose of theirs was thus furthered by the Black Knight, who early on the next morning had buckled on his Armour, and was come before the Tents of the Persians, and espying such a huge and mighty multitude of new-come souldiers, that already had united their forces with the Persians, and by enquiry he soon learned who they were, and therefore resolved to use his wonted manner of challenge: which when the Persian king beheld, he made relation thereof unto the King of Natolia, as also what valiant acts the Black Knight had done, entring so farre in commendation of him, that the King of Licia standing by, being of a proud and haughty disposition, began to disdain to hear him so highly commended, thinking himself able to conquer and overcome any, for he was esteemed to be one of the best knights in the world: which made him reply unto the King of Persia in this sort, that he would soon prove that there was no knight in Thessaly able to combat the King of Licia: therefore arming himself, he went forth to meet the Black Knight, who no sooner saw him, but he set spurs to his horse, and ran at him with such force, that he overthrew both horse and man to the ground: the King of Licia seeing himself thus foyled, soon got up and drew his sword, but the Black Knight disdainig to cope any further with him, whom he had already conquered, turned his horse and rode from him, which so vexed the King of Licia, being enraged to see his own shame, and with anguish of the



by which he received in the fall, that he would have murdered himself, but that his knights hindered him.

## CHAP. XIII.

How *Parismus* met with *Pollipus* of *Phrygia*, and knowing the device in his Armour, refused to combat with him: and how a peace with certain conditions, was concluded betwixt the Kings of *Persia* and *Thessaly*.



*Parismus* being ready for the next encounter, there was in the Tent of *Phrygia* two knights esteemed the only men in the world for valour, one whereof had before time served the Persian King in his warres against *Bohemia*, whose name was *Pollipus*, the other named *Zoylus*, whose match or equall in Arms, he had never met withall, being withall so vnterrifall and tyrannous, that by his treachery in fight, he had subdued many thousand knights in his travails.

This *Pollipus* was desirous to try his force against the black knight, and soon mounted himself, being a most gallant proportioned & comely knight. The black knight being still ready for any encounter, met *Pollipus* with such force, that both their staves were shivered in pieces, the black knight not once moving in his saddle, but *Pollipus* with the force of his blow lost one of his stirrups. The black knight having drawn his sword ready to combat *Pollipus*, espied upon his Armour the device of three Falcons, and suddenly put up his sword again, which when *Pollipus* perceived, he marvelled thereat, and asked him the combat, the black knight said, pardon me worthy Sir, for I am bound not to combat any, that weareth that Armour, and without any more words departed, *Pollipus* wondering thereat, at last remembered, that when he was with the Persian King in *Bohemia*, he made a Covenant with *Parismus*, never to combat any, that had the device of the branch of roses upon his Armour, which was *Parismus* armour, and

and *Parismus* likewise promised him the like, therefore he thought that the Black knight was either *Parismus* himselfe, or some knight whom *Parismus* has bound to the like oath. The occasion of which vaine passed betwixt *Parismus* and *Pollipus* was grown through the exceeding love that had passed betwixt them from their youth, being brought up together in the University. Therefore *Pollipus* studying what he might be, and rejoycing that he had so worthy a knight to his friend, returned back to the Persians Tent, who stood gazing to see the event of this Combat, but marvelled that they parted so friendly.

*Pollipus* being returned, told the Kings of *Persia* and *Natalia*, that he refused the Combat, the reason was, as he thought the Black knight knew him, otherwise, he knew not what might be the cause. *Dionisius*, the King of *Bohemia*, *Olivia*, *Laurana*, and the rest, all this while wondered at the Black knight's behaviour, but most of all to see him part so friendly with the *Phrygian* knight. Whilst they were in this admiration, they beheld the most valiant *Zoylus* ready to encounter the Black knight. The Persians now thinking to see the Black knight's downfall, for that *Zoylus* had vowed never to depart untill he had destroyed him: with whom the Black knight met with such advantage, that maugre the force of *Zoylus*, he overthrew him to the ground, and himself had lost but his stirrups. *Zoylus* soon recovered his horse, and with furious rage they both met with their swords drawn: when began a most terrible and cruel battel, that all that beheld the same, were amazed at the valour of both the knights, in which cruel manner they continued for two hours space, both being grievously hurt, but neither weary or willing to leave off: at last the Black knight seemed weary, and onely warding the furious strokes that *Zoylus* gave him. *Zoylus* not thinking that he had feigned, laid on his blowes with such staffnesse and force, that all the whole company of beholders, deemed the Black knight almost vanquished. *Zoylus* still pursued him with forcible blowes, and the Black knight still

warded: so long they continued in this manner, that the Phrygian began to waxe weary, and also to suspect the Black-knight's policy, therefore laying his hand, he said: Knight, I give thee leave to ask pardon for thy life, or else be sure thou art but dead.

The Black-knight casting his eyes towards the Tower, where his beloved Laurana stood beholding the combat, and waving his sword most courageously above his head, answered: No dastard Phrygian, (quoth he) I scorn thy proffer: with which words he so freshly assaulted the Phrygian, that in short space he dyed him how to devise to save his life: so he had mangled and cut his body in many places, that his steeled was all coloured with the blood that ranne from his wounds, which caused the Phrygian to thrust at the Black-knight, with such force and fury, that he wounded him most grievously on the left side, which wound, and withall the remembrance the Black-knight had who beheld the combat, caused him with both his hands to strike such a deadly blow at the Phrygian that lighting full on his Weber, the force and vigour thereof, both unbuckled the same, & with his sword cut off his right ear, and wounded him so sore in the face, that he fell on his horse neck senselesse, the Black-knight struck another blow at him with such maine force, that had not the Phrygian's horse started with the glimmering sight of the sword coming, he had there parted his head from his shoulders, and his horse ran loose about the fields: at last the Phrygian began to recover himself, and looking about him, he espied *Parismus* with his sword put up, and himself without a weapon, that what with shame and fury he was almost mad.

These Combatants were no sooner parted, but the Thessalian Horsemen by a privy watch-word from out the City, rushed suddainly upon the Persians at unawares, who expected no such matter, and had their mind otherwise busied, so that before they could be in armes to defend themselves, the Thessalians had made a great slaughter amongst them, which

the Black-knight perceiving, though he was grievously wounded, made such havoc among the Persians, that all men deemed him rather a Devil than a mortall creature, with whom *Pollipus* met, but would not once offer to offend him.

*Dionisius* the Bohemian King, the King of Hungaria, the Prince of Sparta, *Lord Remus*, *Osiris*, and *Oristus* likewise issued out upon the Persian Forces in severall Troupes, which so amazed the Natolians, Phrigians, and the other Nations of the Army, that they marvelled whence the Thessalians could have such aid, but their coming amongst them on such a suddain, made so cruel and mighty a slaughter, that by that time the day was ended, they had slaine of the Persians fifty thousand, which caused them ever after to be more circumspect and wary. All the Souldiers being retired into their places, the Black-knight likewise withdrew himself towards the Wood, *Pollipus* having all this day very diligently followed him, being almost come to the Woods side, set spurs to his horse and overtook the Black-knight, who espying him, stayed his coming, and knowing him to be the Knight with whom he had combated to day by the three Falcons on his Armour, most kindly saluted him, and demanded what might be the cause of his coming unto him, Who replied thus: Most worthy knight (quoth he) my humble suit unto you is, that you would vouchsafe me so much favour, as to let me understand the cause you refused the Combat with me this day: Gentle knight (quoth *Parismus*) you must needs pardon me for that, untill I know whether you are the worthy *Pollipus* of Phrygia, whom I judge you to be by those Armes.

Anded (quoth he) I am the said *Pollipus*, and the chiefest cause of my coming unto you, is my earnest desire to be acquainted with you, though unworthy, for that I know you could not come to the knowledge of me, but by the vertuous *Parismus*, who is now dead, in whose defence if you bear arms, I will with you do my endeavour to revenge his death against mine own Country, for I am thereunto bound.

Worthy Knight (quoth he) if you will vouchsafe to take such simple entertainment as my poor lodging doth afford, I will make known unto you your whole desire, which Pollipus willingly accepted, and being come to the Cave, Pollipus marvailed to see so worthy a Knight in such an obscure place, but being come in he was soon unarmed, and then Parismus knew him to be his friend, and taking him by the hand led him aside, and then made himselfe knowne unto him: whereat Pollipus wondred, and so with exceeding joy most lovingly embraced him: and after Supper was ended (which was provided by the Dut-laws, and cleanly dressed by the Damozell) Parismus declared unto him the whole circumstance of the Tragedy, wherewith Pollipus was so inwardly pained to hear of Sicanus' falshood that he vowed for ever to remain his professed enemy, they continued in the Cave all the night, the one recounting to the other their forepassed friendship, at last it was concluded betwixt them, that Pollipus should continue there, and therefore provided him other armour, that thereby he might not be knowne.

It was some three weeks space before Parismus could recover his wounds, during which time the Theſſalians had received much damage by their enemies, growing into feare of famine, for that their victuals began to waxe scant, their courage being somewhat likewise abated, because they saw not the Black-knight in all that time come into the field, as his wonted manner was: therefore they concluded with a general consent to parley with the King of Persia, and appointed Lord Remus to be the Messenger: who coming to the Persian King, told him that Dionisius King of Theſſaly, did desire to parley with his Highnesse, whom he knew that not he had any way offended, whose message the Persian King kindly accepted, and upon his kingly promise protested to continue a Truce for that day, appointing the place of meeting, to be on the greene before the West Gate of the City: whither he came with the Kings that were with him, and Sicanus his Sonne: whither also Dionisius, and the King of Bohemia, with all the rest of

the Potentates on the Theſſalian party likewise came. Many things being alledged on both sides, & one in accusation of Sicanus, the other in defence of his innocency, at last by consent of all, a peace was concluded for twenty dayes, and on the twentieth day, it was concluded that this controverſie should be decided by battell, and the conditions were these: That if Dionisius could not bring three Knights to combat with three of the Persians, that then he should acknowledge himselfe subject to the Persian King, and also should deliver to Sicanus his fair Daughter Laurana, to be at his disposal, and Sicanus to enjoy the Crown after his death: and if the Theſſalians should conquer the Persian Knights, then immediately the Persian should remove his forces, and Sicanus should acknowledge the truth of the fact, upon which conditions the Peace was concluded, and firmly ratified, by the generall Oaths of both the Kings of Persia and Theſſaly.

During which time of peace, Parismus and Pollipus would usually come abroad both armed in white armour, with plumes of white feathers and white Steeds gallantly attired, and beheld the Persians and Theſſalians continually every day, combating for tryall of their manhood, but still the Egyptian Zoylus, and the two Persians, Brander and Ramon, bore away the victory, that the Theſſalians would no more encounter with them: which drove Dionisius into such a deepe study what Knights to provide against the appointed day of combat altogether despairing of the Black-knight, for that he had not been seen a long time amongst them, and also because Oristus and Obris was so grievously hurt, that it was impossible for them to recover their health by the time appointed. Parismus hearing of this conclusion, told Pollipus, that if he would accompany him to be one of Laurana's Champions, he would be for ever bound to requite that courtesie: which gentle request Pollipus kindly accepted. The third that Parismus had appointed, was one of the Dut-laws that preserved his life, whose valour exceeded most of the Knights in Theſſaly, though he endured some secret disgraces.

Laurana marvelled that during the time of these Wars (being so famous, as they could not chuse but be spread through most part of the World) she could hear no newes of *Parismus*, judging him now for a certain truth to be dead, for otherwise she thought it could not be, for she knew if the least report of those Wars were come to his hearing, he would returne to ayd her from *Sicanus*, whom she so much abhorred, that it was a grief to her to heare him named: withall remembryng in what perill, both her Father, her Country, and her self were brought by his tyranny, and that this misery exceeding all the rest, was now falne upon her, that she must find Champions to defend her, or else she must be thral to him, which was more grievous unto her, then ten thousand deaths, the remembrance of which extremities, caused her to burst forth in these exclamations: Most unhappy and accursed wretch that I am, how can I exclaime sufficiently against my hard Destinies, that have brought me in danger of him, whom I most tally hate, whose very name is odious in my hearing, who by his treachery hath robbed me of my hearts delight and continually workes my endlesse torment: had my unlucky starres allotted me to some untimely death, or otherwise wrought my misery, then I could have endured this martyrdom with patience, and quietly have suffered the extreamest calamity, but my evill Destiny saure exceedeth all misery, and hath shut me from all hope of comfort in this my affliction, by the death of my vertuous Lord, and dear friend *Parismus*, whose Ghost is busied with Divine contemplations, and not tormented as I am with temporall vexations. I would willingly follow him to *Elizium*, there to retain the fruition of his Heavenly companie, but my Destinies likewise have allotted me a coward heart, not daring to execute my will upon my self: my forward mind likewise diswaderh me by many impossible perswasions, that in this extremity I know not whose aid to implore: my *Parismus* is dead, my Fathers knights mangled for my sake, and all things so contrary to good success, that unlesse I be delivered from this Tyrant *Sicanus*, by some

some admirable strange meanes I must of necessity fall into his loathsome power, whose Serpentine breath, doth infect my heart with deadly fear. With these and such like exclamations, Laurana tormented her selfe continually: At last the appointed day of Combat was come, against which time (by the appointment of *Dionisius*) there were stately scaffolds erected for the beholders, one for the King of *Persia* at the one end, and the other for *Dionisius*, and the *Chettalian* pers.

## CHAP. XIV.

How *Parismus* and *Pollipus*, and one of the Our-lawes sent *Dina* the Virgin to the Court at *Thebes* with a message, and how they fought a Battell against three of the *Persians*, according to the peace concluded. And how *Sicanus* refused to perform the condition of the peace, whereupon *Parismus* unknown challenged him the Combate.



And the night before the Combatants should meet, *Parismus* with counsell of *Pollipus* attended *Dina* the Virgin like a Forrest Rump, in most rich Apparell, and sent her unto the Court of *Dionisius*, with these Verses written,

In time of need do not despair,  
distressed wrong shall conquest have;  
Though yet unknown, the Knight is by,  
that 'gainst thy Foes doth combate crave.  
Treasons reward is open shame,  
the lost from death may be preserved:  
With patience bear thy crossed state,  
this Knights good will hath trust reserved.

The Damsell being instructed of *Parismus* what she should do, made all haste unto the Pallace, where she was no sooner come, but she was conducted into the great Hall, where was

Dionisius, Olivia, the King of Bohemia, and the King of Hungaria, with his wife Queen Almida, the Prince of Sparta, and the Lady Isabella his Sister, with a number of other Lords and gallant Ladies, who beholding the Damosell, marvelled with what message she came, who being before the King, humbly reverencing her sette upon her knees, told him that she had a message to deliver unto the Princess Laurana, who being sent for, the Damosell presented unto her a Scrutcheon, wherein was portrayed a Knight, wounded by three slaves, and a description how they covered his body as dead with Wolfe, and underneath how the same Knight was found by another knight, and carried to a Cave, which was done in most exquisite manner. Laurana having a while viewed the same, and read the Verses written underneath, delivered the same unto the King: who having likewise read the Verses, most kindly thanking the Damosell for her paines, referred the answer to his Daughter: who willed the Damosell to signify unto the Knight that sent her, that she did most willingly accept him for her Champion, willing her to deliver unto him a rich embroidered Scarff, which she requested he should wear for her sake. The Damosell having received her message, and rich reward, departed.

As soon as she was gone, all the Court was comforted by this message, and prepared to attire themselves in their stateliest Robes the next day, the more to discourage the enemy. This Damosell soon returned to Parismus, and delivered the message Laurana had sent him, and the Scarff which she requested him to wear as her favour, which he kiss and re-kiss, because it came from the most vertuous Mistress of his affection.

The next day the Thessalian King, the King of Bohemia, the King of Hungaria, and the rest, seated themselves on the Scaffold, likewise Olivia the Queen, the Queen of Hungaria, and the beautiful Laurana, whose splendor darkened the beauty of the rest, that she appeared like golden Scindia, amongst the twinkling Stars, the crimson

and colour shining so fresh in her chappell cheeks, and as Claretstone and Rubie mixed together, being so comely tall, generous and chaste, courteous and constant, so milde and mercifull, as she was no way to be equalled, and yet bearing a minde so farre from pride, that she disdaind not the meanest person in Thessaly, whose repall personage seemed an Ornament to all the whole Assembly. The King of Persia, the Natolian King, the King of Licia, and Lybia, were seated on the Scaffold, and next under them the Persian Centenararies, which when the Thessalians beheld, they supposed one part of the world was come to destroy them. The Persian knights came into the Lists, the first being the vallant Zoylus, attyred all in red with most rich Caparisons of beaten gold, with a plume of red feathers bespangled with gold; next came the vallant Brandor, and Ramon, attyred in most rich colours of blew, nothing differing, because they were brethren; who gallantly managed their steeds with such bravery, that one would have judged these comely knights could not have been found, and ranging thre or four times about the Lists, but seeing no enemy approaching, they stared and gazed as if they thought soon to stay the Thessalians coming: but stare, gaze, and stay they might, for the Thessalian Champions came not an houre after that, which gave Dionisius into such an agony, that he could have torn his haire from his head, fearing lest the Spoilage the Damosell brought, might be debiled by the Persians to delude him withall, that he and all the rest were driven into such an extasse, that they sat like men amazed, not knowing how or which way to save themselves from dishonour.

Laurana likewise seeing her expectation crossed, and doubting now the worst, waxed faint with inward grief, and the lively red began to fade out of her Cheeks, that she had faine from the place where she sat, had she not been revived with a suddain shout the people made, who espied the three champions come galloping along the plates, which so revived



the robated hearts of the Thessalians, that they seemed like men newly raised from death to life. The suddain rejoycing somewhat danted the Persians, because they were before perswaded they should have the Conquest without battell, and also they feared lest the black knight should be one of them that were the Combatants.

By this time *Parismus*, *Pollipus*, and the Out-law, were come to the Lists their Armour being silvered all over, their Apparell, Plumes, and Steeds all white, their Staves, Caparisons, and Furniture all alike, nothing differing in all their Ornaments but that *Parismus* wore the Scarffe *Laurana* had sent him, and *Pollipus* in his Crest, a fresh branch of bloomed *Palme*, and having in most gallant manner marched twice or thrice about the Lists, they came back to the races end, and there attended to know *Dionisius* pleasure.

*Parismus* still having his eyes seated on the beauteous Lady *Laurana*, at last *Dionisius* came down from the seat of State and most kindly saluted him, telling them, since it was their pleasure so much to do him honour, as to become his Combatants, he would (if it pleased God to grant them the victory) not be unmindfull of their courtesse, nor ungratefull for their pains.

As sooner was *Dionisius* seated again, but the Trumpet (according to the wonted manner) began to summon these Champions to the Battell. *Parismus* looking back upon *Laurana* (as if from thence he had sercht his being) waved his Lance above his head, and the Champions met with such force, that shivering their Lances into a thousand pieces, they passed by without any harm at all, then drawing their Swords *Parismus* encountred *Zoylus*, *Pollipus*, *Brandor*, and the Out-law *Ramon* between whom began a most fierce, terrible, and cruell battell, that in short time their Armours flew in pieces, and the blood ran down abundantly on either party, in which most cruell fight, they continued for the space of two houres, neither party seeming to yield. At last *Parismus* being incraged at the valour of his enemy, and knowing that it was now

no time of dalliance, because he saw the Out-law begin to faint, assaulted the valiant *Zoylus* so fiercely, that he could scarcely withstand his fury, and soon had dyed by the unconquering Arm of *Parismus*, but that the Out-law had received such a wound by the hand of *Ramon*, that he fell down dead under his Horse, which somewhat refreshed *Zoylus*, so that *Ramon* taking the advantage, also assailed *Parismus*, which drove him to his uttermost shifts. At last he esped a piece of Armour broken from *Ramon*'s arms, in which place he gave him such a wound, that he let his Horse raines fall, and his Steed being at liberty, began to wander disorderly about the lists, *Zoylus* in the mean time, being well refreshed with the spy of *Ramon*, strucke such a terrible blow at *Parismus*, that it pierced his Armour on his left Arm, and lighted so full on his thigh, that he was grievously wounded, which blow, turned *Parismus* sences into that extreame fury, that withall his force striking with both his hands at *Zoylus*, he smote him on the head with such fury, that he fell down from his Horse: at which blow all the field shaked, and *Parismus* sword burst.

During which time, the other two Champions continued the Combate most bravely, and with much commendation, but greatly to the disadvantage of *Brandor*, who was mighty strong, and a big-boned knight, and struck his blowes with such force, that had not *Pollipus* nimbly avoided them, he could not have endured his fight. At last *Pollipus* having esped his advantage, thrust at *Brandor* with such force, that the Sword lighting full on a broken place of his Armour, ran quite thorough his body, and he fell down stark dead: by which time, *Ramon* had recovered his sences: and seeing *Parismus* to have vanquished *Zoylus*, assailed him weaponlesse as he was, and wounded him in two or three places, but soon *Parismus* got within him, clasped him in his Armes, and with maine force threw him forth of his saddle, and in the fall burst his shoulder whereof he dyed: wherewith the whole Assembly gave such another shout that the earth seemed to shake with the voyces,

presently the whole States on the Theſſian party, conuocated the Combatants with all ſolemnity, unto a moſt rich ſeaſon. They ſtayed there for the ſame purpoſe: where they were no longer ſtayed, but Dionisius moſt lovingly embraced them in his arms, and with infinite courtesies thanked them for their paines, deſiring them to nouriſh themſelves, that his Phyſicians might leaſe their wounds, which they reſuſed to do, untill the conditions and covenants of the combat were performed by the King of Perſia: who hearing their juſt request, (could not in that honourable aſſembly ſo much diſhonour himſelf as to break his word) preſently gave order that all his forces ſhould be diſmiſſed, and alſo calling Sicanus unto him, commanded him upon the ſpott and reverence he bore unto him, to confeſſe the certainty indeed, whether he or any by his procurement, had ſlain Parismus. My Lord and Father (quoth he) by the reverence I owe your Maieſty, and the reſt of the Kings in this Aſſembly under your honourable correſtions, I denounce him for a villain and a traitour, that accuſeth me for Parismus murder.

In like reverence to this moſt honourable Aſſembly (quoth Parismus) I return that villain and traitour to thy ſelf Sicanus, for that thou lyeſt, for thou hiredſt three of thy Thracians with promiſes of great preferment, who the ſame day that Parismus was miſſing, murdered him moſt treacherouſly in the Wood hereby, my ſelf found his body, and here I ſtand to prove againſt thee, that like a Villaine and a Traytor thou didſt this deed; in whoſe behalf I dare thee to the Combate, and ſo far as thou likeſt Parismus had no friends for to maintain his juſt quarrell, I charge thee as thou art a Knight, and honourſt Arms, not to reſuſe the Combate: Which challenge Sicanus in great rage excepted, & preſently went to arm himſelf thinking that he might eaſily be overcome, for that he was already grievouſly wounded. So what Dionisius and the King of Bohemia could, Parismus will demanded the combat, whoſe conſtancy and reſolution they marvelled at, and the

the whole aſſembly were ſo moved of his courage that with applauſes and commendations they ſtrolled his honourable reſolution.

Laurana ſeeing her Champion ready to undertake a freſh battell, came to him, and ſubſtantly ſhewed for his honourable paines taken in her behalf, deſired to ſee him fight the Combate, for that it might much enrage his perſon, Parismus fighting from his horſe reſolutely killed her hand, the very touch whereof reſiſted his ſpirits with joy, and told her, that if ſhe would pleaſe Parismus ſhould go unhurt, he would either at that inſtant make Sicanus confeſſe his treaſon, or ſpend his laſt breath in perſuit of the quarrell: and therefore he moſt humbly craved her pardon.

Laurana with a curious eye marked him whileſt that he talked with her, and though he were much altered, and changed his voyce as cunningly as might be, yet ſhe deemed it like the voyce of her dear Parismus, which ſhe was the rather induced unto, for that ſhe ſaw a Ring on his finger that ſhe had before given to Parismus, which drew her into ſuch an agony between hope and deſpair, that had not her Father and many others been by, ſhe had there reſolved her ſelf of that doubt: wherewith, and with the ſight of the blood that ſued out of his wounds, the embated ſuch an inward affliction and torment of mind, that her ſenſes were overmaſted with a pitifull regard of his estate. But preſently came Sicanus mounted on his Courſer, ſo Parismus humbly taking his leave of Laurana, mounted his ſteed, and coming towards Sicanus began to unbuckle his white Armour, which was ſo artificially made, that it was but a caſe to his Armour underneath, which was no ſooner off, but he was preſently known to be the Black knight that had fought ſo valiantly in the behalf of Theſſaly, and had ſlain in ſeverall combates an incredible number of Perſians, which ſo daunted the hearts of the Perſians, that they allotted him the conquest, before ever that he began the Combate.

The Black Knight at the first encounter, burst thro' of the Combatants ribs, and in short time with forcible blowes, beat him from his Horse, and alighted to have parted his head from his shoulders, but the King of Persia seeing his Son in that perill, ran to the place, and desired the Black Knight to spare his life, which he obtained. And unlacing his Helmet to give him breath, found that it was not Sicannus, but another knight that he had hired in his stead, for that himself durst not meet so valliant a knight hand to hand: Which Parismus seeing, in great rage would have slain him, but he was dissuaded by Pollipus. This cowardly jest was so odious, that ever after Sicannus was accounted the most recreant knight living, but being of a shameless disposition, he nothing regarded the same.

## CHAP. XV.

How Parismus and Pollipus were conducted to the Court in tryumphant manner, and how Parismus discovered himself, and of the joy Laurana made for his return. And also how Oristus was the occasion of his own death.



The black knight having ended this combat to his unspeakable commendation, was with Pollipus in most brave and tryumphant manner conducted unto the Pallace, with the noise of Drums, Trumpets, and ringing of Bells, by the Kings of Thessaly and Bohemia, and by the Persian King, who so well liked the black Knights behaviour, that they resolved to stay some days there, as well to be acquainted with this valliant knight, as also to do him all the honour they could, though by his valour they had lost the victory.

The Streets where they passed, were by the Citizens strowed with flowers, the windows and doores, and house tops, were filled with abundance of people (that they seemed like stages) that came to behold those Conquerours, some presented them

them with Garlands of Bayes, in token of Victory, some with roses, some with gifts, some with commendation, every one with exceeding praises of their valour, that it were a tedious to rehearse the manifold honours that were done them as they passed along the Streets: and as they passed by the Marchants house where Parismus had lately escaped the danger of the dogs, he espied Violetta standing in her fathers doore, attended by two or three Maides, very neatly apparelled, who presented Parismus with a most rich embroidered Scarf, so artificially wrought, that it excelled all the most curious workes in Thessaly, wherein she had most exquisitely drawne out the whole manner of Parismus adventure with her in her fathers house, which gift he most kindly accepted, being by that time he had viewed the same, come to the Pallace, where they were welcommed by the Queene and her Daughter Laurana, with sounds of Musick and exceeding joy: after the Queen had used some speeches, Laurana most heartily thanked him, that he vouchsafed to be her Champion, but her countenance betrayed her inward care, and her sad behavioar, her mournfull thoughts, her minde being drawn to the extreamest limits of respite, and given over it selfe to the most bitter pangs of sorrowfull meditation, that Parismus marvailed to see her constant resolution, that could not be altered by no means of joy, nor once forget him that had been so long missing. Dionisius likewise welcommed thither the King of Persia, and the rest of the Kings in his company, whose royal entertainment was marvailously liked, and commended of all.

The Champions (according as the custome was) were seated at a table ordained for the same purpose, with great state, and Dionisius and the King of Bohemia came unto them (as the manner was with them) to disarm them for their more honourable entertainment. But Parismus seeing his Father comming to do an office of duty to him, rose from his Seate, and kneeling down, requested a boon at his hands: the King of Bohemia seeing him kneele, willing him to aske what he would

would. My Lord said he, my fate is, that you would forgive Parismus enemies: the King of Bohemia (little thinking that would have been his request) wondered what reason he had to ask pardon for his Sonnes enemies, and said unto him. Sir Knight, I would gladly know why you ask pardon for them that have murdered my Son. My Lord answered he, because Parismus is living, wherewith he pulled off his Helmet, and the King his Father knew him, and caught him in his arms with such exceeding joy, that the teares ran down his white beard in abundance.

Dionisius and Olivia likewise espysing him, embraced him with a thousand hearty welcomes, and the whole court was filled with exceeding joy for his return. The King of Persia, & all the rest of his party likewise came unto him, and desired him to remit all discontent, that had passed betwixt them, for that now they did repent them for the injury they had done to him: the like honour there was done to the Phrygian Polli-  
pus, all admiring the wonderfull virtues of Parismus: and recounting the famous acts he had done, seemed to be ravished in mind with joy that it was he, that had so honourably defended himself against all Knights that did combat with him. Presently they were all seated at a most royal Feast, where Parismus before the King of Persia, and all the Kings present rehearsed the whole truth of Sicanus conspiracy against him, and how he was preserved, and how that he had lived ever since in the Cave amongst the Outlaws, and how he came by the black Armour, which discourse did so much disgrace Sicanus, and extoll his own commendations, that every one rejoiced at his good fortune, and condemned Sicanus falsehood.

Parismus having ended his discourse, marvelled that he could not see Laurana to welcome him, but she being nothing delighted with any newes, but of his return, and nothing at all thinking he had been her Champion all that while, absented her selfe from their company, for that her fancies were otherwise biased and had withdrawne her selfe to her Chamber, onely accompanied by Leda her Maide. Dionisius seeing that

that Laurana was not there, willed one of his Gentlemen in the hearing of Parismus to signifie unto her, that her Champion stayed for her welcome. Parismus hearing his speeches desired him the favour, that he might go and visit her himselfe, wherewith Dionisius was well contented, and he and Pollipus with him, being unarmed went to Lauranaes lodging, which they found fast shut, but Parismus longing to see her person, whereby his life was maintained, knockt at the doore, and Leda came and opened the same, who seeing him, was so surprised with joy, that she ran in againe without speaking a word, and told her Mistress that Parismus was at the doore: at which word, Laurana started, saying; I pray thee do not torment me with these newes of joy, for I know they cannot be true, for so often thou hast kindly deceived my expectation. Dear Mistresse (said she) believe me it is most true, and againe ran to the doore, telling him that her Mistresse would be very glad to see him.

Parismus entred the Chamber, and with such fervency delighted himselfe to behold her presence, that his wits were ravished with a heaven of joy, and Laurana having espied him was so surprised with vertuous amazement to behold his person, that the teares stood in her eyes, and her heart leapt in her breast. Who being met most lovingly kiss each other: so much surfeiting of delight each of others presence, that their speech was turned into a delightful embracing of hearty content, not to be expressed: which being ended, Laurana came to Pollipus and welcomed him with so sweet a kisse, that had she not been the beloved of Parismus, he would have become himselfe her continuall servant. At last Laurana being ravished with beholding her dear Parismus, taking him by the hand, uttered these words.

Most vertuous Prince, your presence and preservation, hath brought unto me that content, that I am not able to expresse: your welcome, is a Mardens humble and hearty thanks for your pains taking in me behalf, which is all the reward that I can make you; I acknowledge my self so farre bound to you

your

your vertues as I shall endeavour during my life, to requite your kindnesse to my power. I can count my self to have received my life at your hands, the preservation of my Parents and welfare of my Country, that all that may be ascribed unto happinesse, is mine onely by your vertuous power: that I protest, wherein soever I may be in any degree thankful unto you, I here offer to be ready at your disposition. I had entertained sorrow, but you have banished the same from my heart, and brought me that happy content, that I account my selfe so far indebted unto you for the same, as I shall never be able to requite: which words she sealed upon his lips with many kisses,

Parismus answered, my dear Lady whatsoever I have done I account as nothing, in respect of that my willing hart would have attempted for your sake and my deserts nothing worthy the thanks you render to me for the same, being so far bound to you in the bonds of perfect duty, as I account my life and all that I have unworthy to be spent in recompence of the least of your favours. humbly thanking you for retaining so good opinion of my unworthinesse. Laurana knowing that her Father and the King of Bohemia, stayed for Parismus returne, with a joyfull countenance accompanied them down into the Hall, and being come to the King, My Lord and Father quoth she, I desire your Majestie that these worthy knights may be committed to my charge to have their wounds cured, which they have received in my behalf.

Daughter said Dionisius, I commend the regard thou hast of their health, and commit them into your hands, being a charge of an high account, praying thee to use them in the kindest sort, for they have worthily deserved to be well esteemed: And my Lord Parismus (quoth he) since it is my Daughters request, I hope you are contented to be her Guest, My Lord, sayd Parismus, else I should shew my self much ingratfull.

Laurana presently conducted them unto two most rich adorned Chambers, which she had most sumptuously beautified

with jewels and costly furniture, brought of the most richest work in the world, all of silver and crimson sattin, bordered with Gold and Ayre. His bed was framed most curiously, standing in manner of a Babylon: the posts that were it were of Ivory, he set with Rubies the Canopies green silk: the Cover of the rich Arabian silk beset with Pearls: the Curtaines of the same the Chambers adorned with most beautiful pictures to delight the eye, the stateliness of this lodging, seemed in richnesse nothing inferior to the Monument of Mansolus, being one of the worlds wonders, they had not there remained long, admiring the beauty of the place, but their eares were delighted with the sound of most pleasant musick, unto which having a while listened, Laurana desired Parismus to accept of this for his lodging, telling him that Pollipus lodging was likewise adjoining to his, that at their pleasure they might enjoy each others company, whither Pollipus was honourably directed.

Parismus most kindly thanked her, whose heart was exceedingly delighted with beholding her beauty, the Kings Physicians were by this time come, which caused Laurana with a kind farewell, to bid Parismus Adieu for that night, whose heart began to wane sad at her departure, the Physicians had then dressed his wounds, which were many, but none mortall, and being treated with his dayes exercise, these two worthy Knights willingly gave themselves to rest, where for that night we leave them. Orilus hearing that Parismus his Lord was returned, being then in the extreamest danger of his life, by reason his wounds were then fresh, could by no means be perswaded but that he would go to see him, and therefore the next morning very early, without the knowledge of any, stole down to go to his masters lodging, being weak and feeble, but he received a fall, which made a rupture in his wounds in such extreame sort, that they fell again to bleeding afresh, but having a strong heart, he again recovered his feet, and with much speed got to Parismus lodging by which time the Physicians that attended him, met him, and suspecting the truth,



following him by the tract of blood to the *Princes Chamber*, where mangers the best skill of the *Kings Physicians*; his blood could not be stanch'd, that there he dyed in his *Lozds* armes, whose death strook such a passionate sorrow to *Parismus* heart, that in many dayes he could not banish the remembrance thereof out of his mind. His newes was soon come to the knowledge of the King of *Bohemia*, and all the rest, who generally lamented his death, so that he was a Knight of god and honorable qualities. *Parismus* continued many dayes in this heavenly *Paradise*, where he wanted for nothing that might bring comfort to his disquiet heart, being diligently tended by the vertuous *Laurana*, untill that he had fully recovered his health. During which time, he often enjoyed the *Princesse* presence, and recounted unto her the whole truth of that which he had passed since his departure from the Court, (only leaving out the discourse of the *Marchants* daughter) rejoicing much the Lady *Laurana* to hear the same, who with kind and loving kisses, blamed him for that he would not make himself known in the *Palmer*s woods, with many other kind conferences.

Of *Sicanus* death. How *Parismus* wedded the *Princesse Laurana*, and of a generall triumph that was held for seven dayes.



Any dayes continued the King of *Persia*, with the rest of the Kings in his party, in *Dionisius* Court, in which time many were intrapped with the beauty of *Laurana*, which was such as would dazzle the eyes of the beholders, and astonish the hearts of no simple judgments with a divine comely, that the King of *Natolia* was determined to require and demand her in marriage of her Father, had he not been kept back by *Sicanus*, who caused his Father the *Persian* King, earnestly

earnestly to solicit *Dionisius* to that effect: whose answer was, That his promise rested upon his Daughters choice, though indeed he meant she should never marry the *Persian*, so that his behaviour and treachery had made him hated and odious in all mens sight.

*Parismus* now in like sort determined to work both his own and *Laurana*s contentment: and to that purpose on a certain time walking very solentarily in the Kings Garden, studying how to move his Fathers good will to this match, in the midst of his dumps, he was encountered by the *Princesse Laurana*, who only attended by *Leda*, was come down also into the Garden to take the ayre, who awaking *Parismus* from his dumps, with a courteous greeting, ordered these speeches. My deer *Parismus* (quoth she) may I be so bold as bear you company in this your solitarinesse, or would you but vouchsafe to impart the cause of your sadness unto me, that I might be partaker of your sorrow, then should you soon perceive, that whatsoever can procure your disquiet, shall likewise purchase my discontent. *Parismus* most reverently taking her by the hand, said: Most vertuous Lady, I acknowledge my self so far bound unto you, for many worthy favours undeservedly bestowed upon me, that I know not which way to yeeld you sufficient thanks for the least of them, much lesse to require them: and if I should deny to fulfill your request herein, unto whom I am perpetually bound, I should shew my self altogether void of manners: Therefore know (most vertuous Lady) that my supposed discontent, was a pleasant and delightfull meditation. And calling to remembrance your manifold virtues, and undeserved favourable assurance you have given me of your affection, that I was now determining to speak to my Father the King, to request a consummation of our happiness at the King your Fathers hands, so it stand with your good liking,

My Lord (said *Laurana*) I wholly commit the matter to your wisdom, whom I am bound to obey, by the choice I have made of you to be my Lord and Husband, therefore I desire

bestre you to ble that prerogati be obseru'd, that by right be-  
longeth unto you.

At these and such like kind conferences; they continued tal-  
king in the Garden, as both their unspeakable joyes, being  
so united in the bonds of perfect amity, that it was impossible  
to reuind be their settled friendship. But Winter time being  
come, they departed to their severall wayes, being both highly  
contented with the others faithful promise.

Parisius no longer found opportunity, but he made his love  
to Laurana, known to his Father, who was glad of his Sons  
virtuous choice, and promised him to motion the same to Dio-  
nisius, which he presently did by this occasion. As he was wal-  
king alone, he was encountered by Dionisius and Olivia, the  
Queen not accompanied by any: and having kindly saluted  
each other, Dionisius began to talk of the worthinesse of Pa-  
risius, and telling him that he esteemed him the most fortu-  
nate man living, to be the father of Robertus a child entering  
to serve in commendation of him, that the King of Bohemia  
thought he could have no fitter time to motion the Marriage  
then that, and therefore answered, My Lord, I thank you for  
expressing into such good liking of my Son, whom I cannot dis-  
commend, for that he hath well deserved honour, but I have an  
humble suite unto you, and the Queen here present, in his be-  
half, which if you will vouchsafe to grant, both he and I, shall  
be bound unto you for the same. Dionisius and Olivia earnest-  
ly requested him to manifest the same. My Son (saith he)  
intreated me to request your honourable favour, to contract a  
Marriage betwixt him and your most vertuous Daughter, unto  
whom he hath wholly dedicated his affections, that I am now  
become an humble suitor in his behalf. Dionisius and the Queen  
hearing his request, were so exceeding glad thereof (being the  
only thing they desired) that taking the King of Bohemia by  
the hand, they told him they were highly contented it should  
be so.

Thus all things falling out to their contentments, they  
parted for that time. Dionisius the next day assembled all his

Com

Counsell and Noblemen together, and there mentioned the  
Contract unto them, who most willingly consented thereto,  
by meanes whereof the newes of this Marriage was soon  
published, that it came to the hearing of Sicannus, who being  
iraged with grief and shame, abandoned the company of all  
knights, and in short time grew to such a desperate conceit  
of his impaired honour, that with grief thereof he dyed, which  
brought some heavinesse to the King of Persia, and the rest:  
but his death was soon forgotten, for that his Father esteemed  
him not worthy the name and estimation of a King, and had  
lately grown into great dislike of him, and altogether favo-  
red the next Son Lennilus who far excelled his brother Sica-  
nus in vertuous qualities.

The solemnization of Parisius Marriage was appointed to  
begin within forty dayes, to the unspeakable joy of Theellus,  
but especially of the two young Princes, in which time Dio-  
nisius sent Messengers to invite thither many Kings and Po-  
tentates, by meanes whereof the same of these Nuptials was  
spread in most places of the world, and many hundred knights  
determined to meet there to do honour to Dionisius, whose  
vertues by report, had beene made knowne unto them. To  
this Marriage came the famous Emperour of Constantinople,  
with many other worthy knights. The Emperours Sonne of  
Greece, named Sicheus, with many valiant knights: Prolo-  
my the Kings son of Egypt, the King of Frize, famous for chi-  
valry and the most famous Champion of the world Guido of  
Thrace: with many others too tedious to rehearse, who on the  
appointed day were royally entertained by Dionisius.

Parisius and Laurana were with all solemnity brought  
unto the Temple of Diana, where their Rites were performed  
with admirable Pomp, the Bridegrome being accompanied  
also above eight Kings, and the Bride being led by two Em-  
perours and attended by Queens, and many Ladies of great  
account, the Rites and solemnities being performed with such  
dignity that it excelled the stateinesse of Hecuba, Queene of  
Troy.

Thus all things being ended for that day the night approached, most part whereof was spent in Masks, and many other Courtly pastimes needlesse to rehearse: and at last the Bride was conducted to her Bride chamber by the Queen of Hungaria, and the Queen of Sparta, where we leave her to her exceeding content to entertain her beloved Parismus: who behaved himself so kindly that night, that Lauranaes fosteresse of Virginitie was battered down, and he had the scaling of that strict Fort and spotlesse purity, and of a vertuous Virgin he became a chaste wife, and that night he made her the happy Mother of a godly Boy as shall hereafter be declared.

Dionisius for the more royall entertainment of the States there assembled, caused a most stately Edifice to be erected on a godly Green before the Palace Gate, the Stages being most cunningly made by expert work-men, and proclaimed a Triumph to be made there for seven dayes, against all comers. The first dayes triumph, the Prince of Sparta and his Knights held as chief Challengers, who appeared before the whole Assembly of States, who were seated upon the Scaffolds in such royall manner, that the glory of them seemed to excell the stately pomp of the mighty Monarch Alexander.

Amongst the rest, Laurana was seated in a Chaire of State, Crowned with an Imperiall Diademe, as Lady of the Revels: who had prepared severall gifts for the Conquerours, shining like golden Phœbus, and her eyes twinkling like two bright shining stars, that her beauty made the whole Assembly of strange Knights admire her excellency. The Prince of Sparta had his Tent pitcht at the first entring into the Lists, being as white as milk, shewing his single estate, on the top whereof, was artificially framed a Golden Sun, which with his splendor beautified the Lists.

This dayes triumph was performed by the Prince of Sparta, and his Knights, with exceeding valour, himself having unhorsed above forty Knights of strange Countries, and had given to him by the Bride a pair of Silver Gloves, made by the cunningest workman in the world,

Thus

Thus in great royalty, to a exceeding pleasure of the beholders was the first day spent, till the dark evening caused the knights give over their honorable to their nights repose.

Early the next morning the knights were summoned to the Lists, by the sound of Trumpets, the chiefe Champion for that day, was Lord Remus of Thessaly, rich mounted upon a Thessalian Steed of Irongray, his Tent pitcht neare unto the other, being of the colour of the Rain-bow: on the top whereof was artificially framed a swift running Hart, whereby the Countie of Thessaly was famous: before him went four Pages richly attired, carrying some severall scatchions: on the first, was portrayed his mistresse picture: on the second three silver Doves signifying his innocency, farre from vain ostentation: on the third a bleeding heart: and on the last, a man seeming desperate: who behaved himself with no lesse valour then the Prince of Sparta to the great joy of his Lady Iiabella. The third day the worthy Knight Pollipus took chiefe challenger, who had his Tent richly pitcht over against the Stage being of the colour of blood, on the top whereof stood a Lion Rampant, his Steed furnished with costly habiliments of beaten Gold, his armour after the Phrygian manner, whose matchlesse chivalry unhorsed that day an hundred Knights, and wonne the prize from all the Knights that encountered him. The fourth day Lord Osiris of Thessaly, was chiefe challenger, whose Tent was pitcht in manner of a hollow tree, from whence he issued, so artificially overspread with mosse, that he seemed to be nothing but a lump thereof, running up and down the field, but so honourably behaving himself, that he was allotted that dayes conquest. The fifth day Prince Lenilus, Son to the King of Persia, was chiefe challenger, whose Tent was of the colour of the sky, his habiliments was of the colour of Azure, beset with stars of Gold, who behaved himself with great honour most part of that day: but at last he was encountered by the valiant King of Frize, by whom he was unhorsed by reason that his steed stumbled, and so the conquest returned to the adverse party. The King of Frize unhorsed after-

¶ 4

wards

wards many worthy Knights to his exceeding commendation. The first day the King of Frize was challenger over the adverse party who had not continued long but he was unhorsed by the King of Libia who most part of that day bare away the Prize untill he was encountered by Guido of Thrace, and by him unhorsed: Guido for that day bare away the Prize having unhorsed many hundred Knights, and was likely to achieve the chiefest honour of the Tournament. The seventh day Guido of Thrace came with great Triumph into the Lists having his Tent pitch in full view of the whole Assembly being of the colour of bright Gold, supported by foure Elephants, himselfe mounted upon a coloured Steed, most richly behung with habiliments of beaten Gold, who behaved himself most part of that day, to the shame of the Thersalian and Persian Knights that the whole assembly admired his valiantnesse. Which Polipus seeing, notwithstanding his dares triumph was past, yet he armed himselfe, and encountered Guido most bravely. The first cariery they met and broke their staves onely, likewise they had some five or six courses more, in which maugre all the force Guido used, he could not once move or disadvantage Polipus. Polipus likewise was extremely vexed that he could not unhorse Guido, that each of them being sufficiently stirred to wrath, addressed themselves for another encounter, when they met with such fury, that they were both unhorsed, which Guido seeing, forgetting where he was, and disdainning to be encountered by Polipus any longer, drew his sword, and Polipus did the like, whereupon they began to combat, which Dionisius stopping commanded his Herald to part them, and being both mounted again, ready to make farther scall for the victory: the Judges considering the mischief that might arise (for that there began to be a tumult in the field) sought to appease the Champions and dissuaded them to give over, and so let the honours of those Triumphs rest to both of them, which Guido in great disdain refused, without hearing what answer Polipus would make.

Laura-

Laurana by the advice of Parismus, sent Messengers to Polipus, to request him for her sake, to give Guido leave to end that day's challenge, for that he himselfe had sufficiently shewn his knightly Chivalry, withall she sent him one of her globes. Whose command Polipus presently obeyed, being a knight of exceeding courtesie, whereby he wanne more honour then Guido could achieve by the conquest. The rest of that day Guido unhorsed many Knights, and was like to carry away the honour of the Triumph, maugre all the Knights that afterwards encountered him, which grieved Parismus to behold. Withall noting his pride he secretly stole from the stage and presently armed himselfe in armour that he had caused to be made of purpose, seeming to be old torn and rusty, but yet of as good proof as might be: being made of the purest Lydian Steele his habiliments and furnitures seemed to be such as had been layd up unused seven winters, and all to be eaten with moathes his Steed he made to trot like a Country cart-horse and his plume was of Russet Feathers: accompanied with some thirty of his Knights attired like rude Country fellows with battes and Raves on their neckes, and in a manner, in the midst of the Thracians Victories he entereth suddainly and rudely into the Lists seeming indeed to be a very natural Country peasant, erected by a companie of rude fellows to make pastime and being espied of the people he was welcomed with exceeding shouts and laughers, that now the eyes of all the beholders were bent upon him: being come to the List he offered to run, but Guido disdainned to cope with one so base, to who Parismus knights came and told him: their master came to run with none but himselfe, and therefore he should either break a Lance or else they would beat him out of the field.

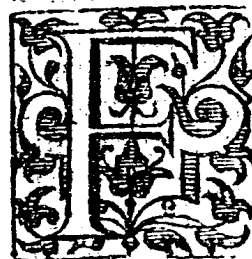
Wherewith Guido (with a scornfull laughter) tooke a staffe and ran at this rustick Knight who notwithstanding his outward shew, encountered Guido so valiantly, that had he not been an approved good Knight, he had measured his length on the ground, which so vexed the Thracian, that he ran

ran the second time, thinking then verily to overthrow him; but it fell out contrary to his expectation, for he could not with all his power make this Country Champion in his saddle: but at the third course he was himself unhorsed with such violence, that both horse and man lay tumbling on the ground.

Guido having received this exceeding foye, in a great rage departed the field, and none of the contrary party encountered this knight, but they were all foyled and overthrowne, that at last there was none would run against him any more which he perceiving, lighted from his horse, and went up the Scaffold whereas the Wyde late, and rudely offered to have kissed her, but she curtously reproved his boldnesse, with that all began to laugh at his rude behaviour, and some began to thrust him back: at last he discovered himselfe, and Laurana knowing him, wondered to see him armed. Thus the whole honour of the Triumph redounded to *Parismus*, as most worthy of the same, whose behaviour was so highly commended, that all men much applauded this his last device, and Guido knowing him, was not greatly discontented to be foyled by so worthy a knight. By this time the mightie blacke mantle began to overspread the whole earth, that *Dionisius* with the rest of the Kings, conducting Laurana in triumphant manner, hastened to the Pallace, where after Supper was ended, they continued a good part of the night in Dancing, and other Courtly Pastimes, their entertainment being so honourable, that they admired the exceeding Royalty of *Dionisius* Court, where they afterwards continued many days, spending the time with many partiall exercises.

#### CHAP. XVII.

How *Parismus* rewarded the Out-lawes that preserved his life. How *Pollipus* was in love with *Violetta*; and how *Violetta* forsook her Fathers house, in the disguise of a Page, and was entertained by *Parismus*, and of the care *Pollipus* tooke for her abience.



As a long time the Out-lawes continued in great penitence for the want of their Captain, much marvelling what should become of him; but at last they were eased of that care, for *Parismus* remembering the benefit he had received by their means, desired *Dionisius* to remit their offences, who willingly granted his request, and therefore *Parismus* sent for them, who having knowledge that he was the man whom they had preserved, willingly came, and at his hands received their pardon, with large and bountifull rewards. The Damsel likewise came amongst them, whom *Parismus* caused to be worthily used, reporting very honourable of her vertues. The Emperours and Kings of Persia and Natolia being present at the coming of these Out-lawes, greatly praised *Parismus* for the honourable care he had of the poor people. Amongst the number of knights there assembled, the father of the Damsel chanced to be present, who very diligently beheld his daughter, but knew her not, for that she was mightily altered: but at last hearing *Dionisius* make recitall of her tragedy, and how that *Osiris* was hurt in her rescue, by circumstance, comparing the time of her departure with the same, knew her to be his owne daughter, and in the presence of them all, with weeping eyes for joy, embraced her, and she with great delight was glad of his presence. *Parismus* ever after used her father most kindly and much esteemed her, for that she had taken great paines to cure his wounds.

During the time of *Parismus* abode in the Countrey of Thessaly (after that the two Emperours of Constantinople and Greece were departed) with the rest of the knights that came to the solemnization of the Wedding, and likewise the King of Persia, and the rest of the famous Potentates on his party, had solemnly taken their leave. (*Pollipus* excepted) the chiefe Governours of the City of Thebes, invited their King and Queen, the King of Bohemia, the two new married Princes



Princes, the Prince of Sparta and the King of Hungaria, and his Queen the Lady Isabella Lord Remus, Pollipus, and many other knights, unto a solemn Feast which they prepared in their great Hall, called the Counsell house: whose gentle courtesie was kindly accepted and at the appointed day they all went thither in great Royaltie, where they were so heartily welcomed, and so honourably entertained by the Citizens as it were a tedious thing to rehearse. Such Pageants such delightfull shewes, such Musick, and such general triumphing and rejoicing, such gifts and commendations, gives to the two young Princes, as the like was never presented to any Prince by his Subjects before in those Regions. Amongst the rest of the Citizens, the father of Violetta (the Damozell whom *Parismus* had kindly received, as before is mentioned) was one of the chiefest that ordered this banquet, with whom likewise was his daughter, whom as soon as *Parismus* espied, a ruddie blush began to over spread his cheeks being touched with the remembrance of the injury he had done her.

The Damozell Violetta, behaved her selfe with such modestie in this Princely Assembly, that she was generally noted, and well liked of all. In somuch, that Laurana having precisely viewed her comeliness, began greatly to commend her unto the Queene her Mother; who espying occasion, called Violetta unto her, demanding of her whose daughter she was, who humbly reverencing her selfe upon her knees, answered, that she was the Daughter of Signior Andrugio, a Citizen.

Whilst she knelt before the Queene, Pollipus took such view of her perfections, that he was insensibly broken with Cupids fiery dart of Love and began vehemently to affect her beaultie and person, that his heart was entangled in the intricate Labyrinth of her perfections, but seeing her depart, he thought therewithall his vitall spirits began to decay, and with a heaving sigh he breathed out his longing desire to be acquainted with her, *Parismus* likewise stood in a stady devil-

King how he might make some amends to Violetta, and therefore seeing her talk with the Queene and Laurana, he came unto them, and asked what Damozell that was that talked with them. By Lord (saith Laurana) it is a sperbants daughter, whose behaviour so well pleaseth me, that I would wish her to spend her time in some honourable place to her preferment. Quoth he if you please, I will speak to her Father, that she might attend your selfe: wherewith he came to Pollipus, who stood like one with a flea in his ear, and desired him to enquire of them which was the Father of that Damozell, and that he would request him to come and speak with him. Pollipus being glad of such an opportunity, came found out Violetta, and greeting her with a kind kiss, told her, that he was sent by the Prince *Parismus*, to intreat her Father to come and speak with him. She told him that her Father was hard by, and that she would presently let him understand his pleasure: who having knowledge thereof immediately went unto the Prince, who used such intreaty, that (although very unwillingly) he yielded to his request, and coming backe, told his Daughter to what effect he was sent for, which she was glad of, though outwardly she made a shew of unwillingness.

Pollipus having understood the cause why *Parismus* sent for her Father, (*Parismus* loving him so dearly that he could not conceal any thing from him, revealed to *Parismus* the love that he bare to Violetta, who promised to further him what he could: By that time the banquet was ended, and the King departed to the Pallace, with great joy, and exceeding triumph they soon took order to have Violetta sent for, but her Father seeing the Messengers come, began to take such sorrow for her departure, that it would have melted a heart of Steele into teares to hear his complaints, that the Messengers pitying the sorowes old Andrugio made, returned without her, which broke Pollipus into such an extasie of desperate love, that he seemed altogether impatient to endure her want, but seeing another furtherance to his love, he often repaired to old Andrugio's

Andrugio's house and manifested his suite unto her, who used him most kindly, but still delayed his suite with such excuses, that he was thereby further intrapped in the snares of Love, and yet nothing the nearer of obtaining his suit.

At last it was concluded betwixt *Parismus* and him, that *Parismus* should accompany him in some disguise, and make himself known to none but *Violetta*, thereby the sooner to procure her good liking to *Pollipus*, which she was the more willing to do, for that he thought upon manifesting himself unto her she would not deny *Pollipus* request; and therefore finding a convenient time, they went to old *Andrugio's* house where they were kindly used of *Andrugio* and his Daughter *Violetta*, who welcomed these more kindly then ever she had done *Pollipus* coming alone, being thereunto drawn by an inward forwardness which she felt contrary to her former disposition where they had not long continued, but *Parismus* found opportunity to greet *Violetta* in this sort: Fair Damsell, quoth he, I am come unto you an humble petitioner in the behalf of my friend *Pollipus*, whose love is such, and so fervent towards your selfe, that unlesse you pittie him, and yeeld some comfort to his care, you wil be the death of the worst Knight living: therefore I desire you that I may be the happy Oracle to declare unto him his happy fortune, pronounced from your sacred lips. *Violetta* all this while stood as one amazed, feeling such an exceeding throbbing at her heart, that she could not well tell what to answer: at last, being touched with rememb'ring of his love that had reapt the fruits of her virginity, she replied in this sort: Gentle Knight, quoth she, I would not willingly be any mans death, if I could otherwise chuse, but to grant to this suit, I cannot, without doing another as great wrong as might be: For so it is, I have already placed my affections, and likewise vowed never to alter them whilst life doth last in me.

Which so daunt and resolute reply of hers, *Parismus* much commended, yet used many perswasions in the behaile of *Pollipus*, and began to demand of her to whom she had vowed her Love,

Love, using many intreaties, that at last she said, it was but a folly to ask the question, for that she was resolutely determined not to tel who it was, said, *Parismus*, what would you say if I name the man (wherewith *Violetta* blushed) and pold out of his bosome the Scarffe, which she had before given him. Quoth he, behold in this Scarffe, your selfe hath set downe a description of your loves first coming unto you, which was the Prince of *Bohemia* himself, unto whom you presented this, who leaping downe the Pallace Wall slew your Fathers Dogs, and what kindnesse he received at your hands, your self knowes best, and since it is impossible to obtain any recompence at his hands, ( being wedded to the Princeesse *Laurana* ) let *Pollipus* who in Chivalry is inferiour to none, be the man that shall possesse the second room in your good liking.

*Violetta* hearing him make so true a rehearsal of her adventure, and so affirme by many reasons, that it was *Parismus* was stricken with such a suddain fear and shame, to see her secrets disclosed, that she was ready to sound with griefs, and kneeling downe with the teares standing in her eyes, began to intreat him not to reveale the same to any, for she was fully resolved not to love any but him although it were *Parismus*; and although it were impossible to attaine any favour or recompence at his hands, I will not ( quoth he, reveal it to any, for none but *Parismus* knoweth thereof, who is here present with thee, wherewith he most lovingly took her in his armes, and kissed her, she yet being in some doubt that it was not he, untill at the last *Parismus* made himself known unto her, and by such private tokens, as she both certainly and assuredly knew that it was he, which so rejoiced her heart that she most humbly upon her knees intreated him to pardon her boldnesse, and vowed never to love any but himself: which protestation so grieved him, that he began to perswade her, not to wrong her self so much, for that he was no way to break his Wedlocke bonds to pleasure her.

My deare Lord (quoth she) if I had a thousand lives, and  
every

every life tenne thousand times dearer then this my life, I would most willingly spend them in meditating on the first fruits of your kindnesse towards me. He seeing her firm resolve, could not tell what other meanes or persuasions to use to alter her steadfast resolution, but passing some time with her in that private talke, till he saw Pollipus expected with heavy sighes his happy or unhappy newes; therefore he departed and came unto him, telling him that there was some hope of obtaining her love, upon which comfortable speech, Pollipus still earnestly prosecuted his suite unto *Violetta*, who hearing that *Parismus* was departing towards his owne Country, determined to venture her life and credit to go with him; and therefore fitted her selfe in Pages apparell, which so well became her, that she seemed to be the most excellent workmanship, that ever Nature had framed, her face being grown fatter, her buskin of the finest Spanish leather, fast ned to her dainty leg, with Christall buttons, her hair wreathed with a carnation Ribband, and all things else so neat and decent upon her delicate body, that she was most comely to view and behold: and so in this changeable sort apparelled, she secretly stole away from her fathers house, and soon got to the Palace, where although there were a general search made by *Andragio's* meanes, (who sought for her, and the report of her loss came to *Parismus* hearing) yet she was not in that habit any way suspected, where she continued many dayes together, in which time she laboured by all meanes to be entertained by *Parismus*.

And on a time ebbing him with *Laurana*, walking privately in the Garden, on a suddain she came towards them, who beholding her comely shape and delicate complexion, they deemed her rather a Divine then a mortall creature, who being come near unto them, *Parismus* demanded whose page she was: who said *Violetta*, as yet I have no Master, but would gladly be entertained in both by them: would you give diligent attendance on the Lady *Laurana* and my selfe if it please her to take our Part (quoth she) in all humble duty ready at your command

Many questions *Laurana* asked the Boy (as she supposed) demanding and enquiring of him both his Name, Country, and Parentage. *Violetta* answered, my Name is *Adonius*, my Country Greece, and my Parents are all dead, and for Fame of the Noblenesse of this Court, made me travel into this Country with the Emperours, with determination to get my selfe some good service, which you have bestowed on me, and herein my duty and endeavours shall be seen, as for that you shall hereafter well like of, which speech *Violetta* uttered with so sweet a grace, that they were not great delight in her behaviour, whom she still call by the name of *Adonius*.

How *Parismus* and *Laurana*, with divers others in their Company, departed from *Thessaly*, and how they were dispersed from the King of *Bohemia*, and set upon by Pyrates whom they vanquished.



At this time *Parismus* and *Laurana* continued in such an happy state of contented Love, still daily increasing in honour and affectionate kindness, as though the one could not live without the others presence, he still growing into greater favour (it greater might be) in the *Thessalians* hearts, that when the day of his departure was come, the Citizens of *Thebes* with mournfull hearts and watry eyes bewailed the same, all being sad and heavy, no instruments of music nor sight of joy, nor sound of rejoicing being heard, as though their departure were a sound of some calamitous event to ensue. *Laurana* with many a salt tear, bade her Countrymen *Adonius*, and *Violetta* saying her fathers hand at the organ as it were consoling for the loss of his daughter, uttering such passionate and heavy lamentations, that it was beyond compare.

How *Parismus* and *Laurana* were set upon by Pyrates whom they vanquished.

The three Princes being comforted by Dionisius and Olivia, the King and Queen of Hungaria, the Prince of Sparta and the Lady Isabella, and most of the Thessalian Peeres, unto the Haven where they should take shipping, their parting being in such heavy sort, and with such abundance of teares, Parismus uttered these speeches: Most Noble Princes, these sad teares which you shed at our departure, sheweth your unwillingness to leave us, whose company you shall not long want; for your Daughter Laurana and my self will very shortly returne againe, that she may be a comfort to your Aged yeares, therefore I humbly beseech you to cease your griefe.

Dionisius said: Most noble young Prince, your griefe must needs be great, to lose the company of such assured friends as your noble Father and your self have shewn your selves to be, therefore for our last farewell, we pray that the Gods would prosper you in this your journey.

Laurana and Parismus having received their blessing, with most heavy hearts, they committed these two Princes to the Seas, who being sent with speed, launched into the maine, where they were soon out of sight, and Dionisius and the Queen sadly returned to Thebes.

The King of Bohemia had not satled above two dayes space in great hope soon to recover the Coast of Bohemia, but the Windes began to blow aloft, and the Seas to rage and swell, and such an exceeding Tempest arose as though the Heavens and Earth had conspired their utter overthrow, so that their ships were dismembered, and their Mariners expected nothing but present death: that Parismus, Laurana, and Pollipus, were dismembered from the rest of the company, and they all in dispaire to see them againe. The cruelty of the tempest continued for the space of three dayes, in such raging and extreame sort, that the Mariners were compelled to cut their shalles, and to heave their spars over board, and by the violence of the wind were driven past their knowledge, but when the Storme ceased, the Mariners espied a farre off an Island, and with such provision as they had sailed thither,

Parismus

Parismus being glad that they had so well escaped the fury of the Seas, with most comfortable speeches, he comforted the full spirit of the Princesse Laurana from her sadnes in this sort: Dear Laurana, since the Destinies have allotted us this mischance, to be thus disastrously severed from her company, and driven into an unknown place, comfort your selfe in these extremities, with hope of better successe; for I do not doubt but we shall well recover the company of my Lord and Father, who by these bitter misfortunes is severed from us, and I trust the Seas will not be so unmercifull, as to drench his aged yeares in these spacious gulphs, but oh, my dear Laurana were you safely on shore, then would my heart be at rest.

Many other speeches he used to comfort her in her sadnes, who was the more comfortable, for that she was in his company: They had not long continued in this good hope of recovering Land, but they espied a ship making towards them with all speed, who being come neer unto him, they knew him to be a Pirate, who presently began to board the ship wherein Parismus was, but the mariners resisted them, wherewith Parismus being underatches, soon armed himself, and made such a slaughter amongst the Pirates, (most of his own men being slain) that he with the help of Pollipus had some destroyed the greatest part of them, and the rest yielded unto their mercy.

Afterwards the boarding the Pirates (who were belonging to Andramart of Tartaria, the Scythian Pirate, that had filled the whole world with the report of his Tyranny) and believing them upon such protestations and oaths as the villains made, they conveyed all such riches, jewels, and provisions as they had aboard the Pirate ship, so that their owne was wholly weather-beaten. And likewise having lifted Laurana, Leda, and Adonius, into the same, with their own, and placed such few Mariners as they had left alive, for governors over the Pirates, they made towards the Island which they saw before them: and soon landed determining there to refresh

refresh themselves, where they found the Country waste and desolate without any Inhabitants, yet well replenished with wild Beasts and Fowls, which they got good store of.

Parismus demanded of the Pyrates if they knew that Island, who told him that they gave it the name of the Desolate Island, because they never saw any living man there: But they told him that there was a beautiful Castle, that stood upon the top of a mighty Rock in the midst of the Island, inhabited as they thought by some Devils, for that many of their fellows had oftentimes gone thither, but none of them never returned, nor they never saw any man in any place of the Island besides: though there were many goodly Towns not inhabited. Which strange news made them wonder: some two dayes they continued upon the Coasts of this desolate Island.

In which time Parismus and Pollipus only attended by Adonius, strayed from their ship to kill Menison, leading Laurana aboard, little mistrusting any treachery, and trusting too much to his own man. But the Pyrates having awaited such convenient time, by policy corrupted most of the Bohemian partners under Hatches, saving some two or three whom they easily overcame, and fast bolted down the same, & before the Knights were returned from killing their Menison, they had hoisted sail and were launched quite out of sight: they under Hatches not yet knowing that they were so betrayed.

## CHAP. XIX.

How Parismus, Pollipus, and Adonius, the Page, going ashore in the Desolate Island were betrayed by the Pyrates, And how Laurana was conveyed to the Castle of Rocks under the body of the Tyrant Andramant.



Not long had Parismus & Pollipus sufficiently refreshed themselves with fresh victuals, but they returned towards the ship which they found launched and gone, where Parismus seeing & missing his beloved Laurana, now totally suspecting the Pyrates,

Pyrates treachery fell into such an extreme rage of sorrow, and veneration against his owne carelesseesse, that hee tore his haire, stamped on the earth, cursed the day and houre of his birth, and was so farre over-mastred with the extremity of veneration, that he fared like a man extremely madde or franticke, oftentimes being in mind to leape into the Sea, and drown himselfe, and oftentimes to destroy himselfe, that all these insupportable passions concurring together, so overcome his senses, that he fell into a dead trance.

Poorer Adonius seeing his Lord in this extreme case, used all the skill there was possible to recover him to his senses, and seeing nothing to aballe, he began to make such wooll lamentation, as would have made the stony Rockes relent at his pittifull exclamation, where Violetta continued rubbing his pale cheeks with her soft hand, a thousand times kissing his cold lips, and washing the same with salt teares, that Pollipus seeing his friend in that sorry raging against Fortune, and hearing the grievous lamentation the poorer Page made, full little suspecting who it was: by viewing their infirmities, most prudently governed himselfe, and did what he could with poor Adonius, to recover him, but their labour was in vaine: then he began to meditate on this affliction: thinking that if he should rage so excessively as Parismus did, he should be no whit the nearer of any hope of recovery, but should thereby give encouragement and example to him to continue in that sorrow, which was beyond the compasse of compare.

But seeing Parismus come to himselfe, looking like one over-mastred with care, and staring upon him like a madde man, fearing that his suddaine griefe had altered his wits, uttered these speeches: Most noble Prince, since it is allotted unto you to be thus crossed in your happinesse, I beseech you beare the same patiently, and remit this extreme care, which so over-mastred your vertues, that their splendor cannot shine in such perfect sort, as wontedly they have done: what can helpelesse griefe aballe you? what can care herein pleasure you? What can this discomposure of sorrow helpe you?



you in the recovery of your lost friend? Then do not shew your selfe so inconsiderate to destroy your senses in this sort, but let us consult which way to recover them, for these sorrows and tenne thousand times as many, cannot any way pleasure you.

It ill becomes your honour in this sort to cast your self down, but rather with quietnesse bear your afflictions, and with wisdom devise how to ease you of this griefe.

Pollipus spake these words with such fervency, that it made *Parismas* somewhat remember himself, that rising from the earth, beholding his poor Page kneeling by him with blubbered cheekes, sorrowing to see his sorrow, he uttered these speeches. How can I contain my self within the compasse of reason, when my losse exceedeth the bounds of reason? How can I with patience bear this affliction, when my losse is such that all the worlds wealth cannot counterbail? How should wisdom bear sway in me, when she was my onely wisdom, and with her precious self, all that was mine is departed from me? Why should I not torment my self, when through my self she is perished? Why should I not rage, sorrow and lament her losse, procured by my negligence? Accursed Traitor that I was, that left my dear *Laurana*, yea the most vertuous Lady living upon the earth, so rightly in the custody of barbarous people. What will she say of me but that I regarded her not? How may she condemn me of humanity that have suffered her thus to be taken from me? Can there be any limits given to this my sorrow? Can I ever recompence this extreame wrong I have done her? Is there any hope that I shall ever see her again? No Pollipus, no. What know I how those Villaines will use her? What can I tell whether they will convey her? Or what know I the griefe she will endure? Thus this torments my heart that I am past all hope ever to see her again. How then can I allwage my griefe, but rather increase the same? What sufficient torment can I inflict upon my conkered carelesse heart, that left her in their custody, and by that meanes have lost the fruition of her divine presence, whereby my life was maintained? No, no, Pollipus

Pollipus my sorrowes are such as can no way be salved, therefore it were but in vain to perswade my self that there is any hope left to redeem this incomparable losse, and lost friend: Here you see we are left in an unfrequented place, incircled round with the Sea, and no means to escape a miserable death by famishment upon this accursed Land, that was ordained to be my Grave: When Pollipus, what counsell have you left to comfort us withall? Or how can you think well of him, by whose means you are brought to this hazard of your life? My Lord, answered Pollipus, let us do the best we can to get out of this solitary place, which once attained, there is no doubt but we might in continuance of travail, meet with some that can give us knowledge of whence those Pirates were, the which (if by happy chance) we can once find out, then shall we soon hear what is become of *Laurana*, in the mean time with patience let us indure the search for her diligently: for I know, that if she be any where to be found, I will never desist travail, untill I can hear some happy tydings of her abode: Which speeches of this worthy Knight, so revived *Parismas*, that he altogether abandoned that effeminate kind of grief and lamentation, but with a mind past full of inward sorrows, he kindly thanked Pollipus, and with this resolute determination these two worthy Knights armed (save only their Swords) having no company but their Page, began to travell along the Coast side, to see if happily they could find out any shipping, that might lye upon those Coasts.

In which travail we will leave them for a space, to speak of the King of *Bohemia*.

As soon as the storm was ended, the King of *Bohemia* missing the Ship wherewith *Parismas* was, began to take the same most grievously, fully assuring him that they were perished, but he himself was driven into the Confinnes of *Phrygia*, whereas he peaceably sojourned, untill he had freighted his Ships with all things needfull, and within short space landed in *Bohemia*, where he gave himself to a solitary and austere life, and such sorrow and lamentation was generally made for the

the losse of their Prince, as is not to be described. Likewise, the newes thereof was soon conveyed to Dionisius Court, where the sorrow they made was such, as the like was never heard of in any age.

The Tartarians very joyfull of the Wolfe made all the hast they could home towards their own Countrey, not any under hatches for a good space misdoubting their captivity, the Prince her self being fallen into a sweet and silent slepe. Leda being with her, marvelled why Parismus staid so long, and seeing her Mistress fast asleep, stole out of the Cabin, and found the Mariners all carelessly quaffing, and leaving them. She would have gone up above hatches, for that her heart could not be at quiet; but finding them fast shut. She called aloud to the Mariners, to come and open the same; but they likewise finding the same fast bolted, presently perceived the ship was under sayl and they all betrayed, and being desperate, what with shame and griefe there began a very great Mutinie amongst them, that most of them were slain in this rage, not knowing almost what they did, and the rest that survived, desperately murdered themselves: which Leda beholding, assuredly perswaded her self they were betrayed, and with abundance of tears went to her Mistress again, who still was fast asleep, but at last she awaked, and seeing Leda weeping, her heart began to faile her, and demanding the cause of Leda, she could not answer a word, wherewith Laurana was driven into such an extreme passion of feare, that all her joynts began to tremble and shake, her colour went and came: but at the last, what with intreaties and threatnings, she caused Leda to declare the circumstance of their woe. Laurana no sooner heard Leda say they were betrayed to the Tartarians, and that her Mariners had in a mutiny slaine, one another, but there she fell downe dead, that doe what Leda could, she was not able to recover her to her senses in a good space: but at last her breath began to make passage thorow the sweet conduit of her throat, and she lifted up her eyes, looking with such a ghastly & pitifull countenance upon Leda, that

that she was almost afraid to behold her. When Laurana began to taire and despoile her golden tresses, and dishevelled her fast and precious hair, and rent her costly Garments from her comely and delicate body, wringing her hands, beating her breasts, and knocking her precious head against the boorde, that had not Leda with all her might hindered her, she had there destroyed her self.

In this sorrowfull sort, she on the one side continued her lamentations, and Leda on the other side wept her fill, that the conduits of their eyes were dried up, and not able to shed another tear, and her heart was sore with throbbing, and she desperately and with a constant resolution, attended the coming of those villains that had betrayed her, who knowing themselves to be past the reach of the two Knights, began to lift up the hatches, and called to those that were below, but none made answer, which caused one of them to go downe, and found all the Bohemians hee murdered, and with that joyfull tidings came up to his fellows.

One that was the chief Captain over the rest, alottning every one his severall Office, went down where Laurana was, whom he found (as is said) making such moane, that himselfe (notwithstanding his barbarous disposition) could not refrain from pitying her griefe: and in that estate, without speaking a word, he left her, and returned againe within two houres, thinking by that time she would have ceased her complaints: but she not giving her thoughts any respite of consideration, but only to think of Parismus, still continued in her sorrowes, altogether refusing to be comforted by any perswasions, and for two dayes space, utterly abstained from all kind of sustenance, by meanes whereof, she was brought to extreme hazard and perill of her life, which caused Leda to utter these perswasions.

Deare Mistress, quoth she, if you would vouchsafe to heare me speake, then I would not doubt but to ease your heart of some of the care you so impatiently endure. You know that my Lord Parismus, Pollipus, and Adonius, are yet living.

living, and no doubt in good estate, but onely for the losse of you, for whose sake, my Lord *Parismus* will preserve his life: *Why* should you then destroy your self, that he so much tendereth? And not rather use all possible means to preserve your self, untill you can by some means hear of him: for there is no doubt, but that he will search most part of the World, but he will find you, and by his Valour make the place where he cometh speak of his worthinesse, so that I do not doubt, but it will by some accident or other come to his hearing: then were it in vain for you by destroying your self, to destroy him likewise, whereas otherwise you may happily meet, to both your exceeding comforts: your vertues have the power to rule strangers affections, let them then restrain you from doing your selfe harme. *What* will *Parismus* thinke? And what think you will be his griefe, when he hath travailed many strange Countreies, and endured many thousand perils in search of you, and in the end findeth that you have soulely made away your selfe, and were the onely cause of his sorrow? I beseech you dear *Spirts* consider of these things aright and weigh the estate that we are in, and then I do not doubt, but your wisdom will consider, that it is better for you to preserve your selfe for his sake, then by destroying your selfe, to be guilty both of your own death and his too.

With these forcible perswasions, *Laurana* began somewhat to pacifie her selfe, and with a settled resolution, determined to endure what misery soever would light upon her: and therefore began to confer with *Leda* about their hard hap, and miserable estate, which drove her to her very wits end to think of. But in the midst of their thoughts came the Captain, who beholding *Lauranaes* Majestick countenance, and exceeding beauty, was so amazed therewith, as he condemned himself of villany, to have procured so divine a creatures discontent, *Laurana* seeing him stand gazing upon her, began boldly to demand of him, what he would have he humbly kneeling, told her that he had provided her Dinner if she pleased to eat thereof, which

which she willingly consented unto, and began considerately to recall her former senses, but yet so inwardly sorrowfull, as it was a rare vertue in her, so suddenly to overcome her intemperate grief, and yet remain so full of grief, that the very substance of her senses was perfect sorrow.

By this time the Pyrats had safely landed their Ships in the Island, where their master *Andramart* was, which was incompassed with such mighty Rocks of Stone, that it was impossible, but only one way in which way, a few were of power sufficient to keep out a whole Army of men, and soon they conveyed *Laurana* and *Leda* to the Castle, where they presented her (with such Jewells as they had with her) to *Andramart*, who being a man of a most proud and haughty disposition, and Majestically seated in an Imperiall seate, was so ravished at the first view of *Lauranaes* beauty, that he stood advisedly beholding her: at last he came to her, to have embraced her tender body, in his rough armes, but she abhorring him thrust him from her, with a disdainfull scorn, wherewith he began to fawn upon her, as a dog will do on his master, when he hath been newly beaten, and began to make shew to them of great welcome, and kindly brought them to stately and gorgeous Chambers most richly furnished, and soon all things needfull were there presented unto her by such women as were in the Castle.

*Laurana* seeing her self thus kindly used, and not still ill-treated was therewith some what comforted, and used her self according to the condition of the time and place and kindly accepted all their courtesies, but the love which *Andramart* made unto her, seemed so hateful in her eyes that it was worse unto her then ten thousand deaths, to endure his sight, The night being come and after they had supped, (being served in most stately manner, and with most costly and delicate dishes) she with *Leda* her Maid (who lodged with her) betook themselves to their rest, where she could by no means give one minutes respite to her sorrows by sleepe, but uttered most heavy plaints and lamentations bewailing the losse of her dear Lord, that the very walls seemed to groan for the

Erchoes

Echoes of her complaints, in which sort she continued most part of the night.

Early the next morning she was saluted by Andramart, who would give his mind no rest nor quiet, but in her company, and his love was so exceeding towards her, that he could not do any thing that was offensive to her. In this miserable kind of happy estate Laurana continued by the space of a month in which time she had knowledge of a number of Prisoners that this Tyrant kept within the Castle, by the grievous cries they made, some for want of food, some with pains of Tortures that he inflicted upon them, being himself hated of all men, and therefore he hated all Mankind, but such whose minds accorded to his wickedness.

Laurana in this time used her self so, that she still deferred his importunate love, and had him so tied in the snares of Love, that what she commanded he would presently execute; but so obdurate was his love unto her heavy heart, that she was oftentimes ready to sound with the remembrance thereof, but still by the counsell of Leda, she held it the best course to keep themselves in his favour, untill they could by some means escape out of their cruel hands, where we will leave poor Laurana in this comfortless place, amongst rude and uncivil people by night and by day, her Musick being the dismal noise of piteous cries of poor Prisoners, and clog'd with the loathsome love of Andramart, without hope how to escape from that miserable place of bondage, where you may judge the sorrows she endured, was such, as no tongue is able to expresse.

## CHAP. XX.

The miserable travail *Parismus* endured in the desolate Island, and how he was succoured by *Antiochus*; and afterwards how they were imprisoned in the Inchaned Castle, by the Inchantresse *Bellona*.



**D**Arismus travailling many dayes along the Coasts of that desolate Island, their food, being wild fruit that grew upon trees, and their drink the clear Fountain Water, their lodging the hard and cold earth: in which travail they beheld many goodly ancient Townes, but altogether unpeopled, the houses being for the most part decayed with many rich and costly Ornaments, which caused these two Knights greatly to marvelle, and desirous to know the cause thereof, and remembering what the Pyrates had told them, that in a walled Castle, situate in the midst of the Country, it was likely there were some that inhabited, they determined next to travaill thither: for they saw no hope how to get from that Island, being grown very weak, by reason of their faint food, and hard lodging: which travail, poor Adonius willingly endured, thinking all pain a pleasure in his Masters company, unto whom he behaved himself with such tender care, that Parismus would oftentimes extoll and commend him to Pollipus. For when Parismus at any time slept, he would cover his face with his thinnest garment and make a pillow of the rest for his head, and oftentimes drive from his mind many heavy thoughts by his sweet songs, that Parismus thought he could never have endured that tedious journey with patience, if Adonius had been absent.

These worthy Knights having continued a long time in this their solitary walk, took their journey by gulle in the midst of a Country, in which travail they continued some 3 weeks, in which time they were often in danger of drowning by reason

son of many deceitfull quick-sands, and often like to be famisht for want of sustenance, and often in danger to be devoured with wild beasts, that were abundantly in that Country, and yet notwithstanding they were nothing nearer their wished expectation. At last *Parisimus* and *Pollipus*, began utterly to despair of ever accomplishing the meanes of getting from that unfrequented place, and they travailed all a day and a night, over a mighty Plain, where there was neither water to quench their thirst, nor fruit to assuage their hunger.

Early in the morning they espied a mighty Wood, where they thought (although there were no other comfort) yet there they should find fruit: but being come thither, their expectation was frustrated for there was nothing but thorns and briers: and so thick that they could by no meanes enter the same, that there they surely expected nothing but sustenance. And *Parisimus* what with extremity of hunger, and grief for the losse of *Laurana*, and lastly, for *Pollipus* and *Adonius* sake, sat him down under a mighty Oak, and with a heavy heart uttered these plaints.

How unfortunate am I above all men to be driven to this exigent of miserable calamity, that by my ill fortune have betrayed the most Chast, Vertuous, and beautifull Lady living, into the hands of Tyrants, to her endless griefe, and by my meanes have brought these my friends into danger of a lamentable death by famishment. Had all these bene proper to my selfe, then would I in despite of my crooked Destinies have endured them, then should not they complain, then should my vertuous *Laurana* have been in the pleasant Court of *Dionisius*, whose teares at my departure did prognosticate my unlucky successe: in this extremity, what hope is left for my comfort? How may *Laurana* curse my unfortunate Destinies? How may *Dionisius* accuse me of dishonour for losing his Daughter? How may the *Phrygians* condemn me for the losse of the worthy *Pollipus*? And how may I sufficiently recompence all the wrongs? Despair shall attend my Steps, and sorrow shall be my food, affliction shall be my companion, and,

and ease my rest, the day will I spend in teares, and the night in groanes: Let the Heavens pour down their vengeance on my head, and the Earth worke my sorrow: For I the most unfortunate of all men, have deserved the greatest punishment that ever was inflicted upon man. In that vocation of mine continued *Parisimus*, and poor *Adonius* lay weeping at his feet, almost dead for want of food, *Pollipus* he went up and down raging inwardly in his mind, his heart being so full fraught with grief, that his eyes were swollen with extreme vocation.

All the while that these worthy Knights had continued in this sympathy of sorrow, there was an aged Hermit had beheld their complaints, and understanding by their behaviour, that they were some distressed Strangers, pittied their passions, and came towards them, being all three layd under the Oak together lamenting, & saluted them with these kind speeches, worthy Knights (said the Hermit) for that I see you are strangers and distressed, if my poor Cell may any way ease you, and such simple victuals, as the same yields, refresh you; or my self, or counsell may any way pleasure you, I desire you to go with me thither, and you shall be welcome.

*Parisimus* beholding this aged man utter such kind speeches, as one ravished with joy, rose from the ground, and kindly with thanks told him, that he willingly accepted his proffered curtesie, for courteous old man (quoth he) you could never have come in a time of more need, for we are now given over to despair, therefore we may say, happy old man, you shall do us a friendly deed, which we will thankfully accept, and willingly requite if it lyeth in our power: then I pray you (quoth he) go with me, for I perceibe your bodies are wearied with travail, and your hearts tyed with grief: so they joyfully went to his Cell, being glad of this comfort, and in little space attained thither, which was in a large Cave under the earth, most secretly contrived: where they were soon well refreshed with wine and venison, which this old man had alwayes ready.

After



After that they had well satisfied their hunger with this good cheer, the old man requested to know of whence they were, and by what distressed mischance they were arrived on that unhappy Island. Parisinus told him how he was Son to the King of Bohemia, and that his Champion was a Knight of Phrygia, rehearsing unto him all their whole misadventure, and the losse of Laurana, uttering the same in such dolefull wise, that the old Hermit could not refrain from griefe. By that time Parisinus had ended this Tragical discourse, it was ed dark, and therefore the old Hermit had brought them to their Lodging, which was the same Bed whereon he layd himself (there being no other) on which Parisinus was very unwilling to lye, thereby to displace this good old man: but by the manifold intreaties of the Hermit, he yielded, and soon addrest himself thereunto, desiring Pollipus to be his bed-fellow, and because Adonius was somewhat sickly, they layd him in the midst betwixt them, for that he had done them many pleasures in their travaile, Parisinus being so far in love with him, as he would have ventured his own life to do him good.

Now Adonius with blushing cheeks, put off of his apparell and seemed to be ashamed when he was in his shirt, and ten-derly leapt into the bed betwixt these two worthy Knights, who little suspected that it was Violetta, where the poor soul lay clost at Parisinus backe, the very sweet touch of whose body seemed to ravish her with joy: and on the other side not acquainted with such Bed-fellows, she seemed as it were melancholly with a kind of delightfull feare: but had Pollipus knowne it had been his dear Violetta, he would have more kindly regarded his Bed-fellow, who seemed to start if Pollipus did but stirre.

Thus they all took their rest that Night, the two Knights onely being glad of this quiet repose after their long travaile: and Adonius, having in his heart a thousand delights of joy, by touching Parisinus sweet body, early in the morning, and Adonius was up, being afraid to uncover her delicate body, but

with speed soon arrayed himself, and had so neatly provided all things against these two Knights should rise that both of them admired his behaviour, having provided most wholesome Bathes for their feet, which did them much ease, being they were soze bruised with travaile.

The good old Hermit, seeing these worthy Knights ready to take their leave (for that they were unwilling to stay to trouble him) requested them that they would stay with him, some dayes to refresh themselves. Good Father (said Parisinus) if we be not troublesome unto you then will we stay, and bring your selves farther into your debt. But so, worthy Knights (quoth he) for I know you will not go from out of this Country, unless you will stay some time with me, for I assure you there is no meanes but one which must be achieved with much hazard of your lives, which many have attempted, but never could effect. I pray you good Father, said he, let us be so much beholding, to you as to know the meanes. for were it never so dangerous most willingly I shall undertake the same, seeing there is no meanes to escape, for I greatly desire to know what is become of the vertuous Lady Laurana: where- with the Hermit began in this manner. Most worthy Prince (quoth he) I now begin to rehearse a history, of the most vildest Traitor living on the earth, whose name is Druball, sometime a subject of mine, but now my superiour, for knowe worthy Knights, my name is Antiochus, sometime the unhappy ruler of this Island. This Druball sometime served me, unto whom I committed my secrets, as the man I most trusted, who in time grew so proud, that under colour of my favour, he could commit many bad actions, whereby he was much hated amongst my Noblemen, and my subjects began to accuse me as accessory to his evill facts, and for that I was so blinded with his flatteries, they began early to rebell, and being reproved for his misdeemeanour by my eldest sonne, he offered in my presence to have slain him, which made him so odious, that by the importunity of my nobles I banisht him my Court, and Country, which he took in such disdainfull sort, that ever after

he devised to do no mischief, and joynd himself to Bellona, my greatest enemy, which dwelt in a Neighbouring Island, the most wickedest Hagge, living upon the face of the whole earth, using Witch-crafts, Sorceries, and Inchantments, to further their purpose against me: and came unto this my Country having many friends; first won many of my Subjects hearts, and afterwards made open wars against me, and by their strength put me to flight.

Who having gotten my Crown, they imprisoned my Queen, and two Sonnes, and a Daughter, which I had living, but notwithstanding they could never quietly enjoy the Government, but were oftentimes disturbed by my Subjects, who utterly refused to live under his Tyranny, for that he dayly grew more odious amongst them, that by continuall War his Country was almost wasted, and by the counsell of that wicked Hagge Bellona, he with his confederates betook themselves to a Mountain here hard by, and there fortified themselves, and by Witch-craft framed and invincible Castles, from whence they continually issued forth, and vanquished and slew most of my Noblemen, the rest remaining now in their custody, in most miserable servitude.

But not contented with this servitude, they were so much given to Devilish fury, that they destroyed all this whole Country, not suffering Man, Woman, nor Child, to live, neither can any creature Land here, but by their Sorceries, they will destroy them. In which kind of cruelty they have continued many yeares, my self have been secretly hidden in this place from whose hands I have been preserved all this time by divine operations, and by the vertue of a Jewell that was given me by an old Artf-man of Tartaria.

The Castle wherein they remain, is distant from hence three miles, being the gaddest thing to the outward view, that ever eye beheld, where Druball and Bellona without dread live in great mirth, continually tormenting my Queen and poor Children with continuall torments.

Now

Now most worthy Knights (quoth he) unless you can by some meanes overcome their Furies, there is no other hope to escape from hence, for long you cannot remain, but they will know of your being here, for all Passengers do utterly shun this place, as a hateful and ominous Coast: They having heard this Hermites strange discourse wondered at the cruelty of Bellona, and were confounded in their thoughts with the danger they should endure to conquer their Inchantments, that suddenly they could not tell what to determine off: but craving pardon of Antiochus for their rude behaviour towards him, whom before they knew not, most lovingly saluted him, Parismus said that he would the next morning without delay travail thitherwards. My Lord (quoth Pallipus) were I sure to abide a thousand deaths, I would bear you company, for I would not lose your sight, nor abstain any hazard for your sake.

The next morning they were early up, determining to leave Adonins with Antiochus in his Cave, but notwithstanding all his persuasions, he would not stay, but with teares and humble intreaties, he obtained Parismus consent: who was unwilling to have him go, lest he might be hurt in this attempt, Antiochus conducted them untill they were within the sight of the Castle, but then left them returning to his Cell, Invocating and praying after his manner, for their good successe.

When they had well viewed the Castle, which was beautifully seated upon a strong Rock, encompassed with a mighty huge deep Lake, they sought round about the same, but could find no passage thereto: having neither bridge nor other way to go on foot. At last they heard a little Bell ring within the Castle, which was by the Watch, by the sound thereof giving warning to those that were appointed to keep the same: upon which noise they saw a boat with fire armed Knights in it comming towards them: as soon as they were landed, Parismus demanded of them, who was Lord of the Castle the knights answered, come with us (quoth he) and you shall

See, where with they began to lay hold on him. Stay said Parismus, let me ask you one question: say on, said one of them. Is the Lord of this Castle among you, quoth he? No said the other, I would be were (said Parismus) for I now, were he here, I would have his Traitors head, before he returned: where with he and Pollipus drew their swords, (being otherwise unarmed) and so valiantly assailed these five Knights, that they were all slain within a short space, they themselves, having very little damage or hurt.

The Ferry-men seeing their five Champions lie weltering in their purple gore, ranne towards their Boat, but Adonius seeing his Master and Pollipus had slaine their Enemies, was before gotten down into the same, and seeing the Rowers comming towards him and Parismus and Pollipus pursuing them, thrust the same past their reach, by which meanes they had soon taken these Slaves, and put them to death, who by no meanes would manifest any thing of the secrets of the Castle.

And Parismus comming to Adonius most kindly embraced him, and with exteending praises, extolled his Wisdome to performing this exploit as Pollipus; who admired to see so great wisdom in so young yeares, but his Wit and Wisdom was such, that had they known the party, they would have more admired his vertue.

By meanes of this Boat, they had passage unto the other side of the River, where they were no sooner landed, but they heard such a hideous noise within the Castle, such Thundring and rattling in the Skies, that it would have amazed the stoutest Champion in the World: but they were nothing abashed thereat, saving Adonius stood quaking and shaking with extream fear. When issued out of the Castle, two mighty huge proportioned Monsters, seeming rather to be Devils than natural men, who assailed these two worthy Knights with such fury, that had they not nimbly avoided their blowes, they had at that very instant perished: who persecuted their blowes with such fiercenesse, that the very earth seemed

to shake therewith, and what with labour and rage, they could not offend those Knights, they were so hot the Sunne being then at the highest) that their eyes were dazzled with the sweat that fell from their browes, which advantage these Champions soon espied, and with their swords, (having gotten within compasse of their mighty Spaces, soon ended their wretched livers, who gave such groanes that all the Castle rung with the noise thereof: which cry, so amazed Draball and Bellona (being then at their pleasure) that they came hastily running to behold these two worthy Knights, who were then entering the Castle, and no sooner came into the inner Court, but they beheld the most excellent beauty of the Castle, being the most gorgeous and stately buildings that ever they had seen: where they had not long stayed, but they beheld Bellona comming towards them, whom they thought to have been some Queen inclosed in that Castle, for that she was crowned with an Imperiall Diadem: who with her sorceries so bewitched their senses, that immediately they fell into a dead and sound sleep; presently she commanded them to be conveyed into a strong Prison, and there fettered them with Irons.

At such time as they awaked, they were exceedingly amazed to see themselves in that manner imprisoned: and Parismus, was so enraged with extream sorrow, that he tare his hair, and rent his garments, rayled on his misfortune, cursed his Destinies, and berced his own heart with extream passions of sorrow, that his speeches was turned into bitter sighes, and his senses forgot their former vertue, and he was so desperately sad, that no grief might be compared to that he endured.

Pollipus on the other side continued his wonted manner of enduring affliction, which was presently to study how to rid himself and his friend from the same, which might be accounted the rarest vertue that ever was in a Knight, he only studied for his release, and never raged nor railed against himselfe, nor otherwayes disemper his senses, but overcame his inward

sorowes (which were exceeding) with such patience, that *Parisimus* would highly extoll him for the same; and *po2* *Violetta* wondered at his government, as a most rare vertue which she never beheld in any but himself: which made her oftentimes accuse her self of unkindnesse: that she had so urgently refused so courteous a Knights love; which very thoughts touched her so near the quick, that she was oftentimes in minde to yeld to love him, and began afterwards to affect his vertuous qualities exceedingly.

They continued in that dark Dungeon all that night, so laden with chains and irons, that they could not one help the other, without sustenance; not able to take any rest, with the care they endured, at the pittifull groans and cries of a number of *po2* distressed people, which were imprisoned hard by them, that it seemed more terrible to *Violetta* then death it self. But they were still comforted by *Po'lipus*, who hearing the sorow *po2* *Adonius* made, and seeing the heavinesse of *Parisimus*, uttered these comfortable speeches.

*My Lord*, do not discomfort your self, neither be discouraged, or so much as disquieted with these crosses, for I do not doubt but in short space we shall free our selves from these bands, and therefore bear the losse of *Laurana* with more patience then you have done, that though she be in the hands of *Pyrates* and *Millains*: Assure your self that there is none so barbarous or inhumane, as will once offer to injury her. And were it not for the care she hath taken for your absce, I durst assure my self she is in good health: and for your own safety or ours, you need not grieve so extreamly, as it seemeth to me you do: for that is not greatly to be feared, as wee need any way to despair: for do but follow my counsell in this, to contemne these petty miseries for a while, and regard them as they were not, and you shall soon see by that meanes, we shall come by our freedom, much rather then by our effeminate lamentation, which will make her enemies joyce at our affliction and not pittie us.

Dear friend (quoth *Parisimus*) your comfortable speeches were

were of force to revive a dying heart, but so great grief attainteth my mind for the losse of the fair Lady *Laurana*, that felt you but the inward grief of such a sweet friends absence, and fear never to see her again, you would, say that I did not grieve sufficiently. *My Lord* (replied *Po'lipus*) I have often made tryall of your vertues, which maketh me the bold-er to try your patience: I confesse that the losse of such a friend as *Laurana* is, cannot be sufficiently lamented, for my self doth feele such sorow for the losse of my dear *Violetta*, that my heart endureth that torment my tongue is not able to expresse, which maketh me silent in my griefes, for that I would not put you in remembrance of yours by mine: for my *Violetta* is as dear to me as tenne thousand lives, if I had them, and I do not doubt, but one day I shall see her vertuous beauty, for whose sake my heart will never be at rest: the remembrance whereof, restraineth me from many desperate attempts, that otherwise I would inflict upon my selfe that have not deserved the love of so vertuous a *Damozell*.

But why do I utter these speeches, when she is not by to hear them, and little regardeth the torments I endure by her unkindnesse: but I beseech you comfort your self in these afflictions: for a comfortable heart is now necessary: wherewith the water appeared in his eyes, and *po2* *Violetta* hearing his speeches, so much pittied his sighes and sadnesse, that for very kindnesse, she wept for company, and resolved to grant his sute, which had well deserved to be beloved: but the love she bare to *Parisimus*, so altered and changed her thoughts that she could not determine what to do: at last she began to consider, that in loving *Parisimus* she did wrong to *Laurana* in some degree, & that she might no whit alter her true friendship to him, being only vertuous, and yet accept of *Po'lipus* offer, and yeld him love for good will. In these and a thousand such like thoughts, she spent the night, and the knights continued busie, bechinking themselves how to work their deliver-

Early the next morning (fast bound in Irons) they were brought by a company of ragged hunger-starved fellows, into a goodly Hall, most richly furnished with stately hangings, at the upper end whereof, sate Druball and Bellona, before whom they were no sooner come, but Druball with a tyrannous look demanded of whence they were, and what was the cause they had so evil intreated and slain his Servants.

*Parismus* so much disdain'd to be examined by so base a Villain, that he could not for extrem anguish of mind speak: nor could he (would he) have answered him: but *Pollipus* stepping forwards answered, we are Strangers that have suffered Shipwreck, and were unluckily cast upon this hateful Island, made so by thy treacheries, where we have been often in danger of Starvation, and coming to this Castle, thy Servants offered us violence, and we have rewarded them, and thou like a Tyrant unjustly imprisoned us, not using us as all Knights should be used, and not by valour but by Sorceries, hast brought us into thy Subjection, which if not our selves, the Heavens will revenge.

Which words he uttered with such a disdainful countenance, that the Tyrant was amazed at his resolution, and told him, that he would soon abate his haughty mind, commanding them to Prison again.

How *Bellona* the Inchantresse fell in love with *Pollipus*, by which meanes he released himselfe and *Parismus* out of prison, and finished the Inchantment. And how afterward *Antiochus* was restored to his Kingdome. And how *Adonius* the Page fell sick, and was restored by *Pollipus*.



Now *Bellona* all this while took such view of their personages, that she thought them the goodliest men that ever she beheld, & at that instant bowed either to obtain their loves by fair means, or inflict such torments upon them, that they should

yield by force to her lust: wherefore she secretly commanded her Servants to load them with more Irons, which they performed, where these two worthy Knights lay for the space of a week in the most cruellest torment that might be: their food being bread and water, their bed the hard and cold earth, in a most loathsome stinking Prison. Which pain they patiently endured, but were both so grieved for poor *Adonius*, that their hearts were almost ready to burst with griefe, who continually (notwithstanding his weaknesse) seemed to be, of great comfort.

But being all his life time tenderly brought up he began to wax very sick with ill labour, and hard fare, in this loathsome Prison, that there was little hopes of life in him: but *Pollipus* what with devices and force, wrung himself from the place where he was fastened, and made such means (notwithstanding his heavy Irons) that he came to poor *Adonius* and unlocked many of his bolts and Irons from his weak body, and continually made him sit on his lay, (being all the meanes he had to comfort him withall) that the poor soul being almost dead with lying on the cold ground, felt great comfort by *Pollipus* warm body, which kindnesse poor *Violetta* so kindly accepted that she began to love him most intirely, and remembering an impossibility of enjoying *Parismus*, settled her affections on the worthy *Pollipus*, thinking, he that was so kind to her being taken as a Page, he would be much more kind to her if he knew her to be *Violetta*. Every day they were served by a rude and uncivil slave, in such sort that it would have made dainty fair loathsome to be so handled, which *Bellona* did upon pretence: first to use them hardly, and then by better usage to draw them to a good opinion of her gentlenesse: for on a time she came to visite these prisoners, being no way drawn thereto by a virtuous inclination, but of a most unchast and beast-like disposition, and colourably seemed to reprove the Taylor, that he had used them so hardly commanding him to remove them into a more delightfull place, where they had very soft bedding, good air and far better diet, which kindnesse of hers, they both commended.



In which place they remained many dayes: during which time, Pollipus and Adonius were Bed-fellowes; he tall little knowing who it was he so tenderly regarded, for by reason that he was sickly, (Pollipus being drawn thereto by a vertuous inclination proceeding from mild pitty) would often fold him in his armes, and so kindly cherish him, that by his meanes poor Violetta had recovered her former health: which embracements of Pollipus, at the first seemed strange to her, but in continuance, she took such vertuous delight in his sweet company, that his presence was her whole delight, and these kindneses did so much rejoyce her heart (by the knowledge of her own estate, and remembrance that she was unknown) that she was a thousand times in mind to reveale her selfe to him, when she lay folded in his armes: (he having not the least thought that she was a woman) and a thousand times that determination was crossed by contrary thoughts, that her joy seemed without compare, had it not been for remembrance of the estate they remained in, but her heart was so cheered with those delights, that by her pleasant devices, she would drive many sad thoughts from the uncheerfull hearts of these imprisoned Champions, which so greatly admired their Pages vertues, that they were both drawn into an exceeding love of his qualities.

Bellona had all this while (by remembering the comely proportions of her two new come prisoners, kindled such sparkes of immodest love within her loathsome breast) that the burthen thereof was intollerable to her to endure, and therefore arming her selfe with an unshamefast countenance, she resolved either speedily to work her own content, by enjoying one, or both of their persons, to satisfie her appetite, or to work their endless torment, and her own death, which direfully resolution took such deep root in her impure heart, that she presently came unto the place where these two Knights were, and with a saluting countenance saluted them: being attired as she thought most gorgeously to delight their eyes, but so unseemly she became those rich attires, that it would have

have altered a deep grounded affection to extreame disdain, to behold rich attyre on so unseemly a carcase.

Parismus nothing regarded her: but Pollipus advisedly observed her behaviour, and his fancy jumpt rightly on her disease, that at the very first, he rightly conceited this her amorous passion. As soon as she was entred and had saluted them, she began to enquire of Pollipus (for that he seemed to be the chearfullest) of what Country they were, and how they arrived in that Coast: Pollipus told her, that they were Knights of Phrygia that travailed towards Tartaria, but by a mighty tempest they were driven upon that Island, where their ship and men were all cast away, but themselves and their little Page, being thereby driven to travell by land; by chance lighted on this Castle, intending to try if we could get passage into Tartaria, for that the country is no where else inhabited, and since our arrivall (worthy Lady) your self knowes what misery we have endured, being inflicted upon us for no offence that we have given to the Lord of this Castle; therefore fair Lady, if there be any vertuous pitty in you, grant our releasement from his bondage, which can no way benefit you: we are such as never intended you harm any way: but by necessity were compelled to this place, which hath proved so miserable.

Bellona being tickled with this flattering speech of Pollipus, (which seemed to agree with her disposition) made him this answer. *Worthy Knight* (saith she) if it lye in my power to release you, I will most willingly do it, for such good will I bear you, and such pitty I take for your hard usage, that I have caused you to be removed from the miserable Prison wherein you were before, and have both bettered your lodging and your diet, and will do all that you wish, or venture my life in pursuit thereof, if you will condescend to stay with me in this Country: for worthy Knight, though it ill becomes my sex to begin the motions of love, and shew their beloved the depth of their affection, yet (for that peradventure your inclination is not so bent) I here but offer you freedom, and what else you will require, so that you will yeeld to love me.

For

For at the first view of your person, my heart so forsaken with delight of beholding your perfection, that ever since I have enjoyed no quiet, but onely the hope to enjoy my desired wish: therefore gentle knight, resolve me of my doubt, and grant this my sute, and thereby ease your self of further pain, and set these your friends at liberty.

Pollipus hearing her speeches thought it his best course to close with her, and therefore answered: Most worthy Lady, this request of yours is dangerous for me to perform, for if the Lord of this Castle should any way hear thereof, then would he inflict a miserable death upon me, (as he might well do) and also my heart is oppressed with a heavy passion of feare, least these your kind speeches should proceed of no good will, but only to try me withall, and thereby bring me in danger being already surprized with love of your vertues, which are such as might content a farre better man then my self.

Bellona hearing his kind speeches, and having possibly received a sweet kisse of him, neither *Parismus* nor *Adonius* seeing the same, was now indeed fettered in the snares of love, whereas before she intended nothing but lust, and therefore resolved to obtain his love, and to work the downfall of *Druball*, thereby to possess the same without any let or impediment, and therefore with oaths, protestations, teares, and unfained bowes, she gave him assurance of her love, which was so kindled in her adulterous breast, that she would have hazarded a thousand lives to possess the same, and taking her leave of Pollipus, she went out of the Prison by a private key, which she had alwayes about her, promising him to return thither about midnight, when he should have full assurance of her love.

*Parismus* marvailling what communication had passed between Bellona and Pollipus, but seeing him unwilling to unfold the same, would demand no further of him. *Vioenia* likewise wondered why he would not reveale the same, that her heart was oppressed with such a sudden doubt, that she could not refrain from teares, and getting into a corner secretly

by her selfe, began to study what might be the cause of her long talke, fearing least Pollipus heart might be drawn by her Inchantment, to some inconvenience, or altered by some diabolish device which she might use: likewise she began to call his loyalty in question, which she thought was the truth indeed, because he would not reveale it, for that she thought some amorous conference had passed between them, which thought could by no meanes passe from her mind, but continued still in her carefull breast, wherewith she was much grieved, and so continued all that night, but when she saw that Bellona came about the appointed time to Pollipus, the poore soul lay in her unquiet bed, tormented with infinite cares and griefes, that she all bewet the place where she lay with salt teares.

Bellona and Pollipus departed together out of the room, for she had made *Druball* sleep with a somniferous spell she had infused upon his body, that a mighty volley of cannon shot could not have awaked him, and she being greedy of the sweet delights of venery, hasted to the Longing where Pollipus was, who expected her coming, and took him by the hand fast locked the doore, and conducted him with amorous speeches into a most comely garden, where *Flora* in her summer weeds was comely deckt, and from thence unto a gallant summer house so richly adorned with precious ornaments, that it made Pollipus admire, and had his Paramour so well liked him as that delightful Arbour, he would have wisht no other felicity; where they were no sooner come, but kindly (though farre from any good intent) he embraced Bellona in his armes, who was therewith so greatly pleased, that she used many thousand protestations of the love she bare him, and that it was such, as she had never yet professed to any, bowing that in requittall of his kindnesse, she would do any thing, yea though it were to destroy *Druball* and the Castle, which consisted in her power.

Which words of hers well pleased Pollipus, who hearing her say the power of that Castle wholly consisted in her, had that

he would have, and having his full liberty, framed an embracement of kindnesse, and with all his might caught her by the cursed head, and by main force wrung her neck asunder, wherewith she gave many a grievous groan, and there arose such a mighty Tempest in the Garden, as though Legions of Infernall Spirits had arrived there, which hideous noise, almost amazed the valiant Knight, that with all the hast he could got out of the Garden, and by that time Phoebus began to beautifie the earth with his splendour, he was safely come unto the place where Parismus was, and by the key Bellona had (which he had taken up as being carefull of that) he entered in, and lockt the doo again, but the noble minded Parismus marking his ghastly lookes being somewhat affrighted would not question with him, and poor Adonius was somewhat comforted with his presence, but otherwise wonderfully perplexed in thought.

As soon as he was in, he walked up and down sadly a good space, by which time came the Taylor with their Breakfast, whom Pollipus presently caught hold on, and with many threats compelled the Villain to unloose all the letters from Parismus and Adonius, which when he had done, he took up a bolt of Iron, and beat out his brains, and locking fast the doo, came to Parismus, and told him the whole truth that had passed between him and Bellona, which when he had declared, Parismus with a thousand kind embracements, extolled the worthy act, and poor Adonius was inwardly vexed with griefe, to think of the injury he had done him by her jealous thoughts, that she began to weep afresh, and renew her former kind of sorrow, which she used against him, in accusation of her self.

These two Knights, thought it not good in this time of need to use delay, but finding the bunch of keys the Taylor carried about him and fitting themselves with such weapons as the place yielded, (being the longest bolt of Iron) issued out of that place into the Court, where they saw no creature stir-  
ring

ring, at length they espied two or three of Druballs servants whom sooner saw these two Knights but with open exclamations they ran towards Druball, and they withall the haste they could followed after them, and at the very entrance in at a door flew, two of them, and the third yielded himselfe, promising if they would save his life, he would direct them to the place where Druball was, and also help them to Armour.

Upon which condition, he brought them into a mighty large roome, where they beheld many brave and rich Armours, being the Armour of such Knights, as were imprisoned and destroyed in that Castle, and besittted themselves with the best they could chuse, for they knew they should have occasion to use the same, and by that time they were armed, they heard a great noise and muttering of people, for Druballs sumnerous spell was ended, and he missing Bellona, and hearing the cries of his servants, fearing some treason caused his Alarm Bell to be rung, and presently there was gathered to him a hundred of his servants.

With which noise these Knights well armed, came out into the Court, whom Druball no sooner espied, but he caused his men to assault them, thinking because there were but two he should easily overcome them, but the first that offered to lay hands on Parismus, had his arme parted from his body and he ran about the court: anothers leg was by Pollipus cut off, and he compelled to lye and tumble on the earth, some lost their hands, some had their bodies pierced quite through by unconquerable hands of these worthy Knights, and happy was he that came not within compasse of their weapons, that by that time the Sunne was mounted to the highest Zodiack the greatest part of Druballs servants lay weltring in their blood, and these valiant Knights still continued their massacre amongst them: that the rest seeing themselves also likely to perish by the matchlesse chivalry of these Champions, with a generall consent, cast away their weapons and yielded to their mercy: which when Druball saw, being of a trayte-  
rous

rous disposition ran at *Parismus* with all the force he had, thinking either desperately to kill him, or by himselfe, but *Pollipus* with a quicke eye marking his intent, struck him so mighty a blow on the head, that he ran staggering up and downe, and by the commandment of *Parismus*, his owne men had taken away his weapon, whom *Parismus* caused to be layd in the most wilde prison in the Castle, which so vexed *Druball*, that there he grew to such a desperate rage, that he would have slain himself, but that he was in hope still to be released by *Bellona*.

Most part of his Servants, they likewise were committed to safe custody, and being more at quiet demanded of *Antiochus* Queen, and his two Sonnes and Daughter were living, who told him, that they were living in wonderfull peace and miserable estate. Wherefore by the direction of *Antiochus* Druballs Servants, they were brought unto the Prison, where they were no sooner come, but they heard the most grievous groanes, cries, and lamentation, that ever eare heard: and being entred they beheld a number of Prisoners in the most grievous and pittifullest manner, lying on the earth, that their hearts were wonderously grieved to behold the same.

Amongst the rest they beheld an ancient woman fetters and chained unto a Post, and right opposite against her, a comely young Maiden chained in many chaines, their apparel being all torn from their bodies, saving some little that shadowed their middle parts, whom the Servant told him was the Queen and her daughter, and two that lay, chained with their backs together, were *Antiochus* two Sonnes.

*Parismus* and *Pollipus* commanded them to fetch some Apparell to cover their bodies.

In the mean time they began to commune with the Queen, who was much ashamed at her nakednesse, but seeing some comfort in their looks, told them, that she was sometime Queen of that Country, but had long continued imprisoned in that sort by the treachery of *Druball*.

*Parismus*

*Parismus* told her, that now the time of her deliverie from that bondage was come, which so rejoyced the poore Queen that with a cheerefull countenance, she smiled on her Daughter, the messenger being returned, *Parismus* covered the Queenes body with rich apparell, and with his owne hands loosed her hands. *Pollipus* did the like to *Francetta* her Daughter, and all the rest of the Prisoners were set at liberty: *Parismus* and *Pollipus* led the Queen and *Francetta* to convenient lodgings, being scarce able to stand, they were graven so feeble, where they had all things convenient ministered unto them by *Adonius*, who was willing to undertake that office, and there left them, whilst they took order to release the rest of the Prisoners from their misery, which were a great number, amongst whom were many Knights of strange countries, that they admired the cruelty of the Tyrant *Druball*, which exceeded the compasse of reason. Afterwards they viewed the whole Castle, where they beheld in sundry places, the dead carcasses of thousands of Men, Women, and children, consumed to ashes, for as soon as the tyrants had satisfied their appetites in sundry abominable sorts with them, they burnt their bodies.

At last they came to the main Castle (wherein the servants of *Druball* told them, they never saw any to enter, which they found fast shut and assayed by all meanes they could to open the same, but their labour was in vaine, which caused them to marvelle what might be the cause thereof, But they were no sooner departed (determining to go see where *Bellona* lay dead) but immediately the winds began to blow with such vehemency, that with much ado they could stand upright: whereunto such thundring and tempests began to arise, that all the Rock chooke whereon the Castle stood, and the buildings quaked, in such manner, that such as were within the compasse of the rocks, ran forth into the open court, and the lower whereinto *Parismus* and *Pollipus* would have entred, seemed to turne into a mighty flame, from whence came such a smoke as darkened the whole place where they stood, that they could not see one another. In which sort it continued a good space, when pre-

sently the smoke vanished away, and the Tower and buildings of the Castle were never after that any more seen which so amazed the worthy Knights that with the fearfulness thereof, they stood like men agast. Neither was the body of Bellona any where to be found, for the term and date of her Enchantment then took end. The River over which they had passed was not to be seen, nor any other goodly thing, that before seemed most admirable for beauty. Wherefore Parismus commanded a Tent to be pitcht for their habitation, being no other there to be had.

Druball being (as before I said) in Prison, hearing this noise, and seeing the darkness that overspread the Castle, soon knew for Bellona had imparted the secret thereof unto him before that Pollipus knew her, and by that means desperately without any hope of aid beat out his own braines against the Stone Walls, and his body being in that lost sound murdered, Parismus commanded to be cast as a prey to the Beasts in the field, for that he was not worthy of Buriall. After which the two Knights came to the Queen, who was in the Tent, accompanied by her two Sonnes and Daughter, who by Adonius good tendance were well strengthened, and they no sooner saw them come in, but with a thousand commendations, they began to applaud their magnanimous vertues, that had wrought the downfall of those two wicked Tyrants, that had long time kept them in thraldome, saying unto them so many hearty thanks, that Parismus requested them not to use such Ceremonious thanks to them that were altogether unworthy thereof, and began to demand of the Queen, whether the King of that Island were living or no. Whereupon she told him that he was slain in a battell by Druball many years since, the remembrance of whose death, caused the teares to trickle down her Cheekes in abundance. Weepe not deare Lady, (quoth Parismus) for things past recovery are no way to be lamented, but (quoth he) this comfort is yet remaining, that Antiochus is living, and in good health, for since our coming into this Country, we have been preserved from imprisonment by his courteous meanes, and to morrow (to please

to you) my deere friend Pollipus and my selfe, will conduct you unto the place of his abode. At which words, the Queen, her Daughter, and two Sonnes, were so reioiced with exceeding joy (assuredly believing his words) that with many thanks and courtesies, they prostrated themselves before these worthy Knights, that had every way brought them happy newes: where many other speeches passed betwixt them, till by the nights approach, they all betook themselves to their rest within those Tents, where all things were orderly provided by Drubals servants: and they quietly rested untill the next morning, Adonius still being Pollipus. Bellona who was now grown into such admiration of the splendour of his splendid vertues, that she resolved rather to die a thousand deaths, then to lose one jot of his love, which by many infallible tokens, she knew to be so loyall, that no thought of change could take root in his constant heart: and so indeed it was. For Pollipus was so fervently affectioned to her, that although he knew not what was become of her, and after had being at her Fathers house, had from her selfe received a flat deniall, yet he determined (after that Parismus had againe recovered Larana) to spend the rest of his daies in search of her, who was more pritty to his actions, then he was afraid of.

The next Morning, Parismus early came to visite the Queen, where after some salutations, they departed towards the Cave where old Antiochus was, who hearing no newes of these Knights, was fully perswaded that they were imprisoned by Druball, as many had been before, and therefore was now out of all hope of hearing any good newes by their returne, and gave himselfe in his former Antient kind of life: and being in the midst of a sorrowfull meditation, he suddenly beheld Parismus and Pollipus within his Cave coming towards him, whom at the first he knew not. By reason whereof he was afflicted with such a deadly feare, as if he had bene attacked by his enemy Druball, but with a more attentive eye, beholding these Knights, he knew them, and with great joy reioiced at their prosperous returne, say Lord (quoth



*Parismus* (we have by the Divine providence, and the vertue of the worthy *Pollipus*, destroyed that wicked *Druball*, and the *Enchantresse Belloua*; whilst they continued this talk, the *Queen* and her *Children* (being guided by *Adonius*) entered the *Castle*, who no sooner saw her Lord *Antiochus*, but presently he knew the form of his countenance, though much altered by age, and upon her knee saluted him, who kindly took her up, requesting to know why she used such reverence to him: *Parismus* seeing that he knew her not, told him, that she was his *Queen* and *Children* come to visit him. Wherewith *Antiochus* with thousands of kisses and embracings welcomed them, that it delighted the knights to behold their exceeding joy, in which salutation they continued to their mutuall comforts a good space, and at last departed towards their tents. In which journey *Parismus* unfolded the whole manner of their adventure, and how by the wisdom of *Pollipus*, they attained the Conquest of that *Delicious Castle*, where they continued some dayes, spending the time in great joy. After their troubles in the *Enchanted Castle* were ended, *Parismus* began to renew the remembrance of his lost *Laurana*, (by seeing the joy these parted friends enjoyed by their happy meeting) that he could not be quiet, but began to conferre with *Pollipus* how to get shipping to go in search of his beloved *Princess*. Wherefore they came both unto old *Antiochus*, to ask his advise therein, who told them, that since it was their desire to depart, he would use all the meanes he could to purchase their content, and therefore went toward the *Sea Side*, where stood a goodly *Towne*, being sometime the chiefest of that Countrey, and there determined to make his abode, and to seek traffique amongst other Nations, as in times past where the King dwelt many dayes, having some two hundred to inhabit the same City, being such as were servants to *Druball*, and prisoners in the *Castle* where he caused his flaggs of truce to be hung out, which was a token unto such as passed by, that there they might safely arrive without danger. In this place *Parismus* and *Pollipus* remained in good hope to get passage, many dayes

the *Queen* and her *Children* leave them, to declare

the *Queen* and her *Children* leave them, to declare

*Antiochus* all this while remained in the *Towne* of *Lebeck*, kindly interpreted (as before rehearsed) by *Andramant*, who was surprised with such desire to obtain her favour, that it was a griefe to him at any time to see her sad, and on a time he came unto her (being in her Chamber, accompanied by *Meda* her Maid) and having obtained her consent, uttered these words. Most beautiful Lady (saith he) I beseech you do some favour on poore *Andramant*, who languisheth with desire of your love, you see that now you are in my power, and it were but folly for you to be so cruel to me, and so ready to regard my proffered love, which as I might if I pleased inflict some grievous punishment upon you, thereby to diminish your content, but I will be so farre that my mind is not bent to any cruelty, but I have ever since your first fall humbly besought and intreated your friendship, which I esteem more dear to my life, than you may imagine in great quiet and pleasure, to subject unto any, but will be ever obedient to this *Castle*, my self, and all that is mine, to love and obey, if you will grant me love. He gave you glad in costly robes and various vestures, imbold with *Gold*, and the richest burnt gold, perfumed with *Amber*, *Styrac*, and *Syrrian* sweet perfumes, a hundred Virgins cloth in purple, wait daily attend

tend thy person, as many sweet according to the manner of  
 bring thy senses to their ender sleep. When thou shalt be the  
 cious delicacies of the world, thy drink shall be only then  
 star and Ambrosia: my self will be obedient to thy call, and  
 all my servants shall bow at thy commands: at all times will I  
 purchase thy sweet content. I will prepare a rich banquet  
 riot made of the purest gold. Wherein thou shalt be served  
 by kings, along the pleasant fountains of this Country, where  
 the Evening wine shall breed a ruddiness farre more sweet  
 then Amber-grace, upon thy crimson cheekes, and make thy  
 splendent beauty shine like the Purple Palace of Hyperion.  
 When he leades Aurora blushing in her bed, whereby all crea-  
 tures shall admire thy excellency. All this and ten thousand  
 times more will I performe to delight your vertuous self  
 withall, but if all this will not suffice, then shall I spend my  
 dayes in endlesse sorrow, and your self purchase thereby your  
 owne discontent. Wherefore sweet Lady, let me receive some  
 comfortable answer to mitigate these my sorowes.

Laurana having heard his speeches, was so surprized with  
 vertuous disdaine to heare his flattering, that she was re-  
 solved not to answer him at all, but at last, she replied in this  
 sort. It is in vaine I praynt (quoth she) for thee to think to pur-  
 chase any love at my hands by thy flatteries, therefore desist  
 thy suit, which is as odious to me as thy selfe, which thinkes  
 because by treachery I am brought into thy cruell hands,  
 will yeeld to thy allurements: no I praynt, no, inflict what pun-  
 ishment thou canst upon me, I will never yeeld to shew thee  
 any favour, that deserueth to be hated of all men: besides, thou  
 seest my estate, unfit to listen to the allurements of love: there-  
 fore if thou hast any vertue in thee, (as thou shewest thy selfe  
 to have none) shew that thou lovest me, by desisting to trouble  
 me any more with the harsh sound of thy odious insinua-  
 tions: wherewith she turned from him, and he in a monstrous  
 rage departed the Chamber.

Afterward coming unto a sister which he had with him  
 named Adamaia, he began to unfold unto her the summe of

his relation to Laurana, and how accidentally she had used  
 her requesting her to tell him further therein: to be be-  
 lieved an ill disposed creature, and rather ready to intice him  
 to evil, then to dissuade him from the same: she promised him  
 that if he might have the favour of Laurana, she would not  
 be long to bring her to consent unto his desire, which  
 she was in some doubt to suffer, for that he was loath  
 she should have the keeping of her but himselfe. But at last,  
 being inticed by hope of obtaining her good will, gave his con-  
 sent, and the wicked Adamaia had the charge of the most ver-  
 tuous Laurana, unto whom she unfolded the cause of her com-  
 plaint, using many persuasions to Laurana, to consent to love  
 Andramar, telling her that she was unwise to refuse the good  
 will of him that was so mighty a man, Laurana seeing a worse  
 plague then what she before endured, to be thus detain'd her,  
 by being troubled with such an impudent suitour, was so o-  
 vercome with sorrow and griefe, that this last variation seem'd  
 more grievous then all that ever she endured, and would  
 give no answer to her impudent solicitings: by which  
 means Adamaia was frustrated of all hope to obtain her li-  
 ving, but many dayes she used the vertuous Laurana very  
 kindly, and seem'd so loath to offend her that she would not of  
 long time after, motion any thing in the behalf of her Brother,  
 which the wicked Dag did, onely to feele the disposition of the  
 vertuous Laurana: and also perceiving that she was great  
 with child, told Andramar, that it was to no effect to deale  
 any further in their spite: untill she were delivered. Where-  
 with all diligence they ministered all things necessary, and  
 the time of her delivery being come she was enriched with a  
 goodly boy, whom she named Parisius, whom Andramar  
 caused to be nursed and to be most delicately brought up many  
 dayes in that Castle.

After a few dayes, Andramar grew so impatient in his love,  
 that with many intreaties, he requested Adamaia either spee-  
 dily to work his content (by obtaining Laurana as liking) or  
 else he told her she would soon see his death, for without  
 the same it was impossible for him to live. Wherewith Adamaia

she began to settle her self to the cause she had undertaken, and finding (as she thought) a convenient time when Laurana was alone, she began to settle her mind in this sort.

*Vertuous Lady* (quoth she) I have long diligently marked the dolefull plaints you secretly utter, which maketh me muse, that you having no cause at all, should spend your days in such heavy sort, whereas you might (if you pleased) enjoy such happy delight as many thousand Ladies would wish for. You are here in a happy place in my opinion, where nothing is wanting that might procure your content, where no injury is offered you, that might procure you some secret grief. I know not what to conjecture your discontent: and the lord Andramart in my judgement fair Lady, should bring you that happy content, which yet you never enjoyed the like, who in all respects beareth such an intire affection to your self, that whatsoever he hath or can command resteth wholly at your disposition. But if it be so that you have some friend already unto whom you are any way tied in the bands of love, and so bid you endure such penitence, that by some mischance is perished, then let famous Andramart, possess the second room in your gentle heart, and let me be the messenger to carry these happy tidings to ease his torment.

Laurana having heard this cunning insinuation of Adamasia well understood her meaning, and therefore told her that her griefs were best known to her self, which she determined not to reveal, and as for Andramart, she told her, she esteemed his love worse then his hatred, and that she had rather endure the greatest force of his malice, then the loathsome proffers of his love, and therefore willed her not to prosecute any further her unwelcome suite, which should make her less welcome unto her company. Adamasia hearing Laurana's resolute answer, was so kindled into anger with the same, and being of a proud disposition, could not refrain from uttering her inward rancor, but replied as followeth. *Proud Lady* (quoth she) know that Andramarts more labouring thee then thou deservest, hath appointed me to intreat thy favour, but thou

shalt all reject his proffered courtship, and makest scorn my speeches, which I cannot endure, for thou shalt well know that I am the better, and I tell thee that thou shalt yield unto his just suite, or repent the time that ever thou were so. therefore let me have thy answer to morrow, which is the uttermost reprieve that I will give thee.

What foul bag (quoth Laurana) my answer thou shalt receive, that for thy detested sake, I will never yield unto his suite, which words so amazed the rude Adamasia that coming to Laurana she struck her such a blow on the face that the blood ran abundantly from her mouth, wherewith she departed and left Laurana in that sad bleeding, with her blood mingling her Christall tears, which in abundance ran from her eyes. This bag was so incensed with the sharp answer of Laurana, that presently she came to Andramart and told him that there was no dealing with her in gentle sort, rehearsing how disdainfully she refused all the proffers and suites she could make, using such persuasions that Andramart consented to be wholly ordered by her, nothing regarding what she intended, so he might have his desire.

Adamasia therefore purposing to bring her business to effect; first caused Leda to be summoned and restrained from her appearance, which was an insupportable griefe to her. Next she caused young *Parimeas* and his horse to be kept from his mothers knowledge, and such things as Laurana had before enjoyed for her use, were now quite kept from her, and her discontented, being served at such as ill agreed with her stomach. Laurana seeing her false thus used, began to fear some harder measure, which very shortly fell out true. Adamasia longing to execute her cruelty upon the vertuous Lady, came unto her, and asked whether as yet she would consent to yield her love to Andramart for (said she) it is now no dallying, for I will either purchase his content by thy consent, or work thy sorrow. Laurana would make her no answer at all but with silence heard her talk, rail, stamp, and rage, in such extreme sort, that she thought she would with



with fury, at that instant have run mad, for Laurencee being incaged her more then the sharpest answer she could have or be could have done, that in an extreame rage she locked the Chamber door, and departed presently desiring how to torment her. And chusing unto her two old women, fit to execute any evill action, having instructed them what they shall do, sent them to her, where they were no sooner come, but they held her sitting on the ground, having chosen the darkest place in the Chamber, as sitting her mournfull disposition with her cheeks besmeared with old dried teares, and fresh drops, resembling the purest Christall pearles, ready to fall, leaning her arm upon her knee, and her head upon her hand, her hair being carelessly attired, and all her ornaments dissolved hanging (but yet so delightfull to behold) that the old bagges could not devise how to find any occasion how to execute their intent, but were so abashed at her countenance, that they were oftentimes in mind to returne without once offering to trouble her. Laurencee seeing them stand gazing upon her, rose from the place where she sat, and demanded what they would have, whom they answered not, but she suspecting they were sent by Adamalia, for no good intent, began to utter these speeches.

Fear not (quoth she) to execute the will of her that sent you: who seeketh for that at my hands she shall never obtaine. It is not all the torment she can devise, shall make me alter my bow, for I am resolutely determined to endure them, and death too, if it be her will to give it me. Cruell fortune hath wrought my sorrow, and inflicted greater punishment upon me then she can devise, by the losse of my deare Lord and Husband, whom I know not what fortune keepeth thus long from redeeming his poore Laurencee, nor into what place of the world he is wandred in search of me, that in all this time I can heare no tydings of his happy arrivall. But why do I wish his comming hither, when there is no meanes to escape death, if he once fall into the hands of these Tyrants. Who, the more detestable they are, all happiness attend his royall person, and

the

that I am from harme, and all mine and sorrowe belong to me, and my sorrowe come what it will, or returne to the cruell tyrant that sent you, and tell her that Laurencee seemeth to be dead, and is thus at her hand. She had no sooner ended her speeches, but they began to beate her delicate body, and disfigure her at all her ornaments, taking her white smock, which was untied before to her tender waist, and scourged her with whips until the purple blood began to trickle down her precious body, which torment she endured so patiently, as was a most rare vertue in her to quietly to endure griefe in silence of her honour.

And having executed their cruelty in most extreame sort, she alone, who covered her bleeding body (which was such a lamentable spectacle to behold, that bad Andramart saw her distressed estate, he would have runne mad with extreme fury) and gave her selfe to continuall sorrow, expecting more hard usage, for she knew, while she would yeeld her body to be embraced by the hateful Andramart, she should endure many other torments, which she would not in any wise yeeld unto, though she endured tenne thousand more.

The next day comes to her againe Adamalia, whose countenance betrayed the guiltines of her conscience, and demanded whether as yet she would give answer to her demand. Laurencee was so inwardly tormented, to heare any more motions that tended to the breach of her loyalty, that she would not endure the thought thereof, and knowing that this wicked fury would continue a long circumstance of obloious perswasions, she interrupted her with this answer. Wretched woman (quoth she) thinkest thou by the cruell usage to purchase my dishonour? No, were I so intended for thy sake would I re- solve my disposition, and tell the tyrant Andramart, that he should tear me in a thousand pieces by his detested cruelty, then yeeld to his beastly desire. Execute thy rage, and handle all the devilish devices thy hateful heart can invent, they shall no whit faine me, for thy damned selfe,

the

thy hoarse voice and abominable taste, are as deadly poison to my senses, and the thought of them so odious, that no what thou canst, I will never consent to the least thought of granting thy request: therefore trouble me no more with thy serpent-like hissing forth of bellicious protestations, for my soul hath bowed in despite of all thy cruelties, and uttermost devices of detested tyranny, to give thee no other answer. Proud insupportable trait (quoth Adamasia) if thou art willing to worke thine owne sorrow, being some stragling mace or bale born housewife, that art not worthy the love of Andramart, and thinkest to escape my hands by thy resolute replies, and denials. No, know foolish contemner of thine own good, that nothing shall satisfy me but thy consent, which thou wilt yield I fear me, when it will be too late. The downfall of thy self, thy sonne, and all that is thine, shall not appease my fury, but thy consent to love Andramart: and since thou wilt by no intreaties be perswaded, all this and more will I inflict upon thy proud heart, that so willfully deniest his request, and therefore either speedily yield thy unworthy fancy to attend his liking, or resolve to behold the tragedy of thy infant.

With which words she departed, and left Laurana so terrified with her speeches, that her senses were overcome with fear; and she stared like one without sense: but reviving herself from that heavy durnp with abundance of teares, she bedewed her crimson cheeks, and in silent sorrow spent her time, still expecting the heavy netes of Parismenos Tragedy, which within few dayes the wicked tyrannous Adamasia effected in this sort: She caused the Nurse that kept Parismenos to bring him to his Mother with this message, that unless she would in all respects fulfill the requests that Adamasia had made, she must presently destroy him before her face: who hearing the nurse utter that dismall doome of her sonne, she fell into a deadly sound, in which sort she continued a good space, in which time the Nurse was departed with young Parismenos, which when Laurana perceived, she began to utter

many

many heavy plaints, that the very Waller seemed to pity her distresse, but being diversly tormented with feare, to think what was become of her young son, she got to the window and there beheld Adamasia with the Nurse, ready to strangle the Infant before her face: but the Nurse pitying the Infant, who looked with such a smiling countenance (that the cruel Tiggers would have spared his life) upon her knees with abundance of teares intreated the hard-hearted Adamasia to spare his life, who was no way guilty of his Mothers offence: but all the intreaties she could use, nothing availed: but the taking the Infant from the Nurse, addressed her self to execute her cruel intent.

Which Laurana espying, being there with terrified, called aloud from the window unto her, and desired her to heare her speake, before she spilt the innocent blood of her young Sonne, which caused Adamasia to stay, but still she continued like a furious Lionesse, standing ready to devour her prey, and Laurana from forth her Window, uttered these speeches. If thou wert ever borne of a woman, be not so inhumane as to destroy that harmlesse Infant, which is of no power to worke thy discontent: wherein hath it offended thee, or how hath it any way deserved such an untimely death? What wilt it profit thee at all to see his destruction? It is I that have offended thee: it is I that may appease thy cruell mind: it is my blood that may suffice thy devouring appetite, then inflict thy wrath on my head, revenge thy selfe on me, that here offer my selfe willingly to destruction. What mercilesse creature would be so tyrannous as to destroy an harmless innocent, when they have in their power a fitter subject to appease their ire? Cruel Adamasia, or let me call thee gentle cruell woman: let my plaints move thy heart from acting that cruell deed: let my humble teares, and remembrance of a Mothers love to her Child, revoke thy cruell doome: let my paines and intreaties so much picke thy stony heart, as to cause thy heart relent, and stay thy hand from that mercilesse deed. Here I am that have offended, why wilt thou not then revenge thy selfe on me, that may

satisfie



Parisus thy will, and spare that tender babe, whose death will make thee so odious, that the earth will refuse to bear thy hateful body, the Sunne will send no more vapours to people thy soule, the aire will lack thy intralles, and the very stones will worke thy downfall. Remember that his life may be a meanes to alter my minde, but his death will harden my heart to murther, that it will be for ever impossible for thee to attain the thing thou seekst at my hand. When he not so cruell as to spill the blood of that silly Lambe, that is not altogether as yet ready for the slaughter.

Adamasia hearing the conclusion of Lauranaes speeches, perceiving that they shewed some likelyhood that she would change her inclination, (wherein she was deceived) delivered Parismenos againe to his Nurse, with many oathes, protesting, that if Laurana did not the next day grant her request, he should surely die. Laurana was somewhat comforted, by this short time of Truce she had gotten for Parismenos life, but still rested in such care and perplexity of griefe, that she was in the most wofullest estate of misery, that ever any Lady was in, her senses being so stifled with abundance of sorrow, that she could neither resolve what to do, nor once study how to avoid these intollerable mischiefs.

The Nurse having received the young Parismenos, with great joy departed to the place of her abode, where she was to lomer come, but she then began presently to devise how to save the sweet Babe from death: for although she was a stranger to Laurana, a woman of a rude and barbarous Nation, altogether both of civility, yet by the Divine operation, she was so farre in love with that most sweet countenance of the young Infant, and therewith she tooke such delight to educate to gallant a Child, that she determined either to save him from Adamasies cruelty, or thereby worke her owne destruction: therefore in the midst of the darke night, when all things were at silence, she stole away from the Castle with Parismenos, and by that time it was day, she was travell'd some twenty miles from the same, where she got into a Castle

and there made such provision, that she carefully brought up Parismenos, as conveniently as was possible for her to do, in a frequented place, of whome we will speak more hereafter.

The next morning, Adamasia came againe to Lauranaes Chamber, demanding the accomplishment of her request, who by that time had sufficiently determined what to doe: and weighing the distressed estate she was in, considered, that if she should condescend to love Andramart, she should both violate her selfe of chastity, and doe a most monstrous injury to the noble Parismus, she resolved to see the destruction of her Sonne, and endure death. And therefore told Adamasia, that nothing but her dishonour would content her mind, she might do all as pleased her, for she was resolved never to yield to violate her chastity, but yet most humbly intreated the hard hearted Wagger, to spare her Sonns life, she being such manifold reasons, that it would have pierced the heart of the cruellest Tyrant living: but Adamasia was rather inflamed to fury, then any way mollified with her gentle intreaties that in extreame rage she departed, with full intent to execute her insatiate revenge on Parismenos: but coming into the Nurses Chamber, and not finding him nor his Nurse, she could not tell what to thinke, and making further enquiry, (being thereby assured that they were not to be found) she was enraged with such mad and devilish frenzy, that she came unto the two old Wagges, that had executed her commandement before on Laurana, stamping and staring, and discovered unto them all that had happened, and how that the Nurse was fled with the young Infant: who by her wicked commandement for many dayes after, continually tormented the vertuous Laurana with such extreame tortures, that it was impossible for her long to endure that extreame misery, wherewith she was brought into a most dangerous estate of death, being void of all comfort, and continually she spent her time in bemoaning the loss of her Lord, and the untimely slaughter of Parismenos, whom she thought assuredly to be dead.

## CHAP. XXIII,

How *Andramart* understanding how *Adamasia* had used *Laurana*, and missing young *Parismenos*, would have slain her, but she hastning to avoid his fury, buast her neck down a paire of staires,



*Andramart* all this while continued in good hope of *Lauranaes* favour, which he was in some sort assured of by *Adamasiaes*, persuasion, who continually used all the delays he could to hinder him from visiting *Laurana*: for she was assured that if he had any knowledge how she had misused her, it would turn to her great displeasure. But he having a long time endured her absence, with an afflicted mind, and seeing that he could not attaine the felicity he expected but was still delayed with the false promises of his Sister, which came to no effect, determined himselfe to visit her, which he had not done in many dayes, and therefore with a pleasant countenance he entred her Chamber, where at his comming in, he found such an alteration, as he was astonished to behold the same, for *Laurana* sat by her beds side upon the flore, shedding abundance of teares, her ornaments all betorne, by the two cruell Dagges, that used dayly to torment her, her golden tresses hanging dishevelled about her shoulders, her crimson coloured cheeks turned to a pale hue, her face mangled and scratch'd with their hellish nailes, and all things so disordered contrary to his expectation; (little suspecting the cruelty that the cruell *Adamasia* had used) that in marvellous perplexity he stood conjecturing what might be the occasion thereof. One while thinking, that her owne impatience had caused her use that cruelty against her selfe. At last he began to suspect *Adamasia*, for that he mist *Lauranaes* Gentlewoman.

At last *Laurana* having espied him, being abashed at his suddaine comming, for that she was disrobed, arose from of

the place where she sat, fearing least his comming thither, might be to offer her some violence. But *Andramart* humbling himselfe upon his knees, uttered these speeches upon her knees: I pray you to hear your Maistie speak: whose heart is oppressed with a thousand griefes, to see the extreame sorrow you remaine in: I have according to your command abashed my self, from manifesting my desire to be acceptable in your sight, this long time, trusting that your gentle heart would in time pity the extremity of my passions, and not being oppressed and overburdened with a longing desire to enjoy your heavenly presence, I have presumed to shew my self in your gentle aspect, though contrary to your command, trusting to have some good hope of your gentlenesse: but contrary to my expectation, I find my self to be frustrate of all comforts, and your self to be in that equispage, that I know not how to utter these my speeches, nor consolate of the cause of this your sorrow, which driveth me into a thousand doubtfull cogitations: least I am now more unwelcome to your company then I have deserved; being altogether ignorant of any cause of offence, that I have given unto you: where he would have said, but that *Laurana*, interrupted him in this sort:

Still beware th a man of thy sexe to use dissimulation, for the cruell usage I have endured cannot be unknowne to thee, but procured by thy meanness and now further to torment me (that am altogether resolved to abide thy greatest fury) thou comest with dissimbling and counterfeit flatteries to comfort thy tyranny, thinking by thy counterfeit ignorance to procure that which thy tyranny cannot effect. But he answered that I am now so farre from condescending, to conceive a good opinion of thee, as it is but in vain for thee to utter any more speeches: but think and be persuaded, that by thy cruell devices thou hast given me such cause to hate thee, that I will not ever cease to hate thee, till I have killed thee, and so he ended his speech, and she returned to her place, and he departed.

These speeches made Andramart into such an amazement, that with many oaths, vows, and protestations, he requested Laurana to manifest unto him, the occasion of these her speeches, which she was urged to do, wondering at the many treaties he made, for she thought assuredly, it had been by his procurement, but at last, by his protestations, she suspected the contrary, and began to declare unto him the manner of her usage: How she was daily whipped and beaten by two old merciless women, and how Adamasia had murdered her Sonne Parismenos; with remembrance of whose death, she uttered such abundance of tears, that Andramart was likelesse ready to weep to see the sorrows she endured. At his hard usage (quoth Laurana) I have endured by your cruell meanes, besides the imprisonment of my servant Leda, for her death, for that I have not of long time seen her: and now in fraudulent manner, I fear me, you come to spill my blood, which is here ready to abide your tyranny.

Most vertuous Lady (quoth Andramart) if any of these evils have happened by my meanes, or any way by my consent, then esteem me the cruellest creature living: then let me never enjoy any title of your favour, which will be more grievous unto me then a thousand deaths: then let the heavens pour down their vengeance upon my detested carcase, and all the furies of hell eternally possess my soul. Let the earth receive my hated body into her bowels, and let me for ever be detested and abhorred of all creatures.

Which words he had no sooner uttered, but Adamasia entered Lauranaes chamber, and seeing her brother in that posture, would have departed again; but he espying her, called her unto him, And Laurana now assuredly perswading her, that he was no way guilty of her cruell usage, abhorring the sight of the tyrannesse, said: Weale the executioner of Parismenos tragedy, and your tyrannye: at which words, Andramart, drew out his sword, which he continually used to threaten him, determining to pierce her with it, but she, starting so cruelly, and being terrified with his ghastly countenance,

runs with such stiffness from his presence, that missing her steps, she fell down a high pair of stairs, and dashed out her hateful braines, and in that manner, according to her owne wicked will she desperately ended her dayes.

Andramart thinking her death not sufficient to revenge the cruel torments Laurana had endured, in furious sort, ranged up and down the Castle, untill he had found the old bags that had been Adamasiaes instruments of fury, one of them he immediately slew, and the other flew into the open Court, whom he pursued, and in the sight of his mistress, (who was beholding the dead body of Adamasia) at one blow he parted her curst head from her filthy body, which in some sort rejoiced Laurana to see, but he still ranne up and downe raging in such cruell sort, that his servants fled from his presence, and hid themselves for fear of his fury. At last he came to the place where Parismenos was nursed, but finding him gone, and with all rememb'ring Lauranaes speeches, for very grief he tore his hair, and stamped on the earth, at last by directions of his servants, he came to the place where Leda was imprisoned, being used in most vile sort, and uttered these speeches: Fair Damzell, if you have conceited any hard opinion of me for this your usage, I beseech you remitt the same, for it was altogether without my knowledge, and assure your self I have to hand the unworthy procurer thereof, that she shall never hereafter purchase your discontent, humbly desiring you to pardon my negligence, by meanes whereof, you are brought into this mischance: and also I pray you certifie your noble mistress, that Andramart is no way to be blamed, for the remembrance of her grief hath brought such terror to his heart, that he shall never rest in quiet, untill he hath wrought her the happy content she desireth, which if he know what it were, he would presently put in practice. And taking Leda by the hand, with all humillity he brought her unto Lauranaes Chamber, who, rejoicing at her sight, lovingly and with joy embraced her, and Andramart departed, presently commanding all things to be ministered unto Laurana in such diligent sort, that she

could not chuse but commend his good nature, whom she assuredly beleevd was no way prisy to his sisters actions: for that he had sufficiently shewn the contrary, and still laboured by all the meanes he could, to purchase her good liking. Leda as is said, being come to her mistress, so rejoiced her heart that she began to lea be off her sad and her pensive thoughts that still oppressed her mind, and declared unto her the cruel usage of Adamasia, withall, the report of *Parismenos*, which newes made her again begin her former sorrow: but by the comfortable perswasions of Leda, (whose counsell she much esteemed) she gave her mind unto much quiet. In which quiet state let us once again leaue her.

## CHAP. XXIII.

How *Parismus* and *Pollipus* departed from the *Desolate Island*, in a ship of *Hungaria*. And how they were endangered by Pyrates belonging to *Andramart*, by whose meanes they won the narrow passage into the *Island of Rocks*.



**P**arismus & *Pollipus* continued many days in the the *desolate Island* expecting the happy arrival of some ship, wherein they might have passage to go further in search of *Laurana*, for whose absence they indured much sorrow. At length it chanced, that a merchants ship of *Hungaria*, passed by this *desolate Island*, which they well knew and thinned for the dangerous report they had heard thereof. Comming against the City where the King lay, the Mariners above hatches had sight of flags that were spread upon the top of the Castle and signified the same unto their chieftain, whose name was *Barzillus*, who hearing their report, wondered what might be the cause, and being desirous to know the certainty, made the therwards, where he durst not bring his ship to shore, but taking his Cock-boat, himselfe with such as rowed him, landed at the Castle: where such as attended the same, espied

same and saluted *Barzillus*, certifying him, that he need not now fear *Bellona*, for that there were two Knights in the City, that had destroyed the Castle, and freed their King and Queen out of thraldome, who would be very joyfull to hear that any passengers were landed, *Barzillus* hearing their report without feare (beleaving their speeches went with them into the Court) which was but small, yet there he was, most kindly welcomed by the King and Queen, but especially by *Parismus* and *Pollipus*, who enquired of him, of whence he was. He certified them he belonged to the King of *Hungaria*, his name *Barzillus*, and that seeing the flaggs of truce, he came to see what adventure had happened in that *desolate Island*.

Friend (quoth *Parismus*) your comming hither may greatly pleasure my selfe, and this worthy Knight, my friend *Pollipus* of *Phrygia*, by whose promise this *Island* was reduced to his former happy estate, *Barzillus* hearing him name *Pollipus*, inspected him presently to be the famous Prince *Parismus* of *Bohemia*, of whose losse at Sea he had heard many reports by others Ships he had met both of *Thessaly* and *Bohemia*, that were gone in search of them, and therefore with great reverence he uttered these speeches. Most courteous Knight, I have in my travell oftentimes heard of that worthy Knights name and also of the famous Prince of *Bohemia*, by many Knights that are in search of them, whom I suppose your self, to be, and therefore account my self the happiest man alive, to be an occasion to pleasure you in any respect: therefore most worthy Knight if my self, my men, or ship may any way do you service, I here most humbly offer them at your vertuous command. *Parismus* kindly thanked him, assuring him that he was the same, whom he had named, and that a long time he had remained in that *Island* for want of Whipping to go in search of *Laurana*, daughter to the King of *Thessaly*. Whom they had lost, and that if he would shew them that courtesie as to leaue his further travail for Marchandise, and accompany him in his travellies, he would make him such sufficient re-

recompence, and he should neber after need to trabaile, to get wealth. Barzillus told him, that notwithstanding his honorable proffer he should have all that was his at com mandment. So giving him all the courteous entertainment that might be, they sojourned still with old Antiochas, untill they had furnished themselves with all things convenient, and finding a fit time (with all courtesie taking their leave of the King, and Queen, and Frenetia, who took their departure most heavily) for that these knights were so gracious in their eyes, as they accounted one part of their soules departed with them, having obtained a promise of them, to visite them when they had obtained their wished friend) having wind at will they launced into the main, not knowing which way to take their course, but committed themselves to their good or ill fortune. They had not sailed three dayes, but Barzillus gave them to understand, that they were near the Province of Tarracia, where he told them it was dangerous travailling: for those Seas were still frequented with Pyrates and Robbers, whose words they immediately found true. For they had not sailed the space of two houres, but they espied a far off, a ship making towards them again, whom Barzillus presently knew to be Pyrates: and therefore uttered these speeches most worthy knights, now prepare your selves to resist the enemy approaching us, whom I know to be such as seek the destruction of all passengers, (into whose hands if you fall) you may expect nothing but cruell tyranny and hard usage.

By that time he had ended his speeches, the Pyrates had layd them aboard, and began to enter their ship but Parisimus and Pollipus, having armed themselves, with their weapons drawn, demanded of them what they would have? their Generall hearing their speech, told them he would have them yeeld. *Wield* (quoth Parisimus) that we will, wherewith he smote one of them so violently, that he cleft his head, Pollipus did the like to another, who seeing themselves so handled, assailed these Champions with great fury, being a multitude in respect of their small company, But they resisted them

with

with such valour, that the Pyrates were greatly discomfited, and a great number of them slain: in which conflict, Pollipus not regarding the danger he was in, nor the treachery the Pyrates might use, was gotten aboard the Pyrates ship, and there made such habock, that they despairing of victory, hopped their sayles, and before Pollipus could again recover his own ship, were launched from the other a good way, which Parisimus espying, desired Barzillus to make out after them.

Pollipus seeing himself in that sort betrayed, layd about him with such fury, that none durst come too near him: at last, the Generall noting his valour, came unto him with these speeches. Knight (quoth he) yeeld thy self, and do not draw a worse mischief upon thy head, by procuring my further displeasure against thee, for if thou wilt ask mercy at my hands, I will give it thee; otherwise, know that I am of sufficiency to abate thy courage, and bring thee in subjection, in despite of the best resistance thou canst make. Pyrate (quoth Pollipus) I scorn thy proffered friendship, and dare thee to use the best skill thou canst to conquer me, for I am resolved to try thy valour.

Which words being ended, they assailed each other with such fury, that it had been a sight worthy the beholding (if any had been by) to see the bravery of their fight, but Pollipus assailed his enemy with such valour, that he had mangled and cut his body in many places, who being grown weak with the effusion of his blood, fell down at his feet dead: Which the Partners perceiving, all at once assailed Pollipus, who so valiantly withstood them, that they could little or nothing at all damage him: One amongst the rest, offered him a thrust, which lighted on his left side, at the skirts of his armour, which grieved him worse then all the wounds he had received, and enraged him, that he chased them up and down with such furious strokes, that many of them in shunning his keen sword, tumbled over-board: many of them were dismembred, and the rest seeing themselves unable to withstand



his force, got themselves under Hatches, and Pollipus was left alone. Who seeing none to trouble him, and being sore wounded and weary, fate him down as well to rest himself, as to consider the estate he was in.

Parismus hasted after the Pyrates Ship with all speed he might but do what Barzillus could, they had lost the sight thereof, which drove Parismus into such sorrow, as was strange and poore. Adonius seeing the Knight she so dearly loved, fall into such mishap, got her selfe into a secret place in the ship, and there uttered these plaints.

How unhappy am I, that have caused the losse of so worthy a Knight as my deare Pollipus is, who hath given himself to a carelesse desperatenesse for my losse, who am not worthy for my unthankfulnesse to be esteemed of him. Now is he fallen into the hands of such as will soone abridge his dares, it is impossible for him to withstand the force of such a multitude, but fall into utter ruine. O that my unworthy selfe had been in his company, that I might have taken part in the afflictions he is likely to endure, and have comforted him in his distresse. Accursed and uncounteous that I was, in so many fit occasions as I had, that would never manifest my self unto him, who continually sorrowed for my absence, nevermore shall I enjoy his sweet company, nevermore shall I be folded in his manly armes, the touch of whose embracings were more pleasant, then all the ioyes I shall hereafter endure. What resteth now for me, but to spend the rest of my accursed dayes in continuall sorrow for his absence.

Having ended these speeches, she suddainly started up, and with abundance of teares, came to the place where Parismus was, who seeing the sorrow he made, exceedingly wondered, whence such kind love and affection, and so many vertues as he continually beheld in him should proceed. By this time the night approached, and they still made towards, till by the counsell of Parismus they cast anchor, determining to stay there till the next morning. Pollipus likewise seeing the ship wherein he was, sailed so fast from the company of his friends,

friends, with his sword cut a sunder all the tackles and cords, that the sailes fell over-board, and he all night lay hailing upon the sea, the weather being very calm, determining next morning to compell such as were remaining under Hatches, to conduct him back to the other ship, whom he knew would not stray farre from his company. The morning being come, the ship was with the tide brought back again, that the Partners of Barzillus ship got a sight thereof, with which netes they came to the Prince, who was accompanied by Adonius his Page, which netes so revived him, that he presently came up, by which time they assuredly knew it was the Pyrates ship, and Pollipus seeing them Good waving his sword above his head, in sign of victory, and being both met, Parismus with great joy embraced him, commending his valour: and Adonius stood by, being affected with such inward joy, as altogether want the skill to expresse.

When Pollipus declared unto them the manner of his victory, and calling up such as were in the ship, who expecting nothing but death, were unwilling to shew themselves, but at last came like men again, being many of them so grievously wounded, that it pitted Parismus to see the estate they were in: he demanded of them of whence they were, who told him, that they had sworn not to reveale the truth thereof to any. But since it was so that they must needs, they began in this sort. We were servants unto Oswald the Generall of our company, whom this worthy Knight hath slain, himself a servant likewise to the mighty Andramart, Governour of the Isle of Rocks, so termed, for that the same is not to be entered but one way by reason of the mighty Rocks that in compass the Island. My Master continually brought unto him such riches as he could get upon the Sea, and had you fallen into his hands, either he would have conveyed you as Prisoners, from whence you should never have escaped. In which we have continued a long time, but being fallen into your hands, we intreat you to save our lives, whose deaths will nothing at all profit you.

The Prince hearing this report, was wonderfully troubled in minde, and began to conjecture that the same Pyrates that had betrayed them in the desolate Island, and fled with his espoused Laurana, were likewise of Andramartis servants, which caused him to conferre with Pollipus, who was troubled with the very same thought, and grounding their hopes thereon, they determined to make triall thereof, but first they questioned with Oswalds servants, to see if they could gather any comfortable report from them, who told them, that it was a great while since they were in the Island, and therefore they could no way inform them thereof.

But these noble Knights hearts were so revived with this report of Andramart, that they assuredly perswaded themselves that they should hear some news of Laurana, and with that determination, they made choise of such of the Pyrats as they thought were fittest for their guides, and with all the haste they could hastened thitherwards, once again committing their fortune to the mercy of the seas.

Not many dayes after, they by happy successe in travell, were come near the Island of Rocks, (the wished place of their expectation) then Parisimus and Pollipus began to consult betwixt themselves for their best landing, for that it was assured them, that it was impossible to enter by force: for the passage was continually strongly guarded, and all things so artificially contrived, for the disadvantage of such as should attempt any thing, that it was altogether vain to think that way to enter.

These discomforts drave them to the triall of their uttermost wits, for by the perswasion they had to finde Laurana there, they determined (though the attempt were never so dangerous) to make tryall thereof, or Parisimus rather determined to be detained there as a prisoner, then to leave any thing unperformed whereby he was put in any comfort of his long and wished expectation.

Therefore calling to them such as were the servants of Oswald, they told them, that the conquest of that place wholly rested

rested in their powers: therefore Parisimus said, if you will condescend to follow my direction here, I do not doubt but easily to accomplish the same, and for your truth, reward you so kindly, as you shall no way need to feare the fury of Andramart, who maketh no other account of you, but to keep you as his Vassals and Slaves, in bondage and cruell servitude, whereas if you will be faithfull and true unto me, I will set you at liberty, and reward you to your hearts content. For I my self am Governour of a Country far exceeding this place, whither I will conduct you with me, if I happily achieve my desire herein, or if my determination faileth herein, you shall safely return unto our Ships, and be acquitted from all fear of his revenge.

The Pyrates hearing the courteous speeches of Parisimus, having also in the time they had been in his company, noted his Princely behaviour, and on the other side, weighing the estate they remained in, being his Prisoners, on whom he might inflict a cruell punishment if they should refuse to obey him in the request he had made, and also considering the little account Andramart had alwayes made of them, and the cruelty he used to them: All these considerations wrought such a change in the hearts of these poor Slaves, that they freely condescended to follow his directions in any thing he should demand.

Parisimus was glad of their consent, but fearing to trust them, he uttered these speeches. Sirs, I thank you for your willingness to pleasure me, but pardon me though I make some question of your loyalty, for that I have been already deceived by men of your profession: and as I suppose of Andramartis servants, by whose unfaithfulness these miseries that we are fallen into are happened. Whereupon he tooke occasion to report unto them the treachery of the Pyrats in the desolate Island, thereby to make unfaithfulness seeme odious in their sights.

The Pyrates moved with such confidence to be true unto them, that they were fully assured of their faith, and being now  
near

near the place of their landing, admiring the wonderfull strength of the same, thus they continued in their stratagem. *Parismus*, *Pollipus*, and *Barzillus* (who would needs accompany them) armed themselves with the best Armour they had, and putting on Sea Cownes (whereunder they conveyed their Swords so secretly, that none could discern the same) were conducted as conquered by the Pyrates, unto the passage into the Island, and *Adonius* in their company (who by no means would leave them.) Which the Wardians perceiving, and knowing *O. walds* servants, and thinking the rest to be Prisoners, carelessly laid aside their weapons, nothing suspecting their intent, kindly welcomed their fellows. and conducted them with joy. past their places of resistance. which the Knights perceiving, suddenly severed themselves, and with their weapons drawn, valiantly laid about them, that they soon had slain such as resisted them. The Pyrates seeing this happy successe, went on with *Parismus* and *Pollipus* towards *Andramarts* Castle, which when they had shewn them, they desired (being terrified with feare of *Andramarts* cruelty) to return unto their Ships, who laughing at their timorousness, gave them leave to depart with *Barzillus*, who undertooke to keepe the passage that none might enter to endamage them.

## CHAP. XXV.

With what danger *Parismus* entred *Andramarts* Castle, and how they were by him brought in danger of their lives, and how afterwards they slew him, and his two Brethren.



After this conquest obtained, all things as yet falling out according to their wished desires, *Parismus* and *Pollipus* only attended by *Paris* *Adonius*, made toward the Castle where by reason that it was late, they could not enter, but secretly conveyed themselves into

into a heap of short shrubs, and bushes that grow by the Castle wall, sufficient to hide them in, and there determined to tarry their nights repose. This exploit was so suddenly performed, that those within the Castle had no knowledge thereof, which fell out well for the two Knights, who quietly rested in that place, being no way molested that night, but were exceedingly grieved to hear the groanes, cries, and grievous complaints, of such as remained in Prison, which continued in such cruel misery, as it were too heavy to report.

Early the next morning these noble minded Knights, having with wise consideration, weighed the greatest peril of their whole attempt, attended their first opportunity, which was fell out. Sitting in their secret thron, they espied some of the servants passe in and out at the Castle gate, whether they presently went, and came to the Porter with these speeches. Porter (quoth *Parismus*) open the Gate and let us in. The Porter seeing them was so amazed, that he stood like one that were senselesse, but calling, by his better remembrance, toge- ther Sir Knight (quoth he) it is perilous to enter here, for he assured if you once come within the gates, it is impossible for you to returne. So too (quoth *Parismus*) open the gate. With that the Porter began to ring a bell, to call all his forces, but was soon hindered from proceeding by *Pollipus*, who gave him so deep a wound on the Arme, that he was forced to let go, but that little time of ringing, was a sufficient warning to those within, who by multitudes came flocking to the Gate, and opened the same, and presently many offered to enter, but they being stopped by reason of their number, shut to the same again, and ran unto *Andramarts*, who hearing their report, presently commanded by his best Knights to arme themselves, he likewise armed himself, and went down to the gate, which he commanded to be opened and saying no more but only two Knights (being selfe not doubting, to speak to them) commanded his Wardians to carry them to prison, by which means they had obtained

casion to enter with their swords, where drawing their swords, they stood upon their defence, which Andramartus men be began to laugh at, thinking them foolish to resist them: but set out to their sorrow.

For Parismus began to say about him, and Pollipus to be sent him, that immediately they had slain two of Andramartus servants, which the rest perceiving, all at once began to assail these Champions who placed themselves in such order, that they easily withstood their force, and by requisite skill furthered themselves, that still the assailants perished: and in short space they had slain one half of them, and the rest seeing their party still decrease, began to draw back, which turned to their destruction, for these knights perceiving them to quail, so furiously assailed them, that they all there ended their lives: which others that stood by perceiving, fled into another Court, and that a strong gate against the knights that pursued them, and in the mean time by the commandment of Andramartus, they were inclosed within that Court, by such as while they were in this Court, went out at a posterior Gate, and fastened that Gate at which they entered so surely, that it was impossible for them to get out, by which means they were inclosed in that Court.

Which when they beheld, they perceived it to be no other then a strong Prison: for it was encompassed with a mighty stone wall, and no passages but the two Gates, by which means they were betrayed into the hands of Andramartus, unless by some strange means they should be delivered: This drove these knights into such vexation that they could not tell what to do, nor how to behave themselves. Andramartus seeing his men thus inclosed only by two knights, greatly admired their valour and also marvelled what the occasion of their quarrell might be, which he desired to know, fearing the treachery of his servants that kept the passage by means, whereof before that time, he ever thought himself in security, he spoke unto them looking from over the wall in this sort: Knights (quoth he) what seek you in this place, what hath moved you

you to offer such outrage against my servants. If any that be longed unto me have offered you hurt, I am ready to let him make you sufficient satisfaction: if none hath done you offence, I would wish you to depart, without bringing your selves into further danger: for so much I regard your good (beholding your valour) that I would be loath to seek revenge by the death of my servants, but let you at liberty, upon this promise, that you depart without offering me any further injury.

Parismus thus replied, If thou art the owner and ruler of this Castle (as I suppose) then know that we are such as go in search of a lost friend, whom we assuredly think thou unjustly detained: for none but the self would be such a courteous person as to hearing the greivance thou wast to travellers, and the continual outrages thou attempted by sea, whereof we have had sufficient trial, we determinately came, as well to avenge our wrongs, as also to requite the discourse we have found by thy servants, since which our coming, thou knowest what we have begun, and our determination is to go forward, unless thou wilt purchase us that courtesy to let us see the prisoners thou detainest, which if thou deniest, as for thyself we are fully bent to purchase the thing we came for, by the purchase thereof, to buy our greatest blood: therefore let us see what thou wilt do for me, challenge that, if thou hast any spark of honourable knight hood to thee in the same honourably and not in treacherous loss, which will make our revenge more sharp.

Andramartus hearing the speeches of the valiant Parismus, could not well retain what said to him, for in one while perceiving to detain them in that place, but not confidently trusting the strength thereof, that thought was soon vanishes, then he began to conjecture that Laurana was the cause, in whose search they came, and he thought that if she should be taken from him, it would be more grievous then a thousand deaths, he resolved to offer them the sight of the prisoners, fearing that they would otherwise do him some mischief. At last a

multitude of sundry cogitations so oppressed his mind, that he determined to try the uttermost of their power, and to put them in the most extremity that might be: and therefore returned them this answer.

Those knights (quoth he) whose malice I nothing fear, know that I will not in any respect yield your request, and therefore content your selves with this answer, that I am determined (since you refuse my gentle offer) to detain you here, untill your pride be somewhat abated, and by that time, I hope you will with you had accepted my offer: and with these words departed, which vexed the two knights, the rather for that they were void of means to seek revenge: being inclosed in such sort, that there was no way for them to escape. And thus they continued all that night in most heavy ease, not being able to take one minutes rest. In which time Pollipus according to his wonted manner, tried his wit with devising how to unloosen the Gates, or escape their imminent danger.

Parisus on the other side, had his mind troubled with thousand cogitations of his beloved Laurana, whom he thought utterly to be there imprisoned, which drove him into his good hope, that notwithstanding the extremity of Andramart he should have a countenance of greater joy then before he had been, which rejoiced Pollipus and poor Adonias, whose heart was much grieved to see the perill his dear friends were like to endure.

Andramart began to conjecture, that if Laurana were the Lady whom they sought, that it was his best counsellor to keep them as prisoners still in that place, and not destroy themselves. As before he had determined to do himself of that doubt, he presently called Leda unto him and brought her unto a secret place, where she might privately behold the two knights, who there together, as he said, quoth he, there are newly arrived at my castle, the two knights, whom I suppose are come in search of my daughter Laurana: therefore I desire you to relieve me. For if I shall know of them, I will not use such

rigour towards them, as I am determined: but for her sake (whose sight I desire with cogitations) I will remit the offence I have taken against them, for the slaughter of my servants, whom you see lie dead at their feet.

Leda all this while diligently beheld these knights, but knew them not, by reason of their strange Armour: but at last she espied Adonias, whom she very well knew, thereby assuring her self that it was Parisus and Pollipus that were in Armour, and fearing that the words Andramart used, rather did proceed from a policy to fit his mind, then otherwise to intend their good, for that he was full of treachery, she made him this answer: Sir, I know not whence these knights are, neither did I ever see them before: but I would that I might be so happy, as to carry any such good news to my Lady, or were he so happy as to arrive in this place, that he might be at your courteous disposition, who, I am sure, for my Mistress sake, would intreat him well: but had Andramart marked her countenance, it would have betrayed that which she concealed, and he desired: For she thought the time very long, untill she were come to her Lady with these joyfull news: and he being satisfied with her answer, let her depart to her Mistress Chamber, where she was no longer entered, but she declared unto her the cause why Andramart had called her forth, and that she was assured Parisus and Pollipus were arrived: rehearsing how they had slain above twenty of Andramarts servants, and that they were inclosed in an inner Court, where they remained in very good estate.

Laurana was so revived with joy to hear her deare Lord named, that her heart leapt within her: and a thousand times embraced Leda, for bringing her that happy news. Then she began to consider of the estate they remained in, being inclosed that they could not get out, which thought was most grievous unto her, but by the comfortable speeches of Leda, she was in great assurance of their happy escape out of all dangers, in which good hope she remained, with a most longing desire, to



hearsome news of them. Andramarc determining not to be such rogues to himself, then, for that he had in him some sparks of humanity, called sufficient men to be ministered unto them, fortifying his Castle so strongly as he could possibly devise. He was likewise given to understand, that the passage towards the Sea was strongly fortified, and defended that none could passe that way, which brought a great terror in his mind.

The imprisoned Knights continued in great care, earnestly studying to rid themselves from that thralldome. At last they concluded in the silent time of the night, to set Adonius on the wall, who could get downe, and goe to Barzillus, who would send them some Cordes, wherewith they could make a Ladder, which was the readiest means, to further their intent: which Violetta undertooke most willingly, nothing regarding the danger she should put her self into thereby. And so with much adoe they got her to the top of the Wall, which began to fall, when she saw the height she should leape downe, being unaccustomed to such perills. But remembering the parties for whose sake she should undertake that hazard, arming her selfe with an undaunted courage, not agreeable to her sexe and weak nature she leapt downe, and she (each get of the fall, and with a joyful heart went towards the place where Barzillus remained, which she could scarcely find by reason that it was dark, and remembering the danger of the place, she thought every Bush that encountered her selfe, had been her enemy. But with more then accustomed boldness in her sexe, she soon arrived at the Passage where Barzillus was, not sleeping but carefully attending his charge, who despying Adonius requested to know how his dear Lord and Pollipus fared: who declared unto him, essentially the estate they remained in, and the cause of his coming; which Barzillus presently performed, having good store of such provisions aboard his Shippe, and leaving the custody of the Passage to such of his company, as he knew to be both couragi-

ous and faithfull: he departed and went with Adonius unto the Castle againe, and with that Ladder mounted the top of the same: so that both of them went over unto the Knights, who most joyfully welcomed Barzillus. After having talked them, and conferred about their exploits, he their intreaty he departed againe unto his charge: whereon depended the libertie of all their fortunes: for that they knew others of Andramarc: sea-borne, were abroad, whose arrival might much endamage them. To prevent which, he behoved them to have a speciall regard: being glad that they had gotten this device, presently put the same in execution, and got over into the next Court, the Castellanie of which place in their opinion, excelled for sumptuousness all the buildings that ever they beheld. In the midst of the Court was a stately erected Fountaine, whereon were placed many beautiful images of most curious engraven worke, the pleasantness of which place much delighted their troubled senses to behold: under which Fountaine they stayed, as beforesaid the gottish buildings, stately Arches, sumptuous Gallies, that outwardly adorned the place, expecting the cheerful light of the Sun, to comfort them in their distresse, which presently began to show his splendant beams, which glittered upon the glass windows, that the place seemed another Paradise, and there they attended the conclusion of their attempt, either to their comfort or confusions.

The first that entered the Court, they laid hands on, and by compulsion, urged him to declare what force was in the Castle, who upon promise that they would not offer him violence told them, that lately there arrived at the Castle two of Andramarc: Brethren, being esteemed men of great courage, which inhabited the further parts of that Island, who were determined to make tryall of their strength that day: the eldest named Guimor, the other Bramon. And that Andramarc determined, if that his Brother failed, himselfe would make tryall of his fortune, but if all of them failed, he had hundred servants ready in Armour, to aid him.

Parisimus hearing his speeches, began greatly to despair of victory, considering that such a number were in readiness only against them two, but such was the constant resolution of these two knights, that choosing the fittest place, for their furtherance in fight, they determined to try the uttermost of their Fortitude.

Andramart the next morning being early up, and discoursing with his Brethren about their affaires, by chance looked out at a window, and espied where the Knights were (that he thought had been safe enough) were walking at liberty, which struck such a terrour to his mind, that at the very sight thereof, his heart failed him, which so altered his former purposes of cruelty, that he thought it his best course to use himself towards them, as best agreed with an honourable mind. For notwithstanding that oftentimes in tyrannicall manner, he persecuted such as never offended him, yet he often shewed many tokens of a courteous and virtuous mind, though altogether darkened by his cruelty: which together with the fear he had of these Knights valour, and seeing their resolution, caused him to come to his Brethren, with these speeches Behold (quoth he) ponder are the Knights that have escaped out of the place I had inclosed them in, and are come to work my further danger, having already by their valour slain twenty of my best servants: two more goodlier Knights did I never behold, which maketh me pittie they estate they are in, being likely now to suffer death by your invincible strength, and were it not, that I had sent for you to ayde me herein, and that it might in some measure touch me with the name of a Coward, I would use them in the kindest sort I could devise, and remit all further cause of strife. For I suppose they are come in search of a Lady that remaineth in this Castle, whose presence is the only preserver of my life, which being taken from me will soon end my dayes: Therefore good Brethren resolve me of the best course to be taken hereon.

\* Guilmor being of a proud and haughty disposition, and scorning at the lenity of Andramart (whose heart was touched with an insupportable fear,) would make him no answer, but presently he went and armed himself, which they beholding did the like, and altogether went down into the Court. And without any speeches, the two Brethren being full of scorn, full of pride, fully assuring themselves of the victory, assailed Parisimus and Pollipus.

Who seeing no greater odds but one to one, entered the Combats so cheerfully, as it had beene a sport or pastime, which continued a good while, betwixt them without any great disadvantage on either party: the noise of whose weapons (clashing on their Armour, came to Lauranaes hearing, who could by no means take any rest that night,) for fear and thought taking, least Andramart should work the death of her dear Lord and friend, that on a suddain starting to a window that looked into the Court, she espied the four Knights Combating, assuring her self that her friends were two of them: whom she knew not, but as she was informed by Leda to be those in the blew Armour. Whose sight much revived the afflicted heart of Laurana with joy, but on the contrary part, the great danger she saw them in, as much tormented her with fear.

Andramart standing by to behold the issue of this Combate (having an eye to the window where Laurana was) unfortunately espied her looking out; Whereupon immediately he sent four of his servants, to remove her into a strong and close Prison, farre from their sight, which so tormented the mind of Laurana, together with the fear she conceived for Parisimus, having no friend but Pollipus, intreated with a number of enemies) that had not Leda laboured the contrary, she had there over come her vitall senses, with extremitie of sorrow. Still continued the Combate betwixt the Champions but Pollipus seeing himself soze wounded by Bramon, was so enraged with fere, that with all his force & skill he laboured with such puissance against his assailing enemy, that he had some

told him at his foot dead: which Andramart perceiving, came to Pollipus with these speeches.

Knights (quoth he) thy task is not yet ended, for heere art thou to revenge the death of him thou hast now conquered, where-with he began to assault Pollipus with all his force: who answered his blowes with the like courage, by which time Parisimus had left his enemy breathlesse, who lay wallowing at his feet, strangled with his owne blood.

Andramart seeing the same, would have fled, (fearing his owne doomefall) but Pollipus seeing his intent, thought not or never to shew proofe of his valour: therefore to rid themselves from further danger, with both his hands stroke with such violence upon his crest, that the weaknesse of his armour yielding to the sharpnesse of his sword, and the force of his blow, so assaighnt him, that he staggered: whereupon Pollipus closing with him, overthrow him on the ground, and thrust his sword through his body in divers places.

By which time Andramarts servants seeing the distresse their Master was in, all at once assailed Parisimus and Pollipus, who could not well tell how to endure any further assault, but drawing back to the corner of the Court, placed themselves in such sort, that their enemies could not greatly endamage them, but still received the worst, most of them being in small continuance of fight, soze wounded, and many of them were slaine, so that they seemed therewith like men that were desperat. One among the rest, that Andramart had before taken prisoner, but for his good qualities had againe released, as one of his chiefeest servants, whose name was Tellamor, seeing Andramart slaine, and marking the brave and vallant courage of these two Knights, used all the perswasions he could, to withdraw his fellows from their madnesse: who still followed their revenge eagerly, without any consideration of the little good they should reap thereby; at last some of them began to listen to him, by which means Pollipus had respite to breath himself, and Parisimus perceiving them to stand doubtfully debating matters between themselves, began to speak to them in this sort.

Masters

Masters (quoth he) me thinks men that are indued with reason (as you should be) should not shew themselves so inconsiderate, as to seek revenge against those that never harmed you: what causeth you thus wilfully to endanger your selves by offering us violence? you will say, the death of your Master: why what was he but a Tyrant? what account did he make of you, but to keep you as his vassals and slaves, in bondage and extrem servitude? How was he esteemed of any, but as a cruell homicide, a Robber, and spoiler of poore Personages, whereby himselfe, and such as were his servants, were hated and despised of all good people? Did he not continually tyrannize over you in most cruel sort, that many of you were put to shamefull offices, and some very displeasure in danger of death and imprisonment by his fury? what doe you thinke was the cause of our arrivall heere? not (as you suppose) to make you captives, or to get wealth, or the spoile that thieves and robbers seeke after, nor yet to offer violence to Andramart, or any of you; but to redeme a lost friend that your Master hath wrongfully detained. I then let that wisedome rule your minds, that should be in men, and shew what you require at our hands, and we will in any reasonable respect satisfy you. We are not determined to stay among you to beare rule over you, thereby to despoile you of your wealth: but will leave this Castle and the riches thereof, as yours to dispose of, which you may quietly enjoy now your cruell Master is dead, whose life would have been cause of your further servitude but by his death you are freed from the cruell bondage and slavery wherein you lived, and have by the same occasion, the choise of electing, or refusing quiet content, and peaceable wealth. Parisimus had no sooner ended these speeches, but by a general consent (being perswaded thereto by Tellamor, whose counsell they highly esteemed) they cast downe their weapons, and yielded themselves, which greatly cheered the hearts of both the Knights, being before that, in great perill and hazard of their lives, having taken the faithfull oath of their loyalty.

Pollipus pulling off his helmet, began greatly to extoll and commend their wisdome, in that they had that good consideration to conceive aright of *Parismus* speeches: promising them, that by his consent *Parismus* should so highly content them before their departure, that they should for ever account themselves happy by their arrival. And having taken order for their security (not trusting them, notwithstanding their oaths, because they knew them to be unaccustomed to virtuous humanity) they were conducted to very fair and sumptuous Chambers by *Tellamor*, and there had their wounds carefully dress'd by *Adonius*, whose tender heart bled drops of warm blood, to see the purple gore that issued from their mangled bodies, whose care and diligent tendance, was a great comfort unto them at all times: by means whereof, they made such account of him, that they would not have parted from him for any good in the world. *Tellamor* having been virtuously brought up (being also a Knight of good account and honorable parts) carefully provided all things necessary, and with such affection tendered their safety, that there could no mischief be attempted by *Andramarts* servants (whose heads still ruminated on treachery) but he would still seek to appease and prevent the same, whose diligence was well marked of the two Knights, whereby they grew into good liking of him, and much commended his courtesie.

## CHAP. XXVI.

How *Parismus* being past all hope to find *Laurana*, at the last found her to his exceeding joy. And how afterwards leaving the custody of the Castle to foure of *Andramarts* servants, he departed towards *Thessaly*, and by the way visited old *Antiochus* in the desolate Island.



**D**arius all this while could by no means be quiet for thinking on *Laurana*, the remembrance of whose absence was continually in his mind, more then was usually wont to be, whereby his perswasion of some happy newes of her abode in that place, still increased: which caused him the next day to resolve himself by searching, for otherwise he could not learne, for that *Andramart* would not suffer any of his servants but only four, to see or have any knowledge of *Laurana* (who were all slain with their Master) and coming to *Pollipus* they went to search the castle. And first of all being directed by *Tellamor* they came to the pylons, where were many strangers of sundry Nations, lying in the most wofull and lamentable misery that ever eye beheld: their joints and flesh being woyn with the weight of the Irons wherewith they were fettered, who then began to fear their utter destruction which they had long expected: but contrary to their thoughts and expectations, they were all set at liberty, which much revived their dying hearts.

From thence they went unto the Dungeons of the Castle, wherein were many distressed wights remaining, that of long time had not seen the pure light, nor felt the comfortable beate of the Sun, and now to their great joy were set at liberty, who highly applauded the valour, and exceeding labour and bounty of these two most noble and courteous Knights.

*Parismus* having not yet found the joy he expected, could not harbour in his minde any rest, untill that he had searched

all over the Castle, saving the place wherein Laurana was, which was so secretly conveyed amongst the other buildings, that the way thereto could hardly be found, whereby *Parisinus* was deceived. And thinking verily that there was not any place but he had already searched, entred into most heavy and sorrowfull cogitations: and being wonderfully discouraged of all comfort, wandered from *Pollipus* (who was very earnestly in talke with *Tellamor*) and by chance happened on a darke entry, which place seemed to agree with his heavy disposition. Into which he having entred, and a while walked up and downe, he found a doore at the further end thereof fast shut, which caused him to cease his mourning, and begin to study how to open the same, which he had soone effected: and entring further, he found a most stately Chamber, wherein were divers signes that it was not unfrequented, but being unarmed, he would not too rashly goe on further, least he might unawares run into danger. Therefore softly lifting up the hangings, behind which was a doore into another Chamber, where he beheld a Lady sadly sitting upon the earth, with her back towards him, leaning her head upon the bed's side.

At which sight his heart began to be astonisht exceedingly with admiration to behold; but looking more earnestly, he espied a Damozell with blubbered cheeks, weeping to heare the restless plaints her mistress had made: who having with extreme sorrow bewailed her unfortunate estate, being likewise terrified with remembering the danger *Parisinus* was in, and grieved to be abridged his sight, was fallen into a silent slumber: wherein she had not long continued (but at the very instant when *Parisinus* entred the Chamber) she dreamed her foot behind her, whereunto she awaked, and earnestly looking about her, she espied him, wherewith she was extremely amazed, fearing least she had beene still in a dreame, that she stood fearfully trembling betwene an earnest hope, and a comfortlesse dispaire. But *Parisinus* as soone as he beheld her face knew her, and tooke her in his armes, with such

exce.

exceeding joy to them both, as that the tears proceeding from kind affection, ran down both their cheeks in abundance. And *Leda* seeing her Lord knelted at his feet, with such exceeding joy as is not to be exprest, who had no leisure to speak unto her, his heart was so replenished with exceeding content by the sweet and delectable presence of his vertuous and loving *Laurana*, whom a thousand times he solaced in his armes, and as many times greeted her ruddy lips with sweet kisses, in which loving embracings they continued a good space, being unable to think of any thing else.

But at the last, having somewhat recreated themselves with that kindnesse, *Parisinus* uttered these speeches: Most kind and loving Princesse since wee are thus happily met, and that we have now no further cause of sorrow, it would be grievous to make rehearsall of our sad mishaps since our parting, therefore let your heart be at quiet and now forget all former griefes, which were unfortunately occasioned by my negligence and accept my acknowledgment of offences for a sufficient satisfaction, and let your vertuous bounty still bring mee farther in admiration of your vertue, unto whom I am most infinitely bound in all the bonds of true and loyall friendship. To recount my noble friend *Pollipus* his kindnesse (by whose valour I have escaped many imminent dangers) and the kind attendance I have had of my Adonius, cradeth a longer circumstance: and therefore at this time I will omit the same, only desiring you to make such estimation of them, as of my most dearest friends, and but by whose means I had never enjoyed the fruition of your heavenly company, I now account all pain pleasure, and the reward of my travels so bountifull as all the worlds dignity cannot counterbail: having at last attained the height of my desire, and fulnesse of all felicity, by enjoying your vertuous presence, whose absence was more bitter unto mee then a thousand deaths.

Many other most loving and kind speeches past, their kisses being often interrupted with sweet kisses, and hearty embracings, that in this delight they would have continued a long

long



long time, but that the desire *Parismus* had to acquaint *Pollius* with this happy newes, and *Laurana* to see her friend, caused them to break off, and walk out unto him, who had quickly missed *Parismus*, and began earnestly to enquire for him. In which time of his absence, he had sought in most places of the Castle, but still missed the dark passage wherein he was entred, which drove him into a carefull wonder what should become of him. Whereupon he began greatly to fear that he was by some treachery endangered, but suddenly in the midst of this his perplexity he espied him with *Laurana* coming towards him: which sight so exceedingly rejoyced his heart to see, that it was impossible to express.

And coming to *Laurana* he revered her with all humility, and she most kindly saluted him, giving him many hearty thanks for his honourable Love and kindness ever shown in the manifold paines he had taken in her behalf. Likewise speaking to *Adonius*, she greatly commended, and kindly thanked him for his diligent service to *Parismus*, promising to reward him with all kindness.

So with exceeding joy on all sides, they spent the rest of that day in pleasant communications, having all things necessary readily provided by *Tellamor*, and diligently ministered by such prisoners as had received their liberty: Who had now so well refreshed themselves with wholesome meates, that they were of sufficient strength, both for their own defence, and the safety of those that had set them at liberty, whom they exceedingly tended, to undergo any danger.

Which *Parismus* perceiving, presently sent a messenger to *Barzillus*, to certify him of their happy success, who leaving the custody of the passage to some of his trustiest Souldiers, came to be partaker with them in their rejoycings.

But notwithstanding when all thought there was no more cause of sadness, their quiet and pleasures were darkned by the heavy countenance of *Laurana*, who could not forget the death of her young Son *Parismenos*, but still was purposed to conceal the same from *Parismus*, which made them greatly to marvail.

And upon a day when *Pollius* by the intreaty of *Parismus* had rehearsed the whole discourse of all their adventures in the Desolate Island, and the occasion of their arrivall in that place, *Laurana* with these sad remembrances was put in mind deeply to compare her own miseries with theirs, and found them to be greater, for that they were all in safety, but she missed her young Son who was untimely lost, which struck such a sadness in all her senses, that suddenly she burst into abundance of tears. Which drove them all into an admiration, that *Adonius* and *Leda*, seeing her teares, could not refrain from partaking with her in that sadness, but as the custome of women is, wept for company. *Parismus* marvailing what was the cause of her sorrow, and desirous to know the same, for that his heart therewith was exceedingly tormented, most earnestly intreated her to unfold the cause of her griefe, that he might (if it were possible) to comfort her therein.

*Laurana* being unwilling in the least degree to show her self unwittfull to his will, began to declare the manner of her bringing to that place by the Pirates, after they had betrayed him on the Desolate Island, as also the kindness she had received at *Andramarts* hands: and how that from time to time he had used her in most honourable sort.

But my Lord (quoth she) *Andramarts* had a Sister named *Adamasia*, who many times urged me to yield to Love her Brother: Which when he could not effect by no persuasions: First she imprisoned my Servant *Leda*, next she withheld from me, (the cause of this my sadness) my young Son that was born in this unlucky place, whom I caused to be named *Parismenos*, and with cruell torments afflicted my body, and daily caused two Old women to whip me in most cruel sort, which I was contented to endure. But when she saw that all this would not prevaile, she caused the Nurse that kept *Parismenos*, to come unto me with a message in this manner: that unless I would in every respect and without delay fulfill her demand, she would before my face strangle that tender Babe.

And being about that cruell deed, I intreated her to referre his punishment and unnaturall Deme untill the next day, since which time I never saw my tender Babe; nor is he, or his Nurse any where to be found: and afterwards again, she continued her former manner of cruelty.

Now Andramart all this while by persuasions of his Sister, absented himself from me (for that she had promised him to obtain my consent to his request) nothing misdoubting the cruelty she daily used unto me. But at length seeing his fate still frustrated, and finding (as well by mine owne report, as by other manifest proofes) her treachery, and her misery, he would with his Sword have slain her; but she running away to avoid his rigour, barst her necke downe a paire of Staires.

The two Old women he likewise slew with his owne hands: my Servant he sent unto me, and ever after that, blessed me in a most kind and good sort. And the very day when you entred in sight in this Court, he caused me to be lodged in the place where you found me. The greatest cause of this my sadness is, the loss of my young Sonne, whose death was untimely, and whose presence would have expelled such sad thoughts as have possessed my mind: and disquieted the happy content I should receive by your honourable presence.

Parismus having heard the summe of this Tragickall report could not chuse but grieve, especially to thinke of the misery she had endured, and the death of his young Sonne, whom he had never seen. that what with his and Laaraanes sadness, all the whole company were grown into a heavinesse. But with the comfortable persuasions of Pollipus, the remembrance of these griefes were somewhat mitigated. Many dayes after they staid in this Castle in good and quiet estate, untill the longing desire Parismus had to returne to Thessaly, caused him to make provision for his departure.

Tellamon having knowledge thereof, desired that he would vouchsafe he might attend on him in his departure, for that himself was of Salmacia, who travelling in the service of a

Sister

Sister that he had lost, was taken by those Rapiers, regarding the whole truth thereof; whereby Parismus knew that to be Brother unto the Dams; all in whose rescue Chris was wounded, as hath bene before declared: which caused him to make greater account of him than before he had done, and enter into a deepe insight of his former countenance, being then and with all the best kindness he could, yet he him changed for the great friendship he had shown him, and his friend Pollipus since their arrivall: telling him that he needed not to make any further search for his Sister, for that she was in the Court of Thessaly in good health, repeating the whole circumstance of the many kind favours she had shown at her bandage, and the manner how she was mended by the Doctors.

Which newes much rejoiced Tellamon's heart; as also that he had lived to be so happy, as to be esteemed of so worthy a knight as Parismus was: that having assurance of his Sister's safety, and his owne happy fortune, he was to be an occasion to himselfe to do him homage, as a souldier indebted unto his benefactor, to give him thanks for his good labour.

Parismus and Laaraana continuing in happy and peaceable contentment, by means of their good friends, having respect to blow others griefes, began to move the sad countenance of Pollipus, which they perceived to not please: which caused Parismus suspect that his old friend was not content with his love to Violenta, where he appeared straight: the Pollipus seeing his troubles for Laaraana were as an who, began to desire to hear some newes of Violentia, and entered into a resolution. And though there was no likelihood for him to attaine the purpose, yet the extremity of his sorrow made him so, that he thought he could no way content himselfe therewith, then to spend the rest of his life in her service, still answering (according to a most noble and constant resolution) never to depart from following the true zeal he had to purchase her labour. And sometimes he would spend many hours in secret contemplation and protestations of his true and loyal love, whereof (according to the humours of love-sick people) he thought he did in some measure ease his heart.

Which

Which behaviour of his Violetta well noting (as being infected with the selfe same disease) would oftentimes interrupt him in his sad lamentations with such conceits, that Pollipus wondered to see such wisdome in a Boy: but by reason that she was taken for no other then a Boy, he entered into no deeper consideration, of her actions. In the silent Night time Violetta did with such bitterness affect his complaints, that when he sighed, she likewise sighed: and if he chanced at any time to complaine of his bad Fortune, Violetta would as often blisse the happy time and hour when shee first saw him, and that she was so happy to be beloved of so honourable a Knight. The variable difference of whose joyes were contrary: for Pollipus (little thinking his Violetta had been so near him) continually spent his time in heavinesse, not being any way able to comfort himselfe with any hope of attaining his wished desire, being oftentimes terrified with the remembrance of her fall doom, and ventall to his fate: as also, the manifest mischances that might befall her, by that she had so wilfully thrust her self into, with a thousand other displeasing thoughts, sufficient enough to discourage any from presuming upon any good successe. He means whereof he continually remained in most heavy and sad estate, till deviling how to ease his heart of that care it endured, wherein he greatly troubled in constancy the fickle and wandring thoughts of others now a dayes, which are easily discouraged from persisting in their first resolutions, upon every small discomfure. Violettaes joyes were as exceeding, as his sorowes were extreme, for shee beheld continually the Constancy hee assigned in his heart to her towards, the noble gifts wherewith his mind was endued, the comelinesse of his goodly proportion which might well please a curious Ladies eye, his unconquered valour and prowess, whereby hee achieved, incredible victories with great fame: the great friendship and courteous behaviour that so abundantly flowed from his gentle heart whereby it was apparent, that he did not disdain the meanest person living.

Besides

Besides hearing the continuall complaints he made of her hard sentence, and the constancy of his resolution, for that hee determined to spend his life in her service: And all the pleasure she took in his company, being never from him in the day time, and his Bedfellow in the night, that she was witness to all his actions, vnting many kindnesse, which he full little thought proceeded from such affection.

And nothing deemed Violetta had been so prizing to all his Cogitations (though she poore soule never touched his body, but with a trembling fear remembering her own nakednesse, still being such a modest kind of bashfulnesse in her actions, as if many eyes had been beholding her disguise, very watchfully observing her behaviour, whereby her joyes continued in such a secret content as is not to be expressed.)

Yet one night when she had throwed her self within the bed as Pollipus lay tossing and tumbling by reason of the restless thoughts he endured: in the midst of his heavinesse, Violetta saying his sorowes, and to draw him from remembering them, uttered these speeches.

Sir Knight (quoth she) I do marvell what passion that is which so disempereth your quiet sleeper, and if my talk be not offensive unto you, I beseech you make me acquainted with the same for in all my life time I never beheld the like in any man. Poore Boy (quoth Pollipus, it were but folly for me to repelle that to thee whereof thou canst not judge: for that thy years are not of sufficiency to entertaine such Divine cogitations, Divine, quoth she, can Divine Cogitations so disemper mens wits? Wea, quoth Pollipus, for Love is a divine and heavenly gift, and love it is that so tormenteth me: not that I love, but that I am not beloved againe. For in Thessaly I loved a Damozell named Violetta, whose excellent Beauty and vertuous gifts, have intyalled my senses, that I fear me Boy, it will be to me a perpetuall heavinesse, whose absence is cause of my griefe: and not onely that shee is absent, but that I know not where to behold her attractive Beauty, for even at my coming from Thessaly, she was (I know

know not by what misadventure missing to my great sorrow, in whole continuall search, I am determined to spend the rest of these my wearisome dayes.

It is very much, me thinks ( quoth she ) that you will so much regard her good, that hath shown her self discourteous towards you, and surely you are not of my mind, in that you will take such paines to find her out, and in the end peradventure reap nothing but disdain for our good will: For it is likely she hath made choice of some other Knight, not so worthy to be beloved as your self, with whom she is departed: Then why will you hazard your person in the dangers incident to travell, and spend your time in purchasing nothing but your own discontent.

Well (replied Pollipus) howsoever I am rewarded, a thousand more perils then I can imagine shall not discourage me. For were I but so happy as once to find her, then would I commit the rest to my good fortune, which shall be sufficient, if I can but once again make my love known to her, that she may have some further tryall of my service. If she should not regard you (quoth she) according to your hearts content, I should account her the most discourteous Lady living: and were in her case, I would endure a thousand deaths, rather then shew my self ingratefull to so honourable and kind a friend, and because I would see the issue of her love, I desire you that I may be partaker with you in your travells: For though I am altogether unworthy to be esteemed of you, yet if you would vouchsafe me that kindnesse, I would both shew my self dutifull and diligent, and also rest continually bound unto you for the same. And thus farre I presume ( though my words may seem ridiculous ) that if ever you meet *Violetta*, she will yeeld unto your just suit, for I know *Violetta* well, and have been better acquainted with her thoughts, then I was worthy of, though she now hath forsaken her Fathers house, and hath absented her self, I know not upon what occasion.

Pollipus hearing the Pages words, smiled to think how farre it was from his power, and yet how kind he was to

him in such comfort. *Examerces* quoth he for thy good will, and if ever I meet *Violetta* I shall be willing to yeeld thee recompence for thy kindnesse. Then (quoth she) set your heart at rest and trouble not your self with these cares, but live in hope of some better successe: for my mind perswadeth me, that you shall find *Violetta* safely returned at your arrivall in *Thessaly*, and if you find it not so, then never hereafter credit my words, for I have already made tryall of the event of my presaging thoughts that I have oftentimes found things fall out even according as I have before deemed.

Pollipus hearing the boyes speeches, at the first took them as spoken of course, but being drawn out into a deep consideration of all his former qualities, began to make a doubt whether he should repose any credit in them or no, that his heart even with those speeches ( yet in his fancy bearing no shew of likelihood, was somewhat rebited and therefore determined to make tryall of the boyes divination: such vertue had *Violettaes* speeches, that they wrought an unexpected event of persuasion in the heart of the love sick Pollipus, who was easily drawn to yeeld conceit of any comfort, because he thought *Violetta* might be still in *Thessaly*, and so the Pages words proved true. The rest of that night they spent in slumbering sleep.

The next morning, Pollipus came to *Parismus* Chamber, with a farre more cheerefull countenance then he was wont, which caused them marvail at his sodaine alteration: and afterwards they spent some few dayes in great pleasure, and in the mean time made provision for their departure towards *Thessalie*, committing the government of the Castle unto two of *Andramarus* servants, taking their oath to yeeld the same to *Parismus* againe, upon his demand leaving all the rest likewise so highly contented, as that they accounted his arrival the best good fortune that ever befell them. The rest that had been prisoners there, departed every one their way that liked them best. *Parismus* finding the wind ye convenient for their passage, boted sail, himself being in *Barzillus* ship with

Pollipus and Laurana, having in his company three other ships laden with exceeding riches and treasure, such as Andramarus Pirates had taken at Sea, and made towards the desolate Island, according to the promise past to Antiochus: where within few dayes (the wind and weather labouring them, they safely arrived) they were most honorably and lovingly welcomed by the King and Queen, and especially by the Kings two Sons and Daughter, who admired the wonderful beauty of Laurana, accounting the travels those two Knights endured, worthily spent to redeem such and so vertuous a Lady.

## CHAP. XXVII.

How *Frenetta* was exceedingly in love with *Pollipus*, who remembering his love to *Violetta*, shunned her company, and also how *Frenetta* after his departure (being distracted with griefe) ended her life.



When *Parisnus*, *Pollipus*, and *Laurana* had sojourned many dayes in the desolate Island in great joy and mirth, when their hearts began to desire the sight of their native Countries: whereupon, they appointed the time of their departure within one moneth, which grieved *Frenetta* to hear of, for that she was far in love with *Pollipus*, unto whom she used many extraordinary kindneses, thereby to give him knowledg of her affections, but so far was his heart from thinking of any other love then *Violettas*, that he never noted the great kindneses she still used toward him, which on the other side caused *Frenetta* to increase the heat of her affections more and more. But in the end seeing him so little to regard her, nor scarce at all to entertain her courtesse with good looks, she determined (though it might be some blemish to her modesty) to manifest her affection unto him; which she presently effected, for finding him walking alone, attended

only

only by *Adonius*, he came into the Gallery where he was, kindly saluting him as though she would passe by, but *Pollipus* finding himself idle, thought to entertaine the time a while in some conference with her, and as kindly saluting her, said. Fair Lady, may I be so bold as to stay your journey, or if your businesse be not great, vouchsafe me your company, that am alone.

Sir (replied she) my businesse is not very great, therefore I am the willinger to stay, especially to bear you company, unto whom I am much bound, and a greater labour then my company would I grant, so that it stand with your honour to fulfill: therefore this liberall proffer I make unto you (whom I know will request nothing but that which is vertuous) that if in any convenient sort, I may do the thing which may pleasure you, it shall be your fault if you have not the same. I thank you heartily (quoth *Pollipus*) and if I should be ungratefull unto you for this your kindnesse, I should do much amisse. And for such desert in me as you speak of, I know none at all, but it is your abundant courtesse that vouchsafeth me such labour, which I know not how to requite neither can I be so bold as to bring my self farther into your debt, untill I have by my indeavours laboured to shew my self thankfull for that which you have already granted. Many other speeches past betwixt them, which if *Pollipus* had diligently marked, he might easily have seen the love *Frenetta* bare him, but he having his devotions bowed to another Saint, perceived it not, which none else but himself would easily have deserved. which still increased her burning affection, that at last fearing to misse the fit means was offered by so sweet opportunity, taking him by the hand, & withdrawing to a window that looked into a pleasant Garden, with a blushing countenance she uttered these speeches: Sir knight, contrary to y<sup>e</sup> manner of modest Maidens, I am compelled to hazard the revealing of y<sup>e</sup> which may turn to my dishonour, unless it please your vertues wise-dome, to give a favorable censure of your good meaning, which am constrained to do, as I have thereto, by the spot above you



you determine to make in my fathers Court, as also for that I see your mind cannot conceit thereof, without I my selfe make demonstration of the same. Wherefore most Noble Knight relying upon your understanding, that love hath seized my heart, with a desire to be beloved of you againe, which maketh me manifest the thing which modesty wills me to conceal. Wherefore I desire you to use that charitable opinion of me, as that my honour may no way be misconceited, and my grief relieved, which I would never have uttered, but that I shall for ever hereafter be banished your heavenly company, the affection I bear you being such, that unlesse you pity my estate, your departure will be the shortening of my dayes, and my restless sorrow thereby augmented in such sort that I shall for ever remain in heaviness.

Pollipus hearing her speeches was half astonished; and now calling to mind her former behaviour, well understood that her kindness proceeded from the affection she had uttered, that of a sudden he could not tell what answer to make her, that might in some measure quiet her mind, and rid himselfe from discourtesie. Vertuous Lady (quoth he) I see that I am more beholding unto you, then I either expected or have deserved, being sorry you have placed your affection on him, that had not recompenced your kindness by any merit, and one that is altogether unworthy to be so highly esteemed at your hands: but Lady as I am in no measure now able to requite you that thanks that I would, so I trust hereafter my ingratefulnes shall not cause you repent your kindness. At which instant Laurana by occasion entred the Gallerie, by meanes whereof they left off their speeches to salute her, of whose coming Pollipus was glad, and a while accompanied them, in such communication as occasion offered.

Violetta all this while had still noted Frenettaes behaviour towards Pollipus, and listened to their talk, which took a sudden fear into her mind, lest her speeches might move Pollipus to yield to her desire, for that she was very beautiful and besides that, the Daughter of a King that ever after she grew into

into an extreame jealousie of her, that Pollipus could never in all the time of his abode there, be in any place, but she would still attend him, that he wondered at the Pages diligent attendance, which proceeded not from the lawfull duty of a servant (as he supposed) but from the faithfull love of a friend.

Pollipus having left Frenetta with Laurana in the Gallerie, got to his lodging to meditate on Frenettaes rash motions, and disemperate love, and the manifold inconveniences that might arise thereby, as well to call his honour in question, for that it would be thought it was procured by his persuasions, as also for that it seemed she was grown to that desperateness in love, that unlesse she might enjoy the thing she desired, it would much endanger her selfe, and rather then he would think a thought to violate his vowed loyalty to Violetta, himselfe would endure death, for Violetta (though she were no Kings Daughter) yet by reason of her exceeding beauty, she was much spoken of in Thebes, and nothing inferiour to Frenetta in gifts of mind, the remembrance of whose perfection, together with his love, had so much bound him in the inviolable bonds of true friendship, to his first beloved, that for ever after, he eschewed all occasions to come in Frenettaes sight, but still kept company with Parismus, unto whom he unfolded the whole circumstance of that which had passed between him and Frenetta, which when Parismus understood, he told him that she was an honourable Lady, and that in his opinion, he should do her wrong to reject her love, which should proceed from a vertuous inclination, using many persuasions to that effect.

Which when Pollipus heard, he said. My Lord, I cannot so much wrong my dear Violetta, as to forsake to yield over my fancy to love another, and forget her perfections, in whose service I have vowed to spend the rest of my life. Then good my Lord, do not so much insure that vertuous Maiden, who in Thessaly hath so much honoured you for I will never yield to love any but her most worthy selfe, so long as my life doth last.

Parismus then answered, friend Pollipus, I would not any way wrong Violetta nor your selfe, if I ever saw any likely-hood that you should ever see her againe: And yet so much I commend your resolution, as that I shall ever extoll those honourable parts that rule your heart, whereby my self have bin preferred, and obtain the height of all felicity, neither do I utter any word to alter your affection from Violetta, but to make triall of your vertues which still continue perfect.

And since our abode in this place, may again turn to our disparagement and hinderance, I will by all means possible, hasten our departure towards Thessaly, whereby, by good hap, you may find the party that with-holdeth your happy joyes, unto whom I will use all the persuasions I can, to purchase your content. And also during our staying here, I will labour all that I can, to stay the increase of Frenettaes love. Adonius standing by, and hearing their speeches, had much ado to refrain from teares, which melted in his tender heart, to see the kindness of these two friends, and the care they took to find her in Thessaly, who was continually in their presence.

Pollipus ever after shunned all occasions, that Frenetta most earnestly sought to have some further conference with him, but when she plainly saw he nothing regarded her love, but still shewed her company, she fell into such heaviness, and let the griefe thereof so near to her heart, that in short time she grew so weak that she kept her chamber, not once uttering to any the cause of her sadness, though her Parents earnestly laboured to know the same, which turned their joy into care, and their former pleasure into heaviness.

Pollipus having knowledge thereof, would never come at her untill the very day of their departure, and choosing a convenient time when she was alone only attended by a Dam-sel, he entred her chamber, she no sooner espied him, but her poor heart began to leape for joy, expecting some kindness, but Pollipus taking her by the hand, said: Courteous Lady, I am at length come to your presence, to satisfie your minde for that which

which I would have you to know, your love to me, that am unworthy thereof) and the little account I seem to make of the same, which brought you to that weakness you remain in, which if it be so, I am most heartily sorry: but for that I am now departing this Country, I would now satisfie you in any thing I could: therefore I intreat you to mitigate the extremity of your passions, which I cannot salve, for that long since I bowed my service to a Lady in Thessaly, unto whom I am bound by many inviolable bonds of passed promises: neither can I be disloyall to her, without impeachment of mine honour, which is the onely jewel I most esteem: then let me intreat you to abstaine from loving him, that cannot shew himself so kind as he would, and you deserve; banish from your mind all good conceit, & opinion of me, that must against my will be ingratull; and if in any other sort I may do the thing with hazard of my life, that may content you, I am here ready to accomplish your will. And in my absence do not accuse me of inhumanity, for I may not nor will not do any Lady wrong: upon whose favour my life it were ten thousand times deare, dependeth.

Frenetta hearing his resolute and uncomfortable words, fell in a deadly sound, which her maid perceiving laboured to revive her againe; in the mean time he departed to Parismus, and having solemnly taken their leave of the King & Queen, who indured their departure with great heaviness, they hastened to their ships, and soon launched into the main, and with a prosperous gale, sailed towards Thessaly. Frenetta being revived from her trance, and missing Pollipus (whom she thought had bene still by her) fell into an extreme exclamation of his discourtesie, with that vehemency, that her brethren hearing her ragings, demanded the cause of her sorrow, which she uttered in all respects as hath been before declared. Which rashness in her, they reproved with such bitter tearmes, as that her care for Pollipus disdaine, did not so much grieve her, as their unkindness. What multitude of griefes and vexations, so overwhelmed her carefull and tender heart, that for ever

ever after, we continued in perpetuall exclamations against her cruell Destinies, that with the extremity of grief, she became Lunaticke and quite bereft of sense, and so ended her life.

Which mishap struck such a sorrow to old Antiochus and his Queens heart, that within short space, as by the first coming of the Knights, they had received their joyfull liberty, so by their last departure they received the cause of their death: leaving their Sonnes to rule the Island, who governed the same in such peacefull quietness, that within short space, it grew to be so famous as ever it had been in the first beginning of their Fathers reign.

#### CHAP. XXVIII.

How *Parismus* with prosperous successie arrived in *Thessaly*, and of the exceeding joy was made for his return.



Having prosperous success, *Parismus* within few dayes landed on the Shore of *Thessaly*, which he (for joy he was safely returned with his beloved *Laurana*) a thousand times saluted her with good looks. *Laurana* likewise felt her heart possess'd with an exceeding delight to behold her Native soyle, where her dear and carefull Parents lived, unto whom she should bring unspeakable comfort. *Pollipus* also he was animated to comfort, by an inward perswasion to hear some newes of his *Violetta*, and *Violetta* was affected with no lesse gladnesse then any of the rest, in that she was so happily returned with the vertuous Knight *Pollipus*, and the remembrance of her parents sight, which they much desired to enjoy, that their joyes on all sides were so exceeding, that there was no person whatsoever, but had his heart fully replenished with gladness every way.

When they were landed, *Parismus* determined to send a messenger to the City of *Thebes*, with report of their health and happy arrivall, which *Pollipus* desired to execute: and Ar-

ming

ming himself in an Azure armour, beset with Barres of Gold and gallantly mounted, with his spear in his rest he hastned towards the City (and as he rode along the Streets, multitudes of people forsooke their houses and business to behold him, and noting his gallant proportion, thereby remembered the want of the valiant *Parismus*, that their hearts were affected with a wonderfull perswasion that either it was himselfe, or some happy Messenger that brought good tidings of his safety, that by infinite multitudes they followed after him to the Court, being desirous to know from whence he was.

*Pollipus* coming to the Pallace, beheld a wonderful alteration here since their departure, for all were attyred in mourning weedes, and every thing seemed to shew a signe of sadnesse. When *Dionisus* had knowledge that there was a Knight that had brought a Message unto him, he could not judge of whence he might be, for that he was in Armour, and rather took him to be a Herald of Armes, then a Messenger that brought newes of Peace,

But dinner being then newly ended, he was brought into the great Hall, where was *Olivia* the Queene, the King and Queen of *Hungaria*, the Prince of *Sparta*, with the young new married Queen *Clariana*, Daughter to the King of *Hungaria*, the Lord *Remus* who had lately married *Isabella*, and many others of great quality.

When *Pollipus* was entred the presence humbling himself upon his knee before the King, he uttered these speeches:

Most High and Mighty King. I bring you newes of the safety of your highness, Daughter *Laurana*, who at this instant with her espoused Lord *Parismus*, remaineth in good health, humbly saluting your Majesty in all duty by me. They are by this time on the Plains of *Pharsalia*, addressing themselves towards this noble City, where within short space they intend to arrive.

*Dionisus* having heard his Message delivered, took him by the hand and embraced him. That Knight (quoth he) thou hast brought me such pleasant newes that I can hardly believe

Ar-

I shall be so happy, as to lbe to see them neither be thou offended at my incredulity, for my misfortune hath been such, as I cannot any way relie upon the certainty of any thing. With these words the teares flowd in his eyes.

Pollipus lifting up his Weber, said: My Lord, upon mine honour, that which I report, is most true. Dionisius knowing him, with great joy embraced him: the Queen, and all the rest could not sufficiently on a sodain expresse their joy, but yielded all kind and honorable welcomes that they could devise to welcome him withal. Which newes was soon bruited through the Court and City, and the King and almost all in generall, went presently out to meet them; The Courtiers they rejoyced, the Citizens caused Bon-fires to be made, the Welstrang, the Drums and Trumpets sounded, yea, such mirth and rejoycings began on all sides, as if the people had bene newly risen from death in respect of the sadnesse that possesed their hearts, before these happy newes came. Dionisius with great joy went to meet his Children, being accompanied by the King of Hungaria, the Prince of Sparta, and many other Knights and Gentlemen belonging to the King of Hungaria that attended Clariana, and they had not rode farre out of the City, but they met them. Where Dionisius lovingly embraced Parismus and Laurana; (who reverently kneeled at his feet) and with teares proceeding from the excesse of exceeding joy, welcomed their return: when Dionisius uttered these speeches.

Welcome my dear Sonne, your happy arrivall hath banished my former hearts sorrow, and as by your departure and newes of your misfortunes our heaviness increased, so by your prosperous arrivall our hearts are replenished with joy. I see your vertues still over-master adverse misery, and whatsoever is in your custody, is safely protected from calamity: my gladnesse for your return I cannot expresse, for that I tell my self surpris'd with exceeding delight. When he had ended his speeches, he took Laurana by the hand and embraced her with exceeding rejoycings. Each Noble personage having saluted Parismus, and welcomed their return in courteous

sort,

for they entered the City, whether they were welcomed with such exceeding gladnesse on all sides, as could possibly be devised, and the true hearts of loving subjects expresse. The Streets, Windows, and house tops, and every place were so besought with abundance of people, as there was almost no passage left for them to get to the Pallace. Violetta among all the rest beheld her carefull Father, standing at his doore weeping, to see the mirth that all enjoyed but himselfe, who continued in great heaviness for the losse of his Daughter: which sight attained her heart with such grief, that the passage of her chrysal teares issued with such abundance, that all the company wondered thereat; when as with great pleasure being come to the Pallace, they were on all sides welcomed with unspeakable kindness. Dionisius caused most rich meat to be provided for their repast, and in the mean time caused Parismus to sit down by him, and Laurana by her Mother, accompanied by Clariana and Isabella, three of the fairest creatures that ever eye beheld.

When Parismus at the request of the King repeated the whole manner of their misadventure from the beginning of their shipwrack untill their return, with such exceeding commendation of the noble valour and exceeding kindness he had found in Pollipus, that all admired and applauded his victories, that he uttered these speeches. Most noble Father, by the valour of my friend Pollipus, have we escaped the great dangers we fell into, therefore I beseech your Highnesse to keep of him, as the only preserver of your Childrens lives, whose noble wisdom hath still preserved us, and his prowess mightily defended us, without whom, we had never enjoyed this happy hour to see your honorable presence. Dionisius hearing his speeches, rose from his seat, and embraced Pollipus with great kindness yielding him many thanks. Thus being met with exceeding joy on all sides, they spent the rest of the day in kind salutations, and pleasant communication, each friend with other. Except Pollipus, whose heart longed untill he had visited old Andragio, who he found sitting in a chair, bewailing his own misfortune.

fortune, which brook such exceeding sadnesse to Pollipus heart, that he could endure no company, nor enjoy no quiet. Till at last there found his sister, in whose search, he had endured so many miseries. Barzillus was honourably welcomed by Dionisius, and richly rewarded by Parismus, besides all the treasure that he had taken in the Island of Rocks. Leda was kindly welcomed by her fellows. Parismus spent his time in pleasant discourses with the King his father in law, the King of Hungaria, and Prince of Sparra. Laurana in company of Clariana, and Isabella, and many other gallant Ladies, related her happy escape from misfortune. Pollipus onely gave his mind to all sorrow and penitence, enduring the absence of Violetta with wonderfull grief: And seeing that he could bear no news of her abode, determined the next day without fail to depart in search of her.

## CHAP. XXIX.

How Pollipus intending to depart in search of Violetta, was by her stayed; and how she discovered her selfe unto him, What joy Parismus and Laurana tooke for her safety, and the manifold honors they did her, and how afterwards she was affianced to Pollipus



And the next morning Pollipus armed himself, causing his horse to be prepared in readinesse, and comming where Dionisius was seated in his Royallie, accompanied by the Noble and gallant States that were in his Court humbled upon his knee and said himselfe,

Most mighty King, I cannot render your thanks sufficient for the least favour I have received at your hands. Nevertheless I am now bold to presume into your presence, to request consent to a matter which much concerneth me: which peradventure you will judge rather to proceed from folly, then wisdom. For so it is, most Noble King, that I have made

now to travaile in search of a friend. In which travaile I am determined to spend the rest of my wearisome life: without whose presence my life shall be hateful unto me. Then I beseech your Highness to shew me that favour, as I may obtaine your free consent to depart at this instant: for my heart hath vowed never to rest in any place, until I be fully assured of my friends prosperity. Dionisius hearing his request, was sorry so soon to leave him, and therefore taking him up most kindly by the hand, he said:

Most worthy Knight, to whom both my selfe, and all mine are much bound, it were a hard matter I would deny you: but in this let me intreat you to stay some few dayes with us, that we may make you some small recompence for your pains, and not so soon leave us, who are much delighted with your company: and rather let me perswade you to leave of this resolution, for the dangers incident to travail are many, as your selfe hath lately sufficiently tryed, and if that in short space you doe not hear tydings according to your content, you shall have all the furtherance I can give you, to do what seemeth best to your selfe.

My Lord (replied Pollipus) my staying in this place cannot pleasure you, but rather be offensive, for that my sorrows without some good hope of comfort, will exceed the limits of reason: neither will it (I hope) delight your Majesty, to see my griefe, which I can by no means avoid. Therefore I beseech your Highness not to intend me any further honour, but let me have your licence to depart, to whome I have already sufficiently tasted of your bounty.

Parismus seeing his intention, used all manner of friendly and kind perswasions, to dissuade him from his purpose; but he earnestly intreated his consent, for his heart was oppressed with care, that no other thought could take place in his Fancies, but very shortly he determined to begin his travaile.

Violetta seeing that now or never was the time to worke his and her owne content, resolved to manifest her selfe, and



with best diligence attended him all that day: fearing lest he should depart secretly, and at night when he went to his bed, (not with intent to sleep but to poyse forth his usuall lamentations) Violetta likewise was with him, shewing a sad countenance to see his sorrow.

But when she had tenderly comforted her selfe by his manly sode, she could not persuade her to grow into conference with him, being broken with such a delightfull fear to discover her self, as she had never felt the like. At last she said, most miserable Knight, I am sure now you give no credit to my words, because you find not Violetta here, according as I promised you should: neither have I any comfort to attain the favour at your hands I expected, because your penitence will not permit me. What might I be so bold as to crave one request at your hands, which if you please to vouchsafe me I promise you that you shall find my words before spoken true (for that I know where Violetta is) and promise you againe to do more for you with her, then any living creature but her self. And now (quoth Pollipus) do not go about to delude me with fond speeches, for thou canst not perform any thing that can further me herein. My Lord said she, do but try me once more, and if I faile, then let me endure the most heauy doom of your everlasting displeasure. Adonius (quoth he) if it be to pleasure thee any way I will gladly do it, for the friendship I have found in thee: then I pray thee as thou lovest me and tenderest the sorrows I endure, do not delay me with thy speeches, for I know they proceed from kindnesse to make me forget my sadnesse, and not to do me any benefit in the thing thou speakest of, for I shall never be so happy as to be beloved of her, who I feare me hath left her Fathers house to thin my company. But notwithstanding the little hope of comfort I conceive by thy meanes, to pleasure thee before I depart, tell me what it is thou demandest, and if it be in my power, thou shalt obtain it. Violetta was ashamed to stir her mind in that place, but being sure he could not behold her blushing cheekes, said: The request that I make, is this, that you will give me

you

your faithfull promise, that at such time as it is your hap to meet Violetta and obtain her good will, that the first night you will not offer to do any thing that may tend to her dishonour. Upon my honour said Pollipus I will not do any thing whatsoever that disagreeeth to her will, for so dear do I esteem her, that I would rather destroy my self then she should be any way displeased with me.

Then know worthy Knight (quoth she) I am that Violetta you so earnestly enquire after, I am the party that have so long time procured your discontent, and I am she whose absence you have so oft bewailed, and now I am constrained to manifest my selfe unto you, desiring you to pardon my hard heartednesse, that have so long concealed my selfe, and therefore procured your disquiet. Pollipus hearing her speeches, could not tell what to say, being halfe perswaded it was she by remembryng her countenance, and the behaviour she had used in all their travells: and also calling to mind her kindnesse, and now at length her own speeches, could not resolve what to do, for that his fancy still perswaded him it was not Violetta. And on the other side he had a mighty perswasion it might be she: at last he said I know not what to conjecture, nor how to behaue my self, nor whether I should call you Adonius or Violetta, considering how unlike it is she should be so kind to me, and how certain I am Adonius hath done me manifold pleasures.

Then sweet Violetta (if you are she) resolve me of this my doubt, being thereby dyven to that hopefull despair, that I know not whether my fortune is better, or worse then it was. Violetta thinking a little back, said pardon me dear Pollipus for I am your unworthy friend Violetta, that have in this disguise made tryall of my fortune and your friendship.

Pollipus then took her most lovingly in his armes, not offering other then his former promise did permit. Yet he was in a doubt still, and could not be quiet untill he had used such kind meanes (yet farre from dishonour) as thereby he found she was a Virgin, and no Page, and therefore assured himself it was

10

Violetta.

Violetta; and folding her delicate and tender body in his man-like armes, which he had oftentimes before embraced, but not with such kindnesse, banishing all sadnesse from his sorrowfull heart, with sweet and delicate content, he embraced her with that kindnesse, that long parted lovers enjoy, when they so pleasantly meet, spending the rest of the Night in pleasing and delightfull communication, and remembrances of their former kindnesse, which augmented their joyes to an exceeding height. Oftentimes Pollipus would have exceeded the limits of his former promise, but she reserved that for the more honourable delight of their Nuptiall bed, vied many other pleasures, such as true and loyall kindnes yields.

Thus these two kind friends spent the time. Violetta accounting her selfe most happy to enjoy so constant a friend, as she had found him by certainties in their travail and he esteemed himself as happy, that he was beloved of Violetta, that had not refused to hazard her selfe in many dangers for his sake. At last, their minds being both at quiet and satisfied with blissfull content, these two faithfull lovers all fast asleep. Parismus enduring much heaviness for his friends departare, could hardly attaine one minutes rest to his troubled head, therefore he was early up, with intent to perswade Pollipus (if he could) from undertaking that journey: and presently after these Lovers were asleep, he entred the Chamber, where contrary to his premeditated expectation, he found him fast asleep: and Adonius in most loving sort, laying one hand under Pollipus head, and the other embracing his manly breast: seeming in his conceit, the delightfulllest sight that ever eye beheld: the supposed Page being so beautiful, that had he not known him, he would have judged that Venus her self had bene there to comfort Pollipus with her sweet embracings.

But seeing his dear friend in such quiet, and sweet rest, he withheld himself how to meditate how to work his friends comfort and stay his journey.

By which time, the Sun had lightned the whole Chamber with

with his golden brightnesse, the clearnesse of whose splendour shining full upon these lovers, awaked Pollipus; but Violetta still lay sweetly slumbering, and Pollipus shadowing her with the curtaines, arose, and some saw Parismus walking at his Chamber door, who seeing him, said. My dear friend Pollipus, I had thought to have found you ready armed to depart according to your resolution yesterday, but I hope that you are rather determined to alter that purpose, and stay with us: who desire nothing more then your company, and were not Adonius well known to me, I should think you had embraced some Divine Goddess in that kind sort; but notwithstanding let me intreat you stay some longer time with us, which was the onely cause of my coming unto you at this instant. And I desire you for all the friendship, that hath passed betwixt us, bring me so much more in your debt, by obtaining this favour at your hands.

My Lord (saith Pollipus) I must confesse I am to anguish to be found sleeping at this instant, while my mind should be busied with more weightier matters. Indeed according to your saying (My Lord) I think I have either embraced some Goddess or a more Divine creature: for my former resolution to travaile is quite dissolved and my heart at more quiet then it hath been: for my dear Violetta hath been so kind as to visit me this night, shewing my heart that cause of joy, as for ever while I live, I shall account my self bound unto her: and because your honour hath both bene acquainted with my love and all my intents, and have bought me that favour that I shall never requite, I will shew you the cause of my gladnesse. Violetta hath disguised her self, and been with us in all the time of our travells, and Adonius is now changed to Violetta, and hath discovered her selfe unto me, which was more strange to me then it may seem to you.

Parismus hearing his speeches, called her favour to remembrance, and perfectly knew that it was Violetta, wondering that in so long time as she was in the disguise of Adonius, he could never perceive the same nor once suspect it, which af-

setted his heart with exceeding joy: and taking Pollipus by the hand, they walked together to Laurana, who greatly rejoiced at his happy newes, and presently commanded Leda to carry apparell unto her, and all things that were necessary, which she presently executed, and at her coming found Violetta newly awaked, and told her that Laurana had set her that apparell, which Violetta was well contented with. Parisimus, Pollipus, and Laurana by this time were come where she was, who stood with a blushing countenance like Venus intrapt in Vulcans net, but Parisimus took her by the hand, and said: Blush not vertuous Damozell, for it rejoyceth my heart to see you here, could you be so unkind as in all the time of your travel never to make your self known till now? Wel I see you have wisdom in making your choice, and wel have you deserved to be beloved of Pollipus, who I am sure will perform no lesse, neither need you any more tryall of his love, for that you have been privy to many infallible proofes thereof.

Violetta kneeling, uttered these speeches, I thank your honour, that you vouchsafeme this extraordinary favour, as to visit me that have shewed my selfe unworthy thereof: but I trust I need not now stand upon nice termes to this worthy Knight, for that I may be fully assured of his fidelity, neither can I seem strange having so long time beene acquainted with his love, but if my boldnes hath not caused his misconceit of me, I here offer my self for ever to be at his disposition: desiring (you most worthy Knight) to pardon whatsoever you have found amisse in me or disagreeing to a Maidens chaste behaviour and with a favourable opinion censure of my rashnes both to try your vertues, as also to disguise my self, where, in I have done (so near as I could) nothing that might any way disgrace my chastity, or dishonour my name.

Pollipus taking her in his armes, said: Sweet, and kind Love, should I be so barbarous as to misdeem your vertues, or beare any other then the most courteous conceit of your kindnesse, then I might be accounted the most inhumane creature living, but contrary to my desert, I account my selfe

so touched and honoured by your love, that for ever I shall endeavour to be thankful unto you for the same: and beseech you thus to esteeme of me, that it will be more grievous unto me then death, to be out of your favour. Then I desire you let your heart repose that good trust in me, that no misery, calamity, death, nor affliction, shall cause me once in word or deed, to be disloyal to your selfe, that vouchsafeth me the heavenly happinesse I desire.

Laurana all this while, diligently beholding Violettas modest countenance and bashfulnesse, came unto her and embraced her in most familiar sort, saying: Most vertuous Damozell, be not discomforted nor abashed at your disguise, for it cannot be taken otherwise then vertuous, for by the same, you have shewed a great token of wisdom, to make so infallible a trial of the constancy of your friend. Neither trouble your selfe with any misconceited opinion of your Chastitie, for none can be so discourteous as to disallow the same. And as for my selfe, I am so fully assured of your vertues, that I shall for ever hate them, that shall once think otherwise then honourably of you, and hereafter make account to finde me as your most faithfull friend, for at all times I will esteeme you as my Sister, and whatsoever I can in my power to doe you good, shall be ready at your command.

Violetta kneeling downe, most humbly thanked her, for her honourable kindnesse. Then Laurana taking her up by the hand, led her downe into the great Hall, where she was intirely welcommed by the King and Quene, and by all the rest of the States, with marvellous loving kindnesse: who having knowledge of her, exceedingly commended her vertues, and being informed of the truth of all that had passed betwene her and Pollipus, (by his owne report) grew into such a good liking of her, and so much esteemed her wisdom, that they all in generall (with one consent) accounted him the most fortunatest Knight living, to make choyse of so vertuous and constant a wife,

Wherupon presently her father being sent for, with great joyfullnesse welcommed home his deare and onely Daughter. Who within few dayes after by the appointment of Dionisius, was in most solemn manner married to Pollipus in great Royalty, to both their exceeding joyes and contentment, and also to the rejoycing of all them that were there present.

After which time all Thessaly remained in great tranquillity, and these kind friends continued still in Dionisius his Court many dayes, untill Parismus once again desired to see his native Country at Bohemia, where within short time after his departure from Thessaly, he safely arrived: as shall be declared in the second part of this History, which shall be called by the name of P A R I S M E N O S, wherein shall be shewn at large the strange discourse and manner of his bringing up by his Nurse, that fled with him from the Tyrant Andraman Castle, in the Island of Rocks, with the rehearfall of many strange adventures he atchieved, before he came to his parents.

Thus (courteous Readers,) you see the first fruits of my Green labour, rudely put into your courteous hands: whiche if you please to grace but with a favourable opinion, I will in the next History endeavour to make you some part of amends: But if this shall not be kindly accepted, you shall forever discourage me from bestowing any more idle time in these or any other such like exercises.

F I N I S.

*Here endeth the first part.*



**G**entlemen, if a stranger may request a favour, (which I am sure no honest well willer to learning will deny) then let me intreat you in the behalf of my friend, (the Author hereof) to afford him your kind acceptance of this his first labor, which I am the more earnest to crave, at your courteous hands, because I animated him unto the same. For coming one day into his Chamber, I found amongst other things this History of Parismus, roughly penned by him, and carelessly cast by in loose papers, aminding that it should never have come unto the Presse. But I gathering them together, and reading them, found the invention so pretty, the matter so delightfull, and the Style (although plaine) yet so pleasing, as (liking it) requested him to suffer it to come abroad, assuring him, that it could not but be generakly well liked of the better sort.

And therefore, since he hath through my perswasions performed the same, do not you (I pray you) discourage him in his first attempts but kindly accept his well-meaning intension, which was to please all, and displease none.

So shall you encourage him, in performing this his promise; that is, the second part ensuing: which at my request he hath done (and as I doubt not, but so you will find it) to your content,

Fare ye well.

Your Friend, L. P.

**THE**  
Most famous, delectable,  
AND PLEASANT  
**HISTORY**  
OF  
**PARISMVS**  
The Renowned  
**PRINCE of BOHEMIA.**

---

*THE SECOND PART.*

---

CONTAINING  
The adventurous Travells and Noble Chivalry of *PARIS-*  
*MENOS*, the Knight of Fame in divers  
Countries,

*Newly Imprinted and amended.*

---

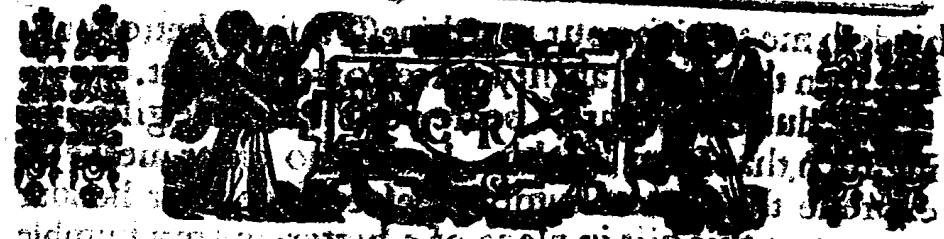


**LONDON**

Printed by B. Alsop, dwelling neere the Upper Pumpe in  
*Grubstreet, 1649.*



THE  
 HISTORY  
 OF  
 THE  
 REIGN  
 OF  
 KING  
 CHARLES  
 THE  
 FIRST



To the Right Honourable, Prudent, and vertuous  
 Lady, the Countesse of Essex, the Almighty  
 grant everlasting honour and happi-  
 nesse.



Animated by the view of your manifold  
 vertues, (Right Honourable La-  
 dy) I have presumed to shroud this  
 simple work under the Harbor of your  
 protection, resting in confidence, your  
 Honour wil vouchsafe to accept the  
 same although not for the worthinesse, yet for the well  
 meaning intent of the writer, who in all duty de-  
 icateth his endeavours to deserve your honorable favour. Tru-  
 sting your favourable and Prudent Censure, will extin-  
 guish the blemish of my overboldnesse: and your wise-  
 dome favour what is offered with affection.

Pythias Apollo, refused not to drink in Wooden dishes,  
 Alexander the Great and mighty Monarch, disdained  
 not to Travaile to visit simple *Diogenes* in his Cell.  
 Not the gifts value, but the givers good wil, hath been  
 alwayes esteemed. Even so I rest in hopefull assurance  
 that ( of your own most honourable and vertuous in-  
 clination to fav our Learning ) you will daine to take  
 this small gift, proceeding from a hearty good will.  
 Which I am bold to present to your protection, there-  
 by in some sort to expresse my humble duty, which  
 bindeth

## The Epistle Dedicatory.

bindeth me to give your worthinesse a farre better price  
then this my ability were worth. And thus I have  
in my heart, and I beare your humble gifts, be-  
ing such that I am unable, having no other means to  
expresse the same: humbly beseeching your honour  
to accept this gift in place of a better; and my humble  
and dutifull meaning, instead of a better performance:  
And (according to your vertuous Bounty) vouchsafe to  
protect this Talent of my poor labours, under the title  
of your honourable Patronage. Which shall bind me  
to invoke the Almighty, to indue your Honours, in-  
rich you withall blessings, and reward you with eternal  
happinesse.

Your Honours

in all duty,

E. Ford.

## To the Courteous Reader.



Entlemen; according to my promise, I have  
here set forth this Second part of Parilius,  
which I wish may prove worthy your Fa-  
vour and kind Estimation, the Authors  
whereon my Hopes depend; and though it  
deserve not so much, yet let my good meaning therewith  
purchase the same. If you find any imperfections, pass them  
over with a careless respect; and if ought please your Pan-  
tie, let it countervaile that which is amiss. If neither wel,  
nor amiss, then I pray rest indifferent: and let your Cour-  
tesie be greater then my boldness; and your Favour beyond  
my Desert. My intent was to please, but if not, my labours  
are ill bestowed, and my hap the harder: If I may breed any  
delight to the well-willed, or purchase any good opinion of  
the Wel-willers in Learning, then I have the reward I  
expect.

One peradventure will say, the invention is barren; ano-  
ther, the English is naught. Yet let me  
answer in mine owne defence, that which is lightly discom-  
mended, is not easily commended: for the work's wel done, tha  
pleaseth all: and thus I hope, that none liketh. But I  
submit my selfe to the Courteous, and Learned: whom  
I trust will vouchsafe to be favourably of my good in-  
tent: that though I am unable to compare with any: yet I  
am willing to prove worthy: and have taken some pains to

procure their good opinion, unto which I submit my self.  
As for MOMUS mates, that are contented with nothing, yet  
desire most; I let them passe as regards, whom I neither  
care to please or displease: but if my fortune be so adverse,  
that I cannot procure their delight as I would then I plead  
penitency, protesting I was in good hope of their favour;  
Knowing this, that that which disagrees with ones fancy,  
may delight anothers.

So that I am in hope this poor Treatise may pass with  
the favourable opinion of some, though not with all, espe-  
cially of the Courteous: That I still rest in hope, that I  
not be frustrated in all my expectation; but reape your  
Courteous censure, for my good meaning. And so I com-  
mit you to the Heavens protection.

Your Friend,

E. FORD.



THE

THE  
Most famous, delectable and pleasant  
History of Parismus, the renowned Prince of Bohemia;  
and of his Travells with the valiant  
Knight Pollipus in search of Violetta.

The second Part.

CHAP. I.

How Parismus after Pollipus Marriage, departed from Vio-  
lette. And of a strange adventure befell them in Bohemia.



After that Pollipus had married Violetta  
(as is declared in the first part of this  
history,) and every one in Dionisius  
Court enjoyed his stons hearts content;  
Parismus again desired to see his Native  
Country of Bohemia, from whence he  
had been long absent: As also to  
comfort his aged Parents, who daily languished with  
extreme hearts sorrow, doubting by all likely hood that he  
was perished.

Parismus: now determined to take his journey by Land, the  
rather for that Laurana could not brook the Seas, the passage  
being long and dangerous, that within few dayes Parismus  
having (with Laurana, Pollipus, Violetta, Tellamor, Barzil-  
los, and two hundred English souldiers, being also honourably  
accompanied onward on their journey, by Dionisius and Oli-  
via, the King of Hungaria, and Prince of Sparta, and his belo-

bed Clariana, Lord Remus, and Lady Isabella, with thousands of the Citizens of Thebes, left the bounds of Thebais, to the exceeding griefe of all, especially to the King and Queen, whose hearts were rent with exceeding sorrows, and hearts replenished with sadnesse, whose care for their welfare, and prayers for their prosperous successe, were uttered with abundance of teares. They on the other side, with like heavy discontentment and sad sighes, left their delightfull company, with whom they could everlastingly have remained, if weighty occasions had not withdrawn them. To relieve their travails, and the Countesse they overpast, would be so tedious, the rather for that they were never cross'd by misfortune; nor any way endangered, but achiev'd the tediousnesse thereof with prosperous successe, and within few dayes, they arriv'd in the wished Country of Bohemia, whither Parismus welcomed Laurana with these speeches.

Now most deare Lady, you set foot on the Bohemian soile, whither I have long time wished to conduct you, desiring you to account both it, and all therein, as yours, to dispose of, and though by your departure you left your Parents in heaviness, your friends in care, and your subjects discontented: yet here shall you find Parents whom you shall raise from heaviness, friends whom you shall comfort, and subjects whose penurious hearts will be reviv'd with your presence. When I beseech you, let no doubtful thoughts trouble your kind hearts content, but esteem your self both welcome, and beloved in Bohemia, for thousands of my subjects have already devoted their lives to your command.

And most dear friends (quoth he) as my selfe I esteem you, and as my selfe esteem your selves welcome hither: for your kindnesse hath deserved that estimation, and recompence, that I am not able to make. And deare friend Pollipus, my faithfull partner in wee, make you account of all mine as your owne, for you deserve all kinde estimation, and friendship of me, whom you have faithfully kept, into you in all league of affection.

The Bohemians soon had knowledge of their arrivall, and by infinite Traps came to meet them. Amongst the rest, A most ancient Nobleman desired Parismus to vouchsafe him his honour, and to give him a mansion with his presence, and to accept of his unworthy entertainment, to refresh himselfe after his tedious travails: whose kind offer Parismus courteously accepted, where he and the Countesse Laurana were so honourably and so bingly entertained, as that the mid the rest that were strangers, exceedingly marvelled thereat. The aged King and Queen, having intelligence that Parismus was arriv'd and in safety, cast off their former habit of sadnesse, and banished cares which long had tormented them, and with exceeding joy, by wanted state, and inapplicable splendor went forth to meet him, royally accompanied with gallant troops of Chafers, Parismus seeing his aged Parents, with all reverence humbled himselfe to them: who could have spent many houres only in embracing him: but seeing Laurana, they both came unto her, most lovingly welcoming her, expressing the same with teares, proceeding from the depth of kindnesse, and withall, uttered these words.

Most vertuous kind and honorable Princesse, our words cannot expresse your welcome, nor our deeds show our good will, our joy for your presence is not to be described, and our entertainment too simple to entertaine you, according to our desires. Which said, the aged Queen after a loving embrace, took her by the hand, and all the Ladies of high estate, saluted her with most reverent behaviours. The good King knowing Pollipus, embraced and welcomed him with great kindnesse: likewise the Queen welcomed Violenta: and on every side, all exprest their joy, for their happy arrivall. Bonfires were made in the City, Bells rung in the Country, and triumphes in the Court, some welcomed them with gifts, some with arth, some with praises, and all with joy and exceeding rejoicings, which my dulled pen is altogether unable to describe. The King and Queen exceedingly rejoiced in their sonnes vertuous choice: and in Lauranas presence,

Lau-

Laurana was affected with great delight to see their kind-  
ness, *Parismus* had his fill of content, and altogether greatly  
admired Laurana's beauty, and did their best to welcome and  
entertain the whole company that came with *Parismus*, with  
all Courtesy: that the Bohemian Court, which lately had bin  
darkened with the mists of sorrow, was now beautified with  
the pleasant assemblies of knights and Ladies that repaired  
thither to welcome home *Parismus*, and behold the Princess  
Laurana, in which place they continued many days after.  
But Fortune whose constancy was never permanent, at an  
instant dispossest their content.

*Pollipus* and *Violetta* upon a day walked forth for recreation  
on some halfe a mile from the Court, into a most pleasant Ga-  
dy Greene Wood, which by reason of the comeliness and aboun-  
dance of sweet smelling flowers, wherewith it was adorned,  
and by naturall sleight was so paved, with the assistance of  
little twigs and sprays, that neither the heat of the Sunne  
nor vehemency of Wind could molest it, that the place seemed  
to adde ease to their delight, where they lovingly late downe,  
recreating themselves with great pleasure, and at last, fell  
both asleep, in midst of which slumber, a ravenous wilde  
Bear that hunted these Woods, whom extreme hunger had  
forced to wander so near the Court, wounded them, and guided  
by unlucky fate, came to the place where they lay, ready to  
seize upon the tender body of kind *Violetta*, who at that very  
instant by the Divine Providence) awaked, and espying the  
vgly Bear suddainly shrieked, *Pollipus* amazed with her cry,  
started up, and drew out his sword, and rescued her from the  
Beasts violence, pursued him with such rigour and dexterity,  
that the Bear being grievously wounded, found his blowes  
and made hast to get away from him, but he intending to win  
honour by his conquest, regardlessly pursued the Bear, untill  
he was quite out of *Violetta's* sight. Who likewise fearing  
his harm, and picked forward with a tender care of his wel-  
fare, followed after him, but not knowing which way he was  
gone, took a quite contrary way, and with eager steps labor-

red

red to other take him, he having with much travail slaine the  
Bear, smote off his head, and intending to prevent that spoile  
in his Lode, came back to the place where he had left her,  
and missing her, he could not well tell what to think, being  
perswades she was gone to seek him, wherewith he was wrapt  
into an extreme perplexity and doubt: fearing that if he  
should go to the Court to seek her, the night in the mean time  
would cut off the way and runne into danger. Contrarily he  
thought that if he would seek her in the Court, and she be in  
the Court, his long tarryance might bring her in some feare of  
his welfare, that in those extremities he could not determine  
of any thing: At last calling her with a loud voice by name,  
and not hearing her answer, with all hast he ran to the Court  
with his foot upon his sword's point, and running hastily he  
enquired if any saw *Violetta* return, but she was not there  
heard of, which made him cast down the Beares head: and  
without speaking a word returned towards the Wood againe.  
Which strange behaviour of his, drove the Courtiers but es-  
pecially *Parismus* into a wonderful doubt, *Parismus* seeing  
the Beares head and hearing some speeches of *Violetta's*  
absence, presently mounted a goodly Reed and with haste rode  
that way he was directed *Pollipus* went. Tellamor, Barzillus,  
and many of the knights, followed after him, neither of them  
knowing whereto they made such haste.

*Parismus* having overtaken him, demanded if any mis-  
fortune had befallen *Violetta*? By a word (quoth he) as she and  
I lay sleeping in the Wood, the Beate whose head I  
brought to the Court, was ready to seize upon her, but she with  
a shriek awaked me, and I pursued him untill I had slaine  
him: and returning to the place where I left *Violetta*, she  
was gone: neither can I suppose whether, whether she be wan-  
dered to seek me, the haste I made, was to come back to seek  
her. So so (quoth *Parismus*) and my self and those knights  
will search the Wood throughout. So every one took a leve-  
all way.

*Violetta* in the mean time, still wandered on without re-  
gard









though millions of Devils should seek to dye me hence.

Why (quoth *Parismus*) how can you think she is dead, when there is no likelihood, signe, nor mention to be made thereof? Neither her apparell nor any part of her body torn, or any other circumstance to perswade us to any such conceits. Then why will you suffer any such perswasions to possesse your Fancie? (Quoth *Pollipus*) How then came the Death to toyne? It may be the wild Beasts have secret dens, whereinto they have dradon her body, and many other mischances may be befall her, that she was subject unto, and yet still be hidden from our knowledge: Neither let that trouble you (quoth *Parismus*) and rest contented, and your care that way shall soon be eased; but depart with me to the Court to comfort your self with some sustenance, and I will presently give order to have the wood so thoroughly searched, that you shall plainly find the truth not misseared.

*Pollipus* with his perswasions, though unwillingly, went back with them, mounting on *Tellamors* Horse, for that he was sore travelled and weary of that disquiet nights trouble.

Thus for a while we will leave *Pollipus* returned to the Court with *Parismus*, *Violetta* being very sick and weak in *Archas* his Castle, and many of the Bohemian and Thessalian knights in her search, to turne my pen, to write of another Subject, long time buried in forgetfulness; the chiefeest Subject whereon this History dependeth.

## CHAP. III.

How *Parismenos* was brought up in the Island of Rocks in *Tartaria*. How his Nurse was slain by a Lion. How he lived many years like a wild man, and afterwards arrived at *Andramarts* Castle.



At such time as *Laurana* was imprisoned in the Island of Rocks, under the Government of *Adamastus*, *Andramarts* Sister (as is declared in the first part of this History) the Nurse unto whose custody the young child *Parismenos* was committed, fearing his untimely death which *Adamastus* threatened, because his Mother would not consent to *Andramarts* lust, secretly (to save the child from her cruelty) fled by night into a desolate wood, where she carefully educated him according to the condition of the place, which was with such wild fruits as she gathered, making many a hard shift, to stanch her hunger, and defend the sweet Babe from famine, untill at length, hearing of *Andramarts* death she determined to return to the Castle, and there present him to his Mother: and to that intent, forsaking her habitation, she went as she thought thitherward, but most unfortunately wandered to a desolate and unfrequented Wilderness: where she had not long stayed, but met a fierce and cruel Lion, who slew her: which when *Parismenos* beheld, notwithstanding his Infancie sought to preserve her: but the Lion refusing to hurt him, withdrew himself to his den, whether *Parismenos* boldly pursued him: and being entred therein, the Lion began to wag his taile, and fawn upon him gently, which made him marvell why he had slaine his Nurse, and would not hurt him, and made him the more bold, that being weary with travail, he laid himself down to sleep, and when he awaked, being very hungry, he gathered wild fruit whereof there was plenty, which was his food, and the cleane water his drink,



Thus was his habitation a long time taking great pleasure to hunt and chase the wild Beasts, from whose fury he was still preserved by the Lion. Afterwards when he was grown to ripper age, in his sleep he dreamed, that his Purse appeared unto him, willing him to forsake that unfrequented place, and to seek out Andramartes Castle, where he should find people in whose company he should be brought up.

When he awoke, he could not tell what to think of his dream, nor what the meant by Andramartes Castle, nor which way to go thither, being therewith drawn to a deep slumber, but presently he espied a young Bear, whose sight made him quite forget his dream, and taking exceeding delight to chase such Beasts, he caught up his staffe, and followed her, and pursued her so fiercely, that at length he slew her, wherewith he was dazed so farre, that getting to the top of a Mountain and looking round about him, he espied the Castle, thinking that was the place his Purse had told him of in his dream, that he went thitherwards. It chanced that one of the Knights that Parismus had left to keep the Castle espied him; and being of a sad disposition, seeing Parismenos begin to withdraw himselfe, ran to him, and offered to lay hands on him. But Parismenos being afraid of his behaviour, strook at him with his staffe so fiercely, that had he not quickly avoided his blow, he had beaten out his braines. The Tartarian being angry, drew his sword, and therewith wounded Parismenos in the thigh, the smart whereof so enraged him, that notwithstanding all his resistance, he left him for dead.

Afterwards entering the Castle, his mind was drawn into an exceeding delight, to behold the goodly buildings and beauty thereof. The Tartarians beholding one in such strange disguise: for he was clad in the skinner of such Beasts as he had slain, and (his haire grown to a great length) much marvelled how he came into that Country; withall, noting his comely personage, and stately countenance, were suddainely drawn into a great affection towards him, that they saluted him most kindly, demanding the

the cause of his arrival in that place, and of whence he was, who seeing their behaviour, to be more gentle then the others with whom he had encountered before, made answer so well as he could, that he knew not: which blunt answer of his made them mule. Withall noting his attire, they took him either to be a mad-man, or that he had been savagely brought up: which they were the rather persuaded unto, for that he was very young, notwithstanding, they entertained him, and used him most kindly. By his countenance, calling to remembrance the noble Knight Parismus, whom he so much resembled, that they were half persuaded he was his son: that the Purse led withall. One amongst the rest named Tyresus, used him most kindly, apparelled him decently, and instructed him in all points belonging to Chivalry: teaching him to manage a horse and to use armour, whereunto he was so apt, and therein took such delight, that in short space he grew to such perfection, that he excelled his instructor, in all warlike behaviours. And was so generally beloved, that nothing they had or could desire, was too dear for him.

Many dayes remained Parismenos amongst the Tartarians increasing in many excellent qualities, not finding occasions enough amongst them to make tryall of his manhood. Upon a time certain Boyats returning from Sea, in his hearing, made report of their Battels and skirmishes, and the huge slaughters they had made, reporting how tragically they had murdered some of the resistants, and how valiantly some withstood them, and with what travell they endured the fight.

Making particular rehearshall of one Captain amongst the rest, who so valiantly withstood them, that before they could vanquish him, he had slain above twenty of them, but in the end, seeing that by reason of their multitude, he must needs either be taken Prisoner, or dye, he rather chose an honourable death, then to become their captive, and endured the fight, until with faintness he fell to be dead, when as he was advancing his sword to resist them, which report of theirs, kindled such honourable sparks in Parismenos heart, that he extrem-



ly thrust to see those skilfull men, accounting it dishonourable for him to spend his time in that obscure place: his thoughts still aiming at higher matters, and his fancy perswading him that he should rather spend his time in heroicall exercises, in Kings Courts, then in that unfrequented place, where no pleasing attempts of martiall deeds were exercised: which thoughts took such effect, that he presently determined to seek adventures abroad. And coming to Tyresus (who loved him dearly) he told him his whole intent, asking his advice therein. Tyresus seeing such a resolved valour in him, told him, that he was ready and willing to do any thing that might agree to his fancy, or purchase his content: and that if he desired to travel, and hazard himself by sea, he was ready to go with him: Or if he were determined to seek strange adventures by land, he would likewise travell with him, and forsake his will for his sake.

Parismenos hearing his courteous reply, could not but embrace him, yielding him many thanks. Tyresus effected all things with such speed, and so well ordered his affairs to further his intent, that within few dayes they departed into a ship well manned and victualled, hoisting up their sails with a merry gale, committing themselves to the mercies of the Seas. They sailed many dayes without any adventure, which inwardly fretted Parismenos, so his minde longed to performe some exploit. At last they hauned a sail a farre off, and towards it they steered againe, and summing nigh the ship, laid her aboard, which was of Barbaria, well manned with stout Moors, who seeing the Pyrates, and knowing that either they must resolutely fight it out or become captives, instantly resisted them: between whom began a most fierce and cruel fight, where Parismenos had matches enough to exercise his valour, who behaved himself with such courage, that many Moors that day lost their lives by his Ardent blowes. Egradans Captain of the Moors, being a man of exceeding rage, seeing the cruel slaughter Parismenos made came to him and uttered these speeches. Beyond Pyrates, thou shalt have

by these Moors lives, so I am determined to bring thy cruel life to an end. that thinking by robbery to enrich thy selfe, wherewith he afflicted him so severely, that he wounded him in many places: notwithstanding such was his valour, that with great force he likewise so valiantly defended himself, & offered Egradans, that it was doubtful which of them would have the conquest. In midst of this terrible fight, a mighty storme began suddenly to arise, the winds began to blow with such violence that the cables burst, & both light of day and sun was swallowed by thick Clouds, the Seas began to rage and swell that they were enforced to give over their fight, the Thunder roared, and the Lightninges flash about their eares, and the ship with violence of the raging Seas, was so rent, that there was none but expected present death. The Southern blast rent their Sails, one way goes their Helme, another way swims their Mast, with violence torn from the ship, and wave upon wave ready to overturn the ship, who now tossing upon the seas at liberty, was driven upon a stony Rock, and split in funder. Then began a hideous noise amongst the Soulers: Some cursing Parismenos the causer of that Journey, some exclaiming of Tyresus, and some banning their own Deities. Some belimed under the gaping water yeeld up their breath: here three at once are cast upon the Rocks, and againe devoured by the waves: there others sunke in the quick-sands and soon falls the master head long: then might you behold men swimming in their Armour: here and there strutting to make their deaths tedious, here might you see one leaning upon a plank, overthrown with a wave: & there another standing with his heels upward. Parismenos (by good fortune) was gotten up to the mast, whose length had some power to endure the waves, with his sword drawn in his hand. Tyresus he was gotten on to a Chest, wherewith a while he applied himself, from drowning, but in the end, the raging waves overthrew him deep in their spacious Gulphes, till when while the raging Seas began to cease, and water calmer, the Sun began to shine, and the clouds so dense that darkned the

ships, and the spall whereon Parismenus late began to stee along with the calmer tide: when he looked about him, and espyed all his fellows drowned, an exceeding sorrow overwhelmed his heart, especially for his loving friend Tyrelus, that had not the fear he was in rebited his senses, he would have wast carelesse of his own life. But the remembrance of his perill made him recall his better senses to their former use, and to study for his own safety to whom the Seas were so mercifull, that with a gentle and calm tide, he was driven to shore, where getting to a sunny bank he late him down to refresh his wearied limbs, and ponder his most happy escape from drowning, drying his gaping wounds with such linen as he had about him, who with the salt water smarted exceedingly.

## C X A P. III.

How Parismenus being cast on shore in Thrace, was taken up by Duke Amasenus, who named him the Knight of Fame, of two combats he fought with Corus and Argalus.



Parismenus was sitting on the Banke after his Shipwacke, in heavy estate for the losse of his dear friend Tyrelus, it happened, an ancient Duke of Thrace, named Amasenus, that day was come into a Forrest adjoyning to the Sea to hunt, accompanied by a gallant troop of Knights, who sheltering himself from the stormes under the craggy cliffs, beheld the miserable Shipwack, and saw Parismenus swim to shore, and so strangely preserved from drowning, unto whom he came as he was sitting on a sunny Bank, and demanded of whence he was, Parismenus beholding his reverend age, and the troop of Knights that attended on him, rose from the ground, and with great humilitie bowed his body, making this answer. I am a miserable man, by cruelty of the Seas cast on this shore, having lost my faithful friend drowned in the spacious gulphes, being my self reserved

reserved to further miseries, my name is hidden from my selfe, neither know I certainly, in what Country I was born, nor where my Parents remain, and now am I cast into an unknown place, and miserably left to the wide world, to endure such hard fortunes, as my unlucky stars have allotted me.

Amasenus hearing his answer, and withall noting his tall, and comely proportion, and beautifull countenance, thought by his speech that his senses were altered with feare of them, the tempest, & care for the losse of his friends, that he thus replied, I perceive fear of drowning hath made you forget both your self, your name, and Country, which fear now shake off, since all the perill is past, and leave to grieve for their loss that are irrecoverable, and go with me to my Castle, and to such entertainment as the same yeeldeth, you shall be welcom; I most humbly thank you (quoth he) for this kindnesse, but whereas you thinke that fear hath made me forget my self, you altogether aim amisse, for I have reported of my self nothing by truth. When kept forth Corus a suspicious and envious knight, my Lord (quoth he) is some private that liveth by spoil of Passengers and hath heretofore done you some mischief which maketh him thus cunningly dissemble.

Parismenus hearing his speeches, could not contain himself but made this answer. Most discourteous Knight, neither thy self nor any of this Country whatsoever, shall make me dissemble or once falsifie my word, and were it not that the strangenesse of this place, and the reverence I beare to this courteous Lord withholdeth me, I would even presently make the ear that sayd, and turne it back into thy dishonorable throat. Corus being a Knight of a proud courage, was angered with that reply, that he intreated Amasenus to give him leave to revenge these injurious words. Stay (quoth Amasenus,) and leave off this discourteous behaviour to strangers, here is neither place, nor time, for you shall be wearied with Shipwack, and faint with effusion of blood: thy proud and discourteous behaviour, will one day be thy death: had he bene me wrong, yet he hath not offended thee. When he said

to Parismenos: that Knight, I pray cease this discontent, and go to my Castle, for so well do I esteem of you, and so farre am I from the least suppose of any such thought, as my self will undertake his accusation to fals. So they departed together, Parismenos by the way, so well as he could, declared his birth, which made Amasenus make greater estimation of him, for by all tokens he thought he should be sprung of kingly race, that Amasenus entertained him most honourably and kindly. He welcomed him in the best sort he could devise, which made him disdained amongst many of the knights that attended the Duke, and seeing him so highly esteemed, began to suspect by that meanes that they were but feignly accounted of by Amasenus, that euer after that, they began to envie him, and to consult which way to do him a mischief: thinking Corus quarrell already began a fit occasion to further their intent, they urged him to prosecute the same. who being ready of himselfe, and yet rather by their instigation, sent him this Challenge.

Knight (for so I must call thee) thou rememberest what past betwixt us at our first meeting, which thou thinkest I have forgot, but so farre is it from my thought as courage is from thee to performe that, which thou threatnedst: thy feare of drowning is now past and thy deep wounds I am sure well eured, therefore if thou darrest maintain the words thou hast spoken in my disgrace, send me word where I shall meet thee and there we will end the controversy. So farewell.

As thou wilt Corus Parismenos having read his brave challenge, smiling thereat, sent this reply.

Corus, by the name of the unknown Knight, I will answer thee and maintain my words, wishing thee to be perswaded, that I so little feare thy hands, as that euen now I will come to thee, or when thou wilt, if not now. But if thou intendedst to avouch this challenge, thou shalt find me ready for thee at the South side of my Lord Amasenus Park. And so adue.

The Knight of Fame  
Corus.

Corus having received this reply, presently went and armed himself, and came to the appointed place, where he found the Knight of Fame gallantly mounted. Having for him, whom he so little esteemed, as that he assured himself the conquest before he began: for Parismenos was young, and of tender years, and nothing comparable to him in growth nor skill. Yet notwithstanding of such undaunted resolve, that he would not have refused to cope with him, had he been another Hercules. Corus seeing him in that readinesse, came to him uttering these speeches: Knight, I like well thy forwardnesse, and commend thy resolution, but by that time thou departest hence, thou wilt repent thy folly.

Parismenos thus answered, if I repent me the worst will be mine, but if I am not amiss thy folly will be the greatest: for know, that I so lightly esteem thy speeches, that I account thee ridiculous, and this time spent in parley to tedious. With that Corus went back, and Parismenos retired himself, to take their carriage, which was performed so gallantly, as that they withered their haunces, passing by without any other harm, presently drawing their keen swords, beginning fight with gallant bravery, sometimes offending, and sometimes defending, which continued so long, until their armour began to yield to their fierce blowes, and the blood to issue out at many places. In which cruell rage they continued for an houre space, without any disadvantage on either party, sometimes taking breath, and then again redoubled their blowes with fresh courage; that Corus fretting at his enemies valour, and calling to minde his former speeches, strook so mightily a blow at him, that with the force thereof he made him stagger, which turned Parismenos fences into such fury, that advancing himself in his stirrups, he strook Corus so full and so valiantly on the Crest that he was assaught therewith; yet not withstanding, with quick courage soon recovered his memory again: executing his blowes with great fortitude, until that both their Armours and Steeds began to be coloured with the purple blood that issued from their wounds: both of them murthering, yet neither of them willing to yield.

Sometimes the one driving his enemy to retire, and he again retreating with new courage. But *Parismenos* being the nimble of body, warded many of *Corus* blows, and in the end wounded him so sore, that he began to stagger to and fro to save himself from his fury, who still pursued him with such violence, that *Corus* with faintness fell on his horse neck, which he springing, was lifting up his sword to fetch a fifth blow to end his life, but that he heard one calling him to stay, and looking back, saw that it was *Amasenus*: who mistaking him, being told that he departed from the Castle in armour followed him to the place, and had all that while stayed covertly and beheld the combat, and seeing the danger *Corus* was in, desired *Parismenos* to spare his life, who according to his request desisted.

*Amasenus* then caused his knights to take up *Corus* slain from his horse in a trance, who receiving fresh air, came to himself again: but when he saw the Duke present, and his enemy still mounted and in good estate, his heart was ready to burst with inward grief, which malicious rancour filled up all his senses, that cursing himself and his ill fortune, he pressed up his fainting chest. Farewel (quoth *Amasenus*) the most proud and discourteous knight that ever lived in Thracia insolent malicious, and discontented envie hath wrought thine own downfall. And most noble knight (quoth he) to *Parismenos*, I both honour your valour and applaud your victory, wherein you have behaved your selfe so valiantly, as I shall for ever love you, and since you remain victor, I pray return with me to have your wounds cured. *Parismenos* humbly thanking him, departed: and the rest of *Amasenus* knights took up *Corus* body, which afterwards they buried with great solemnity.

After *Corus* death, the knights that envied *Parismenos*, now began to imagine adversely, that the knight would darken all their glories, and the more account they saw was made of him, the more their malicious envy increased, that they devised all the means they could to contrive his death, whatever

her ensued thereon, waiting all opportunities. But hee having his wounds fully cured, betook himself again to his wonted exercises, which was sometimes to manage the sturdy steed, and sometimes to disport himself in company of his unknown enemies amongst the Ladies and Gentlewomen, who liked his behaviour and courtesie so well, besides his comely proportion, that the sweet youth so greatly pleased their fancies, that they accounted the Thracian knights rude, in respect of him, all both liking, loving, and commending him, and that so openly, that his enemies might heare their speeches, which wrought such a violent effect of rancour, that no thought could harbour in their breasts but tragical devices to work his downfall.

One amongst the rest, near kinsman to *Corus*, named *Argalus*, was forwardest in this exploit, who to further his intent, with one *Themides*, dissembling a friendly countenance insinuated themselves into his familiarity, using such kind behaviour towards him, and entertaining his company with such courtesie, that he having no light into their dissimulation, began to make account of their friendship, and to take delight in their company, oftentimes imparting his secrets unto them, and without suspicion making them privy to most of his actions.

*Argalus* upon a time came to *Parismenos*, telling him that a squire of his had found a mighty wild boar, and could bring them to his Denne, desiring his company to go with them to hunt him.

*Parismenos* hearing that, was as forward as any of them, and the next morning appointed to meet them in the midst of the Forrest, at the *Wooles Ave*. And early the next morning, he got up according to his appointment, being ready to depart his Chamber, some five or six drops of blood suddenly fell from his nose, with which he started, and staying felt a sudden double heaviness, and throbbing possesse his heart, which drove him into a deep study what should be the cause of that unmounted passion: at last he began to think with himselfe, may not these few drops of blood divine some bad successe to my

enterprize

enterprise this day. I am here in a strange Country, amongst such as I know not how to trust, for I see apparently many of them to envy me, which they manifest by their frowning countenances, and Corus behaviour may be a pattern of their dispositions: therefore I were best not to go at all. Then againe he began to think, Argalus and Themides are my friends, then what need I fear any mishap? All which doubts would not stay him, but arming himself, resolved to endure all mischances, he departed towards the Pole. By the way as he rode, he met a Damosell passing towards him with great speed, wylnging her hands and making great lamentation, Parismenos marvailling at her sorrow, asked the cause of her complaint, Sir Knight (quoth she) I was going to Duke Amaleus Court, carrying a present, and a letter from my Mother, unto a strange knight, that lately arrived there: but by the way, I met with two Knights in green Armour, who dispossessed me thereof, and most villainously offered to abuse me, had I not fled. Damosell (quoth he) bring me if you can where they are and I will do my best to cause them make you restitution. Wherewith the Damosell turned her Horse, and rode back again. Sir Knight quoth she) they took down this narrow lane. Parismenos set spurres to his horse, and with great speed rode that way, he was not farre entred, but he espied the two Knights in green Armour, ready mounted staying in a pleasant Valley, encompassed round with woods, unto whom he said: Is it the manner of you Thracians, to offer violence to silly Damosells? Render me those things you have taken from her, or I protest I will not leave you until I have compelled you to do it by force. Unto whom one of them replied, if thy selfe art no Thracian, what dost thou here, or what interest hast thou in that Damosells quarrell, that maketh thee to controule our doings? What interest I have (quoth he) as all Knights should have, which is to succour distressed Damosells: wherewith turning backe to take scope for his race, he ran at one of them, and at the encounter, overthrow him backe ward, who by mischance in the fall brake one

one of his armes. The other seeing his fellows mischance, assailed Parismenos with his sword drawn, whom Parismenos overlaide with fierce blowes, and wounded him so grievously, that he fearing his death, and seeing no other come to his rescue, was ready to yield. When at that instant another knight came, who seeing one of them dead, and the other in great danger, ran at Parismenos with intent unawares to pierce his spear through his body: But he hearing the noise of his horse feet behind him, nimbly spurred his horse forward by which meanes the knight lost his course, passing by without doing any harm. Parismenos looking about him, and espying two enemies more, and missing the Damosell that had brought him thither, began to misdoubt some treachery: which thoughts, and the remembrance of the drops of blood that fell from him that morning, added new courage to his valour, that reaching a furious blow at the wounded knight, the sword lighting on a broken place in the Armour, entred into his body and ended his life.

By which time, the two knights lately come assailed him both at once, between whom began a most cruell and dangerous fight that all the earth was coloured with the blood that issued from their wounds: and notwithstanding Parismenos was before grievously wounded, yet he defended himselfe so courageously, that his new come enemies could not indanger him, but with their own disadvantage, who seeing his valour, and calling to mind Corus death, forsook knightly Chivalry, and used all villanous and cowardly flight. The one sometimes behind him offering him a thrust, and when he turned to receive that furious deed, the other did the like, that he perceived they intended to murder him, which so enraged that gallant knight, that putting his spurres unto his trusty steed, he rushed with such violence against one of them, that he bare him quite out of his saddle, whose foot still hung in his stirrup, and his horse dragged him with such violence up and down the field, untill the stirrup burst, and he lay dead and discontented. The other knight seeing his friends misfortune,



tune would have fled, but Parismenos strook such a violent blow upon his head, that he lost his senses, but soon recovering himself again, and thinking it better to dye by his enemies sword, then to yield to his mercy, turned to Parismenos, uttering these speeches. Knight if thou art well, give over, otherwile know that notwithstanding my former show of flight, it is the least part of my thought but I intend to try it out with thee againe to the uttermost, (quoth he) no villain, bling Thracian account not me so base minded, to leave such a villain to breathe any longer, that art not worthy of knight hood, much lesse to be esteemed amongst men: was it thy policy by subtilty to betray my life? If I be not deceived, I know thee by thy voice, and thy name is Argalus, my counterfeits friend, Am I the Boar thou intendedst to slay? No traitor, Thracian, do not think me so simple, but I perceivethy treachery, and well understood thy drifts, nor do thou think to escape my hands, This Knight indeed was Argalus who hearing his words, was so overcome with rage, that marking where his Armour was most broken, he gave him such a violent thrust, that the purple blood followed his keen sword: which wound was more deadly then all that he had before received, that bending all his forces to revenge the same, he smote so fiercely and nimbly at Argalus, that in the end with many grievous wounds, he beat him from his horse, and lightly pulled off his Helmet and knew him: with that he said, Argalus what offence have I done thee that thou shouldst say my deare, O, wherein did I ever merit other then friendship at thy hands? Most unkind dissembler, thou shalt receive a fit reward for thy villany: wherewith feeling the smart of the wound he had lately given him oppress his heart, he thrust his sword into his body, which ended his life, and laid down weary with travail, and faint with effusion of blood that his eyes began to dazle, and he fel down upon the earth as one bereft of sense.

Amatennus all that day missing the Knight of Fame, began to suspect that some other challenge had caused him to depart,

to secretly but hearing that Argalus and Themides were in his company, whom he thought to be his enemy, he was somewhat diminished, but when he grew towards night: and none of them yet returned, he then began to mend his way to search the wood, that calling for his horse, he presently rode forth well accompanied, commanding one to post this way, and another that way, about the Forrest to seek the Knight of Fame, himself rode forth way his horse, and by chance, directed by good fortune, he rode truly towards the place where the challenge was made, as he passed by the Hurro-lane, that he saw a man lying helpless one of the stones all battered with blood, and lying without his side, which struck a sad blow to his heart, overriding down the Lane, espied the dead bodies with ghastly countenances, being the fearful sight of a man that shot eye wide. The first that he beheld was Themides, almost as if he were by his own sword, with blood still in the throat: that he came to the other, found the Knight of Fame: whose body that the traces with griefe could not be removed without violence. Next he came to Argalus whose face was covered with blood, he saw him and last of all by came to Parismenos who was groveling with his face to the ground, still grasping his bloody sword in his hand, where he layeth a great while, that in all hast lifting up his head, he saw him standing by, he knew him to be the Knight of Fame, and perceiving some life yet to remain in him, he hurried him with his arms, and gently layd him up close, that his wounds might not take ayre, causing him to be carried to his Castle, where one of the dead knights he likewise caused to be carried back which was done with great lamentations, and after making up his appointment honourable buried.

How the Knights returned without any newes of *Violenta*: Of the sorrow *Pollipus* made further absence, departing in her search. How *Violenta* having endured many miseries in *Archas* his Castle, at last escaped from thence in *Serana* disguise.

**C** Bohemian Knights by the commandment of *Parismus* and the Thessalian Knights, for the affection they bare to *Violenta*, being posted through most part of Bohemia, made most diligent search, leaving no place that was not searched, nor labour unpertained: yet they returned without any newes of her at all: which returned *Pollipus* to know aforesaid, that but even then he was certain of little of *Parismus* persuasion. But when he saw *Violenta* to be heard of no more, any likelihood left for him to see her again: *Parismus* was now and then supposing what should be become of her: his heart was so forwardly overcome with trouble and agitation, and was so full of care, that he could not resolve in his heart, nor rage and grief could not calm his mind: but yet still the doubt of her was so to torment him, and so to afflict his heart, that he frequently those solitary walks where he left her, and sometimes leaving his followers, by the sad remembrance of her absence, uttering such mournfull plaints and lamentations, that the wayes that he walked were frequented places, seemed to moorne and lament with him. Sometimes accusing himself of negligence, to leave her to pursue the Bear, blaming her that would not stay his turn: and then again fretting his heart for accusing her, sometimes thinking she was dead, and then again persuading himself she was alive, then musing why she did not come to him if she were alive, that by contraries and doubts he could have no ease to his cares, nor rest to his heart. At last

determined to search throughout all Germany the Country, but he would find her for he had already thought she was dead, being there to search. For that he might not find her, he thought of a way, being persuaded by *Parismus* that some courteous Knight had taken her, and so he thought he would return: that within some dates, arming himself in good armour, which he made at purpose, bearing this device, A Knight pursuing a wild Beare. (he left the Bohemian Court, making none pay to his departure but *Parismus*, who he promised not to stay long behind him) and so he went on his journey, and spoke of *Violenta*, to whom he left word in *Archas* Castle.

As soon as the two Gentlewomen had conveyed her to the bed, with the comfortable medicines they used, began to be somewhat relieved, and calling her to them, they began to make such usefull lamentations, that his heart was able to endure to bear them without effusion of tears: often times offering to do her some violence, but that she would stop her. The two Gentlewomen, especially one of them, *Serana*, was so careful over her, that she left not to watch over her about her. Where with she might do her some harm: but when some time was past, and the extremity of her desperate passion somewhat calmed, she began to desire that *Archas* would come to her to the Bohemian Court. That so she might see *Pollipus*, get to enjoy the comfortable presence of *Parismus* and *Laurandus*, notwithstanding her manifold distraction, they used some excuse or other, to frustrate her expectation, telling her, that it was dangerous for her to travel by reason of her late sickness: and thus she was kept from seeing *Pollipus* and *Parismus* in *Serana* and *Laurandus*. The night following them some few days, until she was better able to endure so long a journey: after that the Bohemian Court was not so near as she thought, and she began to be more impatient, and the more she desired to see them, but she was so distressed by her sickness, that she was not able to endure so long a journey: after that the Bohemian Court was not so near as she thought, and she began to be more impatient, and the more she desired to see them, but she was so distressed by her sickness, that she was not able to endure so long a journey.

Having well weighed each circumstance of her bringing out  
 her, and their friendly speeches to detain her there, and  
 withall noting their behavours and speeches, began to suspect  
 Archas dissimulation: to find out the truth thereof, she began  
 contrary to her inward thoughts to frame a cheerful counte-  
 nance, and comfortable disposition: thereby to false their in-  
 fence, which wrought such effect, that within a while Archas  
 would often frequent her company, and in the end proffered  
 her to be, using her most kindly, sincerely, and tenderly, to  
 make above all things, to regard her quiet and content, whose  
 speeches she endured quietly, who took in good part (as he  
 thought) that upon a time, among many speeches, calling  
 her by the name he said,

Most humble and Obedient, I have since since the first view of  
the (excellent) beauties, being rendered with the passions  
of entire love, so that I could take no quiet, but in the sweet  
remembrance of your perfections, which have bound my de-  
votions to your service in such a kind and constant design,  
that my only consolation is to suspend my life (if it were not  
shou'd and were desired to me then it is) to procure your con-  
sent; therefore, thus boldly I presume to reveal my affec-  
tions, trusting your clemency will add some ease unto my  
carefull heart, by showing some edifying sign of your in-  
ferable acceptance of my humble suit; and though my me-  
rits hath no way deserved such favours, yet for life sake seeke you  
to make my life of my loyalty, and my faithfull and I will be in-  
deavour to keep in good will, nor violate any protected loyalty  
in any dutifull respect.

[illegible]

robby poor sacred beauty. Which words being ended, he of-  
fend to have kill her; but she gently refusing the same, made  
this reply,

But Knight, my sorrows will not suffer me to believe your  
pleas, nor my late loss suffer me to entertain your love:  
So then might you offend me light, and as lightly won, as  
little to regard me, but to put you out of suspense, my resolu-  
tion is, never to love any but my dear Pollipas, wherewith  
the chrysalis teares with a violent passage, fell from her grief-  
swollen eye-bags.

That grief (quoth he) is remediless: Therefore banish the sad remembrance thereof from your heart, and entertain a persuasion of my constancy and true affection, which everlastingly will remain inviolable without intermission.

How can I (quoth he) in conscience, and without everlasting shame to my honour, when I have neither performed his funerall, nor shewed any token of duty to his dead corpes. who loved me most dearly in his life-time. But shew me this labour, as to let me but returne to the Count to bewail his death, and awhile enjoying dear friends company, and I promise and protest, next to Pollipus to love none but your self.

Archas hearing her make such an indifferent and reasonable demand, stood like one amazed, as not knowing what answer to make her: Thinking that if he should deny her that request, being so small, she might think his love to be but tender: And if he should promise her and not perform, that might be a means to breed a further suspicion in her, that all his reports to her were false: So that he stood making a great while confounded in his thoughts what to resolve to a ready answer.

May, Study not for that (another Violetta) but answer me an  
other time, which said, she withdrew her self into her Cham-  
ber, where she began to meditate of his speeches, & how he was  
astonished, when he requested him to convey her to the Court:  
which drove her into many cogitations; when presently one  
of the Gentlewomen came to her, whom she asked most kindly,

and of purpose to tell her mind: great into familiar conference with her: And amongst many other speeches (quoth she) I pray tel me what Archas hath reported unto you concerning Pollipus, for he seemeth unwilling to utter his mind unto me. He told me nothing (quoth she.) which words came from her with such fluttering and change of countenance, that Violetta began to suspect, that Archas had all this while dissembled with her, and that Pollipus contrary to his report was yet living. And when Sorana came she likewise felt her mind, of whom she gathered some probability. And likewise when she next came in Archas company, she asked him so many questions, that she found many contrarieties in his speeches, which settled such a perwarlike opinion in her mind, that Archas report of Pollipus was untrue, that she rested greatly comforted that way, but yet in great care, cogitating what he would suppose was become of her: Whom she should get out of that place, or give him knowledge of her being there, and avoid Archas odious Love, which seemed as deadly to her heart as infectious Venoms.

Archas still prosecuted his suite with great earnestness, making many feebulous excuses, to withhold her from the Bohemian Court, growing into such boldness, that oftentimes when she refused his offered embracings and impudent behaviours, he would by force kiss her, and hold her in his arms, which rudeness he so often used, that she began not readily to abhorre him, but his sight was odious in her sight.

Oftentimes Violetta did walk into a pleasant Orchard adjoining to the Castle as well to recreate her dulled senses in those pleasant shades, as in solitariness to recount her miseries, and ease her careful heart, by inventing means how to rid her self from that Abyzynth of sorrow, and also to avoid Archas odious sight, who inwardly lusted to satiate his inordinate appetite, by obtaining the fruition of her delicate body, and though he knew Pollipus were living, and heard the moanes and sorrowfull complaints, Violetta made able to overcome any tyrannous disposition, yet he persisted in his ob-

bellying

bellying resolution, that neither regarding her complaints, nor the Latens of Nature, he still sought all disloyall opportunities to dishonour her. And on a time marking when she went into the Orchard as she was wont, in midst of her silent cogitations, he came to the place where she sat, whose heart began to faint with a kinde of fear, when she beheld him, and cawning unto her, seating himself close by her sweet side, he uttered these speeches.

You know dear Lady, how long I have sued to obtaine your love, being thereto compelled by the extremity of loves everlasting flame, which boylets in my troubled breast, but hitherto you have obdurated your heart against me, and not thoughtless to yield any pity to my distress, but contrary to the kinde nature that should abound in you, seem not at all to regard my passions, which hath added sorrow to my torment. Now sweet Lady, seeing with what devotions I have attended your pleasure, deferre me no longer, but let me obtain that favour, which with such care I have expected, and you so unkindly withhold: which would both ease my comfortlesse heart, and adden small content to the remediless sorrows you so impatiently endure.

Violetta hearing his speeches, made this reply. Sir, I have long since told you my resolution, which might be a sufficient answer to any reasonable creature: besides, my vows passed to my dear Knight Pollipus, have bound me from yielding my spotless honour to be stained with the blot of Infamy. When I pray leade off to prosecute your suite, which you ground upon loves foundation, being indeed nothing but the insatiable desires of the filthy concupiscence: the remembrance whereof addeth new care to my careful heart, and every way affrighteth me with discontent: and if you so much regard my content, as you protest, desist to trouble me with your love, and give me leave to depart from hence, that I may spend the rest of my dayes in sorrow, for his losse, that was more dearer unto me, then all the worlds treasure.

I but Lady (qu. Archas) calme this discontent with remem-

hance of an impossibility in obtaining ought at his hands, and go not about to mar those heavenly perfections with folly, and seem not stranger then reason requireth, to him that loveth you as well as *Pollipus* ever did: And now that occasion hath so fully offered the sweet opportunity of time and place, let us spend this time in love, and not in these contentions: these unfrequent pathes add means to further our joyes: There are no eyes to behold us, nor any to betray our secrets: but the silent trees and the still flowing waters: and that which is unknown, is in a manner unconcerned: and in requitall of your kindness, I will perform whatsoever you shall command me, were it to run through the flames of death to procure your content: that I should love be had to unkind, but, pelted some pity to my softest cares, and bestir not from me that pleasant delight, which will extinguish my bitter griefs. When he had ended his speeches, he straitly caught her tender body in his arms, smothering & compelled kisses upon her tender lips, twisting her tender locks about his greivous fingers, and boldly fingring her tender breasts, offering other forced behaviour: whilst she strived to untwine her body off his arms, which when he had obtained, casting a disdainfull countenance upon him (like as *Diana* cast up on the wofull *Acteon*) with her cheeks as red as scarlet, he uttered these speeches. Most dishonourous villain, with my lemy enforced thee to offer me this abuse: or is thy mind so far from pity, as not to desist from prosecuting thy detested lust? Know this, that rather then I will yeild my honour to be blemished by thy appetite, I will tear these eyes from forth my head, and end my wofull life which thou soughtest to spill. Is this the friendship thou hast protested? Was it thy policie to intice me hither to dishonour me? Hadst thou left me in the place where I lost my beloved, then had I been happy if some wilde Beast had ended my life. I now perceive thy protestations are but filthy actors of thy intended villany, and all which thou hast told me of *Pollipus* death, to be most false and untrue: for no doubt he is yet living, whom thou seekest to disho-

dishonour, by spoyling me of that which I reserved for him, accursed wretch that I was, to fall into thy odious hands, which art void of Knightly behaviour.

*Archas* hearing himself thus rebeld, abandoned shame and pity, violently pulling her to him; told her, that she should submit her self to his will, offering by force to attain the fruition of her spallless body. When *Violetta* felt her self so handled, she laboured by all means to disappoint him of his will: but in the end, feeling her self unable long to withstand his force, she yielded forth such shrieks, as all the castle rung with the noise of her out cry: that *Sorana* hearing the same, knowing the place where she used to come thitherwards, *Archas* beholding her, withheld himself, and *Violetta* rose from the place, tyed with resistance, and swollen with inward vexation, and disdain to be so used, casting her countenance down to the earth: To whom *Sorana* said. How now Lady, what causeth your sorrow? Hath *Archas* offered you violence? *Violetta* with her tears trickling down her crimson cheeks, answered: yea, that villain *Archas* would have done me violence: had not you so fortunately come to my rescue: but I think the Divine providence, hath sent you hither so happily to preserve me from his heaving lust, whose dishonourable mind is fraught with all villanies: accursed be the day, that he first brought me to this hateful place, to fall into his loathsome power: that contrary to Nature hath done me this outrage. Sweet *Sorana* (quoth she) convey me secretly into the Castle, that there I may in sorrow end my accursed life, rather then again to abide his loathsome sight, which will be as pestilent as deadly poison to my heart. *Sorana* taking her by the arm to support her weak body, led her to her chamber. *Archas* likewise seeing himself thus frustrated of his desire, with an impudent and unchaste countenance, went into the Castle, believing in his heart, never to desist until he had accomplished his desire.

*Violetta* being come to her Chamber, related to *Sorana* the whole manner of *Archas* usage, entreating her counsell, which



way to avoid his fates, which she knew he would still prosecute: who uttered her mind in this sort. Lady I pity your estate, but I am so far from adding release thereto, as that I know no meanes at all how to comfort you: For Archas his disposition I too well know, is far from any spark of honesty, who hath in like sort behav'd himself to me at my first coming hither, which was in the prime of my youth: neither give any credit to his reports: for he hath told me that Pollipus is yet living, and long since I suspected he would use you in this sort, and escape from hence you cannot: for this castle is continually garded, having but one entrance thereto, where by none can escape undescried; therefore I think it best for you to yield to his love, and then you may live in quiet: otherwise I know your life will be miserable enough.

Violetta was stricken into a sudden amazement to hear her detested counsell, thinking to have found some comfort in her speeches: in so much that with extremity of passions, she was ready to give up the ghost. Which Sorana beholding reviving her with rubbing her pale cheekes, she said as followeth.

If you will follow my advice and counsel, I may peradventure ease you in some respect, which is this; That the next time when Archas comes again to sollicite his fate, condescend to his request, conditionally, that he will come to you in the silent of the night, so secretly that none may know thereof, and that only he satisfie himselfe with your Love, without asking questions, or entering into any talk, which may renew the remembrance of your former griefs, and when you have upon these conditions agreed, my self will supply your room, and thereby safeguard your Honour, and satisfie him: which may well be performed, considering that his desire is nothing but Lust, he easily will be drawn to condescend to your conditions, which once done, let me alone to execute the rest: for I am so well acquainted with his fashions that it shall be long before he betray our decety.

Violetta hearing the circumstances of her talk, promised to

do all things according to her counsell, if she her selfe meant faithfully. Which Sorana assured her of by many protestations, and so left her in some comfort, hoping by this means to be rid of her impudent Lover.

As soon as Sorana was departed, she presently goeth to Archas, (picked forward with as great a sting of sence Lust, as raign'd in him) and told him, that she had talked with Violetta about his fate, which she was perswaded she would yield unto, but that she was bashfull, and by his speeches, rather hardned, then any way mollified, but (quoth she) try her even now, and whatsoever she bindeth you unto by condition, that promise you to perform: and when you know her mind, tell me what she says, and I may peradventure counsel you what to do for your furtherance: for she is worthy to be beloved, and kindly used, and in my judgement, you do amisse, to use her so rudely as you did in the Orchard; for forced kindness is not worth estimation, but consent in Love breeds the sweetest delight.

Archas presently put her counsell in practise, and came to Violettas Chamber (who was then studying how to rid her self from his custody) and very kindly saluted her, craving pardon for his last offence, excusing himself by many reasons, alledging as many perswasions, that she could not in reason deny his request: his love being grounded upon the truest foundation of perfect constancy, of othes, oaths, and protestations, to dedicate himself, his life, and all that he had to be at her command. Violetta casting down her eyes to the earth and (with a blushing countenance, to think how much it went against her heart, to use him kindly) asking pardon of Pollipus in her secret thoughts, for doing him that unwilling wrong at last made answer, that she could in some sort be contented to grant his request, if he would promise to perform what she should injoy him to, which he vowed and protested to fulfill in every respect.

Then she concluded with him as Sorana had counselled her to do, which liked him exceeding well; and gave her for a pledge hereof, give me that ring which you so much esteem: which he gave

gave to her, and at his departure received from her a gentle kiss, which she wished might prove as deadly poison to his heart, being greatly discontented with her. Left for she wing him that favour.

Archas presently with a joyfull countenance went to Sorana, and told her all that had passed betwixt him and Violetta: which she smiled him in any wise to perform: and seeing she hath bound you from talk, what need you care for speaking. If you may enjoy what otherwise you desire: and she finding you so willing to condescend to her request, will be the easiest drawn to yield you any courtesie. Sorana being parted from him, immediately came to Violetta, and told her all that he had made her privy unto, and withall said, that for her sake only she undertook that task (which was nothing so, but of a most inordinate desire of beastly lust, which Violetta well noted) and thus they spent the day in much tale talk, until evening drew nigh, then she left Violetta in her chamber, and went unto that sweet bed, which she had neatly dress for Archas, performing her self with many odoriferous waters, debasing all the means she could to keep her self unknown from him, being affected with great desire for his approach. As soon as the appointed time was come, Archas secretly conveyed himself in the dark, into Violetta's chamber, without speaking a word, whom when Sorana heard rustling upon the rushes, her heart leapt for joy: and she prepared her self to entertain him in the kindest sort, who approaching the bed-side, softly lifting up the clothes, layd himself down by her side, who seemed so unlike thereat, and with such cunning behaved her self, that he nothing supposed that he had embraced his wanted Sorana.

Violetta being sure of Archas, with all haste attyred her self in Sorana's apparel, which so well became her, that had Archas himself seen her, he would not have discovered her disguise, and taking with her the Ring he had given her, she came to the Guardians, telling them she must go about a little business for Archas, and gave them the ring as her warrant to passe by. The Guardians marvelled whether she went

to late, yet taking her for no other than Sorana, accepting her without let her depart, Violetta being past the entrance, began to study which way to take, but knowing that the time now yielded no respite to delay, took any way came into her mind. As soon as she thought for her escape, and with all haste, arming her self with as much courage as could possibly be in a woman, forsaking the mountains, which she thought dangerous for wild Beasts, she travell'd all that night, sometimes resting, and sometimes going, as if Archas had been hard at hand pursuing her, and by that time Phœbus began to illuminate the earth with his brightnesse she was gotten a great way from Archas Castle, towards Greece, rejoicing at her happy escape, not caring which way she went, so she might get from him, and applauding Sorana's counsell, which had led to that unexpected issue for her escape.

#### CHAP. VI.

How Pollipus was taken prisoner by the Gyant Brandamor in the Port of Arad, And of Parisinus departure with Tillamor and Barisilla, in search of Violetta.



After Pollipus was departed from Parisinus, he came to the place where he left Violetta, and there he uttered these speeches. This is that blessed place, where my love lay last folded in mine arms, whose presence was the solace of sweet content, whose perfections, excelled the rarest gifts of other Ladies, as scarce as god himself, but by his contrary: which way should I come to recover that invaluable Jewel of my delight here lost. Or whether should I travell to find her, considering I know not whether she be dead or alive.

And I am persuaded she is not, but by some discontented knight, withheld from returning. Or contrary: scarce heard into some unknown place, from whence she cannot send me word, or any way give me knowledge in what state she is.

maineth: then what resteth for me to doe, but to search the world throughout to find her, and either to recover her, to my comfort, or spend my life in that pursuit: and since I undertake a traivale, without knowledge which way to take or whether to convey my steppes, sweet Fortune be so favourable, as to guide me in my traivales, that by thy ayde, I may come to the place of her abode, and attaine the fruition of her heavenly presence, who by thy appointment hathaine into these mischances: and I will for ever dedicate my endeavours to thy service, and continually adore thy name. Which words being ended, he mounted himselfe on his steed, and rode the way his fancy first chose, travailing towards the mountaines that encompass Boemia, but not finding her, being unacquainted in those Countreies, wandered towards Grecia, and travailed without any more hope to find her, then at the beginning, continuing his traivales without intermission, passing many places without any misadventure. At last he came to the great Forrest of Ardea, wherein stood the Castle of the mighty giant Brandamor, the place being invincible, by reason of the situation and strength, whose cruelties committed by him and his brother Argaleus, made him much feared, and his walks eschued of all men.

Which Forrest Pollipus was no sooner entered, but he espied the body of a goodly Knight, that had lately given up the ghost, lie weltered in his blood, which when he had well viewed, and perceived to be quite past recovery, he marvelled how such adventures had bin cause of his death, persuading himself, that those that had done the same, could not be farre off, and so withdrew himselfe into a thicket of bushes where he could not be discerned, to stay until he might discry those that had done the deed. He had not long been shadowed there but he saw a damozell and a squire coming to the dead Knight, with great lamentations bewailing his untimely death, seeming by their behaviour to be quite overcome with extreme misery.

After their lamentation ended, they began to take up the

dead Knight, to whom Pollipus came and demanded what Knight that was, and what misadventure had brought him to that untimely death. The Damozell, casting her eyes up to him, which before were sadly fixed on the earth, said: Sir Knight, to discover the whole circumstance of our mishap, would ask more requisite then the time will now permit: because if we be surprized by our fortune, we are likely to be but partners with him in death. This Knight was named Tirydes son to the noble Duke Amalceus of Thrace, being brought up in the Court of the renowned King of Lybia: who being with the Princess Vencola the Kings only daughter on hunting in the midst of her pastime, she was severed from the rest of her company, and being lost with following the Game, lighted in a pleasant valley, to cole her self, and lay down on the flowrie bankes of a sweet bubling Brook, where she had not long stayed, but she was surprized by a Giant, who with rude behaviour brought her away: wherewith I being moved, ran back to this worthy Knight Tirydes, who with me and this Page, pursued him untill we came to this place, where this noble Knight, charged him to deliver the Lady to him: who lay penning with extreme feare of her life, under his guard: but the Giant presently set upon this Knight, and in long continuance of terrible fight, slew him, by which time many of her Damozells had found us out, whom he with Vencola, notwithstanding their earnest intreaties, conveyed to a Castle not farre hence, whether we secretly followed him, and are now returned to carry back this Knight with this heavy, sorrow to the King. Do not so, quoth Pollipus, but bring me to this Castle, thou shalt soon see I will set her at liberty, or loose my life. Sir (quoth the Damozell) if I thought your father would sort to any good issue I would conduct you thither, but the Giants now within the Castle, and the night now approached therefore we will depart with this dead Knight, as it you please to go thither you may easily find it.

Pollipus seeing her so unwilling lett her, and rode towards the Castle which he found that night, where was our passage.

by a bridge over a mighty huge deep lake, the Castle itself being situated upon a lofty Rock, so well fenced by nature, and strengthened by the art of man, that it was unconquerable, and not to be subdued by force: and coming to the bridge, he found the same drawn up, by means whereof, he thought to vain to attempt of any thing that night, but contented himself to take the cold earth for his bed, and the large stones for his Chamber, where he could take no rest, being troubled with many thoughts, having some hope to find Violetta in that place, which added (though it were unlikely) great courage to his resolution, that viewing the insurmountable strength of the Castle, and well considering how he might well disadvantage the Giant, if he could get him to single fight, in the and such like thoughts he spent most part of the night, until at last he lay him down, and gave a little slumber to his eyes. Early in the morning he buckled on his armour, and mounting his horse, he rode himself under the shadow of a rock, not farre from the Castle, where he might easily see who went out and in thereat.

The first that came out that morning was Argall, mounted upon a goodly courser, armed in very rich armour, whom Pollipus thought had been the Giant the Damazell told him of, whom he thus greeted.

Traitor, art thou the Giant of this Castle, which hast slain the Lady Penola? Argall hearing his peremptory demand, made this answer, I have the Lady Penola in my custody, which I esteem above all the world, but no Traytor as thou termest me. Yes (quoth Pollipus) thou art a Traytor, and worse than a villain, that dost allyest violence to resistance Ladies, that hast not so much valour, as to shew thy self before an armed Knight, but since my Destinies have allotted me to meet thee thus conveniently, I will abate thy pride and correct thy tyranny, and make thee repent the outrages thou hast committed.

Argall hearing his speeches, was so enraged that suddenly he perceived his mighty Paulician, and as suddenly broke

a violent blow therewith at Pollipus, which by the unexpected approach being unresisted glanced on his thigh, and pierced the Armour that the blow appeared, as if it had been a sword. Pollipus seeing how treacherously he had mistaken him, drew his sword and returned that blow, beginning a brave and fierce Combat, which continued for a good space until they had given each other many deep wounds, Argall marvelling at his enemies valour, being never before so roughly handled, laid on his blows with mighty force, but Pollipus being nimble avoiding one, and cunningly warding another, kept himself from any great harm, and in the end tired Argall, who seeing that all his strength little availed to his disadvantage, and withall feeling himself almost wearied, began to abate his blows, which Pollipus perceiving, gave him so many blows, and withall such deep wounds, that he was in great danger of his life: and turning his back, fled towards the Castle, whom Pollipus pursuing, gave so many wounds, that he began to roar and cry exceedingly, yelling forth such a hideous noise, that all the Castle rang there-with.

Brandamor hearing the same, presently halted to his rescue, and lifting up his mighty Mace, with many strokes so furiously therewith upon Pollipus crest, that it made him to stagger, withall saying: Why offerest thou this outrage to my Brother Pollipus seeing his mighty proportion, being somewhat maimed with the blow, retired a little back, and being recovered made this answer. I need not tell thee wherefore, for that thy guilty conscience repleat with vice, can beare witness of the degenerate quality offered to all that come within thy power, but especially to the fair Lady Penola, whom thou dost the better hast brought to this Castle, whom I am come to redeem.

Brandamor hearing his speeches, most cowardly assailed him being before almost wearied, and grievously wounded, who notwithstanding resisted him so bravely, that Brandamor in short time had received many grievous wounds, yet staying

himself, said. I pittie thy estate, and therefore wold thoue  
yeeld thy self, before I chastise thy boldnesse any further, for  
I see thou art already wounded and vnable to withstand my  
strength: besides, I frowne to cope with one already vanquished  
then take my offer of mercy, or else I will forgive that weak  
bagg of thine to be deboured by wild beasts: Vain boasting  
Mortier (quoth Pollipus) know that I disdain thy friendship,  
and disclaim thy proffer, desiring rather to dy by thy accu-  
sed hand, then yeeld to thy courtesie, therefore do thy worst.

Brandamor hearing his resolute reply, being enraged with  
choller, strooke at him most violently, but Pollipus avoiding  
his blow, made a thrust at him, and wounded him so deep, that  
the blood ran down upon his white Steed. Argall seeing this  
knight so gallantly withstand his brother, called forth a great  
squad of servants in Armes, who rushing all at once upon him,  
with their thyng beat him from his horse, and caried him  
into the Castle, where he was wounded, and for that night  
put into a close Watch, having an old woman to dresse his  
wounds.

Early the next morning he was brought into the Hall be-  
fore Brandamor, who had passionately seated himself in a  
Chaire, with fiery red eyes swollen with rage, uttering these  
speeches.

Presumptuous and over daring Knight, what frenzie hath  
caused thee to commit this unadvised folly, whereby thou  
hast incensed my wrath against thee, and brought thy self in  
danger? Wherein have I wronged thee, that thou shouldst  
offer to molest me.

Pollipus desirous to be so peremptorily examined, made  
this reply. I list not to tel my name, because thou knowest me  
not, the cause of my comming hither, is in search of a Lady  
that I suppose thou unjustly detainest, making thy infamous  
name so ignominious by thy outrages, that both heaven and  
earth will shortly hate thee. Dost thou seek a Lady (quoth  
he) come with me, and thou shalt see all the Ladies I  
have.

When

When he brought him into a goodly Hall, hang with an-  
cient cloaths of Tapestrie, out of which he went into a most  
pleasant Gallery, furnished with all sorts of most beautiful  
pictures of excellent workmanship. From thence he came to  
a Chamber of great largenesse, so rarely furnished, as Pol-  
lipus marvelled at the richnesse thereof at the end whereof,  
late the most beautifull and faire Lady Venola, with her gol-  
den hair hanging about her shoulders, her rich and costly or-  
naments all betorn, her crimson cheeks besprinkled with old  
dried teares, and fresh drops flowing from her pure eyes:  
heavily leaning her careless head upon a cushion, with her hands  
hanging down folded one in another, seemed so sad and heavy,  
Aspectacle of a distressed Lady, as never eye beheld: who seeing  
Brandamor and Pollipus comming towards her, lifted up her  
head from the place where she rested it, and carelesly let the  
same fall on the heavy pillow again. Pollipus seeing her ex-  
ceeding beauty, and withall noting her heavy estate, was brow-  
ned into a sudden dump, that he stood like one in a stupor.  
Brandamor thinking that was the Lady he sought to redeem,  
last night, if this be the Lady thou seekest to release, thy la-  
bour is in vain: for her, do I esteem more then all the worlds  
whose presence I so highly honour, that no force shall redeem  
her from hence: whom I both love and honour, as much as thou  
and all the knights in the world, because whose love hath car-  
ried my languishing torments this long time, which now I pur-  
pose to enjoy, to the extinguishing of my inward vexations: for  
her sake have I endured much trouble, then do not think that  
I will easily or willingly leave her heavenly company: but  
will approve and maintain, that I am too true to her love,  
then any knight living, and since I have my desire to attain to  
her custody, I will likewise enjoy her love before she depart.  
Venola hearing his proud boasting, so much distressed thereby,  
that she could not refrain from answering him, and rising from  
the ground where she sat, she uttered these speeches and words  
dependent intireant: why presumest thou so much of thy  
self, that art able to perform nothing but dragges, thinkest  
thou



than my hope of small estimation, as to be contoured and conquered by thy vain speeches, or any way to yield liking to the detested carnality: No, I account the basest Trull in Ley to be good to be thy paramour, much less my self so so much from thee, that I will rather create my own death, then suffer thee to vex me so much as with a touch: and thinkest thou because thou hast betrayed this one knight by treachery, thou art so bold that thou wilt seek my release: Yes, be thou assured, that the violence thou hast offered me, in bringing me hither against my will, one day will turne to be the occasion of thy cruel death.

Thou shalt besteede better, leave off to utter such boasting speeches in my presence, for nothing can be more grief to my heart, then thy ill pleasing sight.

Brandamor hearing her heavenly voyce sound forth such bitter taunts against him, was exceedingly enraged therewith, but dissimbling a pleasant countenance, he departed with Polipus, whom after some speeches past betwixt them, he contrived to be conveyed to a Chamber, from whence he could hardly get, as from the strongest prison in the world: Whose seeing that Violetta was not in the Castle, wished he had not attempted to have come thither, but making a virtue of necessity, he endures such imprisonment as patiently as might be, thinking all misery nothing, being undergone for Violettas sake: And thus will I leave him to speak of Parismus.

Parismus heart was oppress with such griefs, for the loss of the beautiful Violetta, and the absence of his dear friend Polipus, that day nor night he could neither be sleep, nor other recreation, give any ease to his troubled head, therefore he determined likewise, to make some travail for their sakes, that had suffered much misery in his behalf: and when Laurana and he were one night, sweetly solacing themselves each in the others pleasant love, he told her his full intent, desiring her not to be discontented therewith, but to take his departure patiently.

Lan.

Laurana hearing his speeches was so overcome with griefe, that floods of teares distilled from her precious eyes, and clasping her tender armes about his neck, imprinting a sweet kiss upon his lips she uttered these speeches. Most noble Lord, are you weary of my company, that you seek to estrange yourself from me by travail: No you think I shall be ever able to endure your absence: Well knowing how many dangers may hazard your person, and detain your heavenly presence from my sight: Think you that I can attain any quiet, without the fruition of your heavenly company: No, ever faster I am to seize upon my eyes while you are absent: No sweet Lord, with your departure all joy and delight shall part from me, and never will I suffer any content to harbour in my breast. Then most dear Love, (which words she uttered intermingled with a number of sweet kisses) do not withhold my content, do not take away my sweetest delight, but stay you still with me, and command your knights to go in Viollettas search, who at the least heere, will pass through the world to pay service: and hazard not your person to strange countries, nor amongst foreign enemies, which may by some cruel way work your grief: my self will here shadow you from harm, my arm shall inclose you from danger, and my Love shall be the fort you shall conquer. I will expell the fear, revenge the loss of their love, with delightfull commination, my self will Rock your senses with music, and my endeavours shall labour to purchase your content, then do not seek to leave me comfortlesse to bewaile your absence, but make a love with me still and my Love shall shelter you from all perill. Which words being ended, the overflowing of her teares stoppt the passage of her speech, and sobbing softly she hung about his neck,

Parismus was exceedingly grieved to see her heaviness, that holding her precious body in his armes, with a strict embracing he laboured by delightfull familiarities to expell her sadness, which being somewhat mitigated, he uttered these speeches. My dear Lady, what need you make these complaints.

considering you know nothing is so pretious in my sight, no  
of so dear estimation with me, as your sweet love. O, what  
and you make speech, O, take such fear of dangers, when you  
see no cause of disquiet? why are you unwilling that I should  
take a little paines for their sakes, that would have many  
lives endangered their lives, and endured extreme misery  
for your sake? Why can I excuse my letter of ingratitude, to  
that courteous knight Poliphus? If whilst he passeth his time  
in sorrowfull care, I should live here in ease, not seeming to  
regard his misery, that would have shunned no danger to pro-  
cure my comfort? How will all the knights of the Court e-  
steem of me, but as of an ungratefull person, if I should so  
much neglect the duty of a friend? Then sweet love, be not you  
the cause of my stay, but let me obtain your sweet consent,  
exceed those confused cares that trouble your quiet: for be you  
assured, nothing can be more grievous unto me then your dis-  
content, and nothing more pleasing, then your accord. The dan-  
gers accurrent to trouble, are by wisdom easily avoided:  
than be you assured that I will shunne all hazard of misday,  
for your sweet sake, and leave you off to sorrow thus for that  
which you cannot with equity contradict: my stay shall not be  
long, nor my journey farre: then be you content to vouchsafe  
your agreement, and you shall thereby satisfie my content. His  
speeches being ended, with silence she gave consent, spending  
some time in sweet dalliance, and in the end fell fast asleep.  
Early next morning Parisinus with many sweet kisses took  
his leave of Laosana, who bestowed her bed with abundant  
embraces for his departure, and falling into a deep passion of  
tear, she presently started up, and embracing her selfe, came  
down into the Court, where Parisinus was ready to take his  
horse, & running to him, caught hold of him, who marvailling  
thereat, took her most lovingly in his armes, who was so far  
overgone with grief, that she could not speak a word, but be-  
shewing many sweet tear wet kisses on his cheek, let her armes  
hang down, and departed. With him were Tullius and Bar-  
zillus keeping company together some three dayes, without any  
adven-

venture at all: at last, they came to a goodly plain, where  
was a common beaten path, conducted them, and continuing in  
the midst thereof, there stood a huge Pillar, from which part-  
ed three severall waies: there they stayed debating amongst  
themselves which of those waies to take at last: they con-  
sidered that each of them should take a severall way, and so-  
onely taking their leaves with kind farewells, they betook  
each other to their good or bad fortunes.

## C H A P. VII.

How (Parisinus) called the Knight of Fame, won the chief  
honour of the Tourney, at the Court of the King of Thra-  
ce. And having won Phylena, the Kings daughter, was com-  
manded in a Vision, to give her to Remulus.



Parisinos no other wise known, but by the  
name of the Knight of Fame, under which  
name, he did prove till he came to the know-  
ledge of his parents being as is before said  
in another Chap: conveyed by Amalcius  
to his Castle, where wounded in the battel he  
had with Argalus and Themides, was so  
carefully tended by the Dukes Whistons, that in a few daies  
they had brought him to his perfect remembrance: and  
within short time after that, to his perfect health, which  
greatly rejoiced the good old Duke, who took great delight  
in his company, for the many comfortable parts he lent to  
him. And upon a time in the presence of all his Court,  
demanded the cause of the Combate between him and Ar-  
galus, which he requested as well to know the truth thereof him-  
self, as to satisfy the suspitions which of many that inwardly  
maligned the discontented Knight, unto whom he declared  
the truth in manner as is before set down, saying: This my  
Lord is the truth of his misadventure, whom I never injured,  
but always esteemed as my friend, Amalcius was glad that

no cause of discontent could be conceived against him by any other of his knights, who envied him, because his noble glim darkened their glories: but yet his courteous and kind behaviour in short time expelled that rancour and they that before were his enemies, began to make good estimation of him and his fame began to spread it self in most parts of Thrace; and all that ever beheld him grew into admiration of his strength accompanied with such beauty, as his youth yielded: that had they not known the contrary by his promise they would have taken him for some disguised *Adonis*. At this the knight of Fame remained in Amasenus Court, the king of Thrace appointed a generall Triumph, to be held for certain dayes the occasion whereof was this.

He had one onely daughter named Phylena, whose beauty was inferiour to none: and her gifts of nature were such, as made her much spoken of in many Countries: in somuch as many knights came as late as to obtaine her Love, but she had so cruelly betreated her self to Remulus, one of the knights of her Fathers Court, without her Parents consent: by meanes of whose beauty, the Court of Thrace was full of gallant knights that sought her Love, that the king was much troubled in mind how to bestow her, and seeing that she did not fancy one more then another, he appointed a generall triumph to be held for seven dayes, and whosoever bare away the Prize the last day should marry his daughter, intending thereby to end his daughters care that way: thinking, that though his daughter had not a rich and princely husband, yet she should have a valiant Champion to defend the prize of her beauty.

Amongst the rest of the knights, there was Guido, who had long time sued to obtain her love, who now rejoiced at this decree, hoping by his valour to bear away the Prize. There was Trudamor of Candie, who thought none equal to him in strength, and therefore none more forward against the time of the appointed Triumph. There was Drio of Sicil, who had sailed from his own Country thither: who likewise by his strength at severall times slew three Lyons, who came with resolu-

resolution to winne Phylena for his wife: And many other knights of high account.

The report of this great Triumph came to the knowledge of the knight of Fame, whose mind was kindled with an earnest desire to go thither, that he requested Amasenus consent, who being desirous any way to please him gave him full licence to turne him at all things, as for such an attempt, who raised a most rich Army of great to be made: he bestowed three Trees of gold, presenting a Forrest. In his shield he bare his devise, A naked man leading a Lyon, with this Motto underneath, *Over gone with Discontent*. Wherein the valiant Artiman had so cunningly imitated his fancy, that a man by his arms, and shield might easily understand his meaning.

The appointed time of triumph drawing nigh, Amasenus with a gallant troop of knights, amongst whom the knight of Fame was chief, came to the Thracian March, whom the king most honourably received.

Amasenus having done homage to the king, pitched his tent without the Court gates, upon a little hill, hard by the appointed place for triumph: where likewise hard by him were the tents of Guido, Trudamor, Drio, and the valiant knights of Candia, Priscamus, Tenculus, and Rhyllus, in whose company were a number of halant knights that came thither, some to make trial of their valour, and some of purpose to win the prize Phylena. Likewise there were the tents of the young king of Arragon: who came accompanied with a number of valiant knights, hoping to bear away the Prize, that all the plains were filled with tents. There might you see knights breaking staves, practising themselves against the day of triumph. There might you see others recreating themselves in Martiall exercises: there might you hear the neighing of horses, clattering of armour, cracking of staves, and such companies of knights assembled, as if the richest prize had been assembled for reward.

Whilst these things were acting, Phylena was in great care to Remulus, whom she loved so dearly, that rather then she would

would part with himselfe would endure any misery whatso-  
ever: who likewise adressed himselfe to try his fortune  
amongst the rest. And the day before the Triumph, Phylene  
secretly getting opportunity to speak with him, gave him  
this assurance of her Constancy.

My dear Lord (quoth she) since my Father hath decreed the  
publick Triumph for the bestowing of me in Marriage, he  
considered so many Knights as have sought my Love, I  
have affiance my self to none of them, but have chosen you  
as the chiefest Lord that of my life and Love: Be you then  
assured, that though Fortune may allow me to be another by  
Conquest, yet none but you shall enjoy my Love: and  
though another may challenge me by right of my Fathers de-  
cree, yet none but you shall have true interest in me. And  
rather then I will yeeld to like of any Knights love but yours,  
I will endure either death, or any other torment shall be in-  
flicted upon me: for you are the Knight that shall conquer my  
Love: you shall by conquest winne my Love, and you shall  
winne it. For being no Knight that rob me of that which I  
have given to you: When shall you be comforted, or any way  
offended, but try your fortune amongst the rest, and you  
may happily winne for the Conquest as well as any other.

Remulus hearing his Ladies constant resolution, was  
thereunto with exceeding joy, resolving to adventure as much  
as any to attain the desired Conquest: and following him  
self so long as that which she would permit in her company,  
being by necessity compelled, they parted.

What next ensuing, the King of Thrace accompanied by  
number of personages of Estate, brought forth the beautiful  
and fair Lady Phylene, most richly adorned with costly or-  
naments, wearing upon her head a Crown of gold attested  
by an hundred diamonds clad in white, and seated her upon a  
scaffold, in the open view of all the Knights there assembled,  
whose hearts were enamoured with the sweet aspect of her  
fair beauty, and their senses roused with the hope of  
so rich and precious a Prize. Amongst the rest, there was the

Lord

Lord Remulus, whose heart was oppressed with distrustful fear  
that the Lady he most esteemed, and in a secret plotted love  
was a Prize, to be longed for from his possession: yet contrary  
to his secretall purpose, he took great delight to see that  
Prize made famous, whilst he made account to enjoy.

The Knights of Thrace began the Triumph, and the first  
that entered the Lists, was Andreat, who was at the combat  
opposed by Clearchus, who continued combatant by the or-  
der of many Knights, until Brutus, one of the three  
Mothers of Candie, with violence drove him from his horse,  
and bare one of his ribbes. Babulus imployed many Knights  
afterwards, both of Thrace and other strange Countries, and  
at the end, was opposed himself by Remulus, who behaved  
himself valiantly in the sight of the King, and that by the  
opie of many Knights he ended that dayes Triumph, to his  
exceeding honour, feeling conqueror until the next morning.  
When the fight was observed, the King commanded Phylene  
in the like manner he had done the day before, and seated her  
again upon the Scaffold. When Remulus came into the lists,  
he was admiring his planting lot, whom Phylene beheld  
with a careful eye, blessing forth many a devoted prayer  
for his good successe, who having conquered some twenty  
Knights, in the end was opposed by Remulus, and so with a  
brave heart left the field. Remulus continued Conqueror by  
the disgrace of many Knights almost all that day, but in the  
end was opposed by the King of Arragon.

The King of Arragon ended the dayes Triumph, and con-  
tinued Conqueror the next day, and on the fourth day, he  
was opposed by Triframus, and so began the Conquest  
which he so much desired.

Afterwards, Triframus continued that dayes Triumph,  
with great bravery, and the fifth day was opposed by An-  
thony a Knight of Lybia, who vanquished that day some knights  
with exceeding honour.

The Knight of Farnie all this while, kept himselfe out of  
the Lists, and was lodged at a village some miles distant from  
the

the



the Thracian Court, and according to Amasenas appointment came towards the Lists gallantly mounted all alone, & by the unexpected manner of his sovaine approach, and by the strange fashion of his Armour, (as Fortune would) was not generally noted: And in that sort he entered the Lists, reverencing himself towards the Scaffold whereon the king was seated, and setting spurs to his horse, encountered Annulus, and (as Fortune intending as the first to do him some disgrace) with his course, and Annulus brake his staffe most bravely, where with the whole assembly gave an exceeding shout, and the knight of Fame being enraged with his oversight, charged another course as Annulus with great violence, and overthrowing him with his heels upwards: whereat the whole company gave an exceeding shout againe, every one thinking he had purposely lost his first course; by which meanes all were desirous to see him run again, which the discontented knight performed so gallantly, that he unhorsed another knight of Lybia, that thought to revenge Annulus his overthrow.

Guido observing thereat, and seeing how the beholders were affected, noted him more specially: thinking by his spurs to winne some speciall honour, and with the more bravery to continue the rest of the triumph, and attain the Prize, taking a strong staffe, prepared to meet the knight of Fame, who by that time had dismounted three or four other knights.

The people seeing the valliant Guido come to the List, who was well known to all, thought then surely to see the discontented knights honour at an end, for on him and Dric, did the chiefest hopes of Conquest depend.

Guido encountered the knight of Fame the first time, without offering or sustaining any disadvantage, which inwardly vexed him to the heart, that charging him againe the second time, notwithstanding all his force, he could not once move him in his saddle. The discontented knight likewise feeling the puissance of his enemy, was exceedingly enraged, that taking another course they met with such fury, that the Earth shook with the force of their encounter, and their horses

shook into a thousand pieces, passing by without any show or sign of odds.

The King of Thrace seeing the day so farre spent, sent a messenger to intreat them to leave the further tryall of their doubtfull Conquest untill the next day, which they both consented unto.

The next morning these two Champions came again, with restless minds to be revenged each of other, and met their courses, with such bravery, that the people with great shouts applauded their chivalry, the knight of Fame, chusing the strongest staffe that he could find, meant now or never to give or take the foyle, and rushing forcibly to encounter Guido, he met him so valliantly, that Guidos horse yielded to the force of their encounter, and falling down hurt his leg, the people seeing Guido down, were driven into a wonderful amazement, what his hurt should be.

Phylena likewise as much tormented in mind, in her fancy shunning him the chiefest honour, and seeing that he was some knight of a strange Country, leaving least he obtaining her by conquest, would carry her far from her Fathers Court, and so quite from the sight, and company of her dear friend Regulus, that she was drawn into such a sad conceit, that her heart seemed to melt thereat. Trudamor seeing Guido so foyled, with great bravery entered the Lists, and fiercely encountered the knight of Fame, who likewise charged him with as many brave encounters, that in the end the conquest remained in great doubt betwixt them; still continuing their courses with exceeding courage, that Trudamor with all his strength could not disadvantage the knight of Fame: nor he by his force get any odds of Trudamor, yet in the end of Trudamor thinking for the honour of the Lists, and longing to enjoy Phylena for his Wife, tracing softly to his races end, went towards the knight of Fame who with the like behavior met him to whom Trudamor said as followeth.

Knight, I see we have no advantage against each other, by this exercise, let us therefore finish the doubtfullness of this



strife with our swords, which is the readiest means to make one of us conquerour. With all my heart (answered he a-  
gaine) your proffer so well agreeth with my fancy, as I nei-  
ther can nor will deny the same: whereupon drawing their  
swords, they charged each other with furious blowes, whose  
courage each beholder greatly commended.

The King of Thrace beholding the Noble valour of the  
Knight of Fame, was exceedingly well affected towards him  
insomuch, that he desired none might enjoy his Daughter but  
he, betwene whom and Trudamor continued a most brave  
Combat: till in the end, the knight of Fame had so grievously  
wounded him and in so many places, that all the beholders ac-  
counted Trudamor as halfe vanquished: and what with effu-  
sion of blood, and overmastered by the knight of Fames strength  
his Armour giving way to every blow, was ready to fall from  
his Horse: which the knight of Fame perceiving, stayed,  
uttering these wordes, spott noble knight (quoth he) I see the  
danger you are in, therefore I with you to yield your selfe,  
for it is not your death that I seek, and rather then I will  
be guilty thereof, I will yield up the praise I shall winne by  
your conquest.

Trudamor hearing his speeches, exceedingly admired his  
courtesie, and being ready to speake, his senses by weakness  
began to faile, and he was taken from his horse, to have his ga-  
ping wounds lanced. The whole multitude of beholders  
noting the singular valour of the knight of Fame, and how car-  
teously he had abstained from killing Trudamor, whose life  
was in his power, were so well affected towards him, that they  
shouted and rejoiced exceedingly at his victory.

The king seeing the day growne to an end, came from the  
Scaffold, and with great intreaties got the knight of Fame to  
goe with him to the Court, where he was most honourably en-  
tertained, and had his wounds carefully searched by the Phy-  
sicians, who found none of them dangerous. Amasenus seeing  
the knight of Fame had wonne the chiefeest honour of the tri-  
umph for that day, came to the king, and reported to him, how  
long

long he had been with him, and the manner of his first arrival  
in that country, seeking to increase the Kings affection towards  
him, by entering into many exceeding commendations of his  
valour, vertue, and courtesie: that the King did him all the ho-  
nour that might be for that night, intending after the Triumph  
ended to expresse his love to him in a higher nature.

Early the next morning being the last day of the triumph,  
the King was summoned to the field, by the shrill sound of the  
knight of Fames Trumpets, who was gallantly mounted at-  
tended on by an infinite number of people, that came to glut  
their eyes with beholding him: there was now no talk, but  
of the knight of Fame, his fame had fed the eares of all, insomuch,  
that such a number of people thronged to see the last  
dayes triumph, that the place could not contain their multi-  
tude. The knights of Thrace marvelled what he should be,  
and so that he was unknown, the strange knights somewhat  
rejoiced, that the Horse should be carried from Thrace. A-  
mongst the rest, Remus having his exceeding courtesie, and  
being more narrowly then any of the rest into his behaviour,  
rejoyced in his mind that so honourable, valiant, and courte-  
ous a knight, should possesse his dear Phylena, and above all  
the knights of the Court he was most ready to entertain the  
knight of Fame with all courtesie, and with that none but he  
might bear away the chiefeest honour of the Triumph.

The king having again in most sumptuous and royall sort  
dressed his daughter upon the Scaffold, attended the first en-  
counter that should be given to the knight of Fame, which  
was performed by Parrus a knight of Sicil with great brave-  
rie, but in the second course he measured his length upon the  
earth as others had done before him. Next him came a knight  
of Lybia who had like fortune to Parrus, Guido being not satis-  
fied with desire of victory, but putting the cause of his last o-  
verthrow to his Horse, not himself, changed his Armour, and  
came into the Lists again, intending to revenge his loss: but  
before he came Drio of Sicil had broken two Steves with the  
knight of Fame, & in taking the third course, Guido instigated  
by

by rage, ran against the Knight of Fame, and intercepted him. Drio obtaining thereon, struck Guido such a terrible blow on the head, with the flat of his sword, that he made him stagger. Whereupon Guido drew out his sword and assailed Drio with great fury, between whom began a most brave combat, untill the Knight of Fame stepped between them & parted them, uttering these speeches: Knights (quoth he) what meaneth this outrage? Why contend you betwixt your selves, and leave me with whom you should principally deal, unanswered, think you I am not of sufficiency to deale with you both, but that you must thus dishonourably seek with private quarrels to dishonour our triall? But notwithstanding his speeches, they began to assault each other afresh, which so enraged him, that drawing his sword, he first struck at Guido, and then at Drio, offering to combat with them both, that the issue of this combat seemed to be most intricate. Sometimes the Knight of Fame assailed Guido, and he resisting, when as Drio lent his blowes to both: and then the Knight of Fame intending to revenge him on Drio, was again assailed by Guido.

The King perceiving the danger this tripartite fight might breed, commanded the Champions to be parted, which being done, the Judges gave order, that the Knight of Fame should continue his course with Drio. His conclusion being made, the Knight of Fame sheathing his sword, went to the races end so full incensed with rage, that his eyes did dazzle with passion. Drio likewise was so fully pale with fury, that he valued at that course to end the triall of the combat: so both of them taking scope enough to meet with the greater swiftnesse, put spurs to their steeds, and with exceeding violence they directed their lances into a thousand pieces which did fly in the ayre: but before the steeds met, Drio winding his reins, intending to overthrow his enemy, and wards, and his latest acquaintance to such customs, bare his head so aloft, that the Knight of Fame's steed, keeping on his continued course, by his own strength overturned both horse and man, that Drio lay almost by his side to death with the weight of his horse.

Guido  
atten.

attending the next triall, had readily conceived his taste, but the Knight of Fame being extremely enraged, not well knowing what he did (having lost of intelligence before given him, that it was Guido the Knight that he had already vanquished) (set spurs to his horse) and came on with his sword point, that had he not stopped him, he had pierced the man quite through his body: who turning himself with his sword drawn assailed the Knight of Fame, between whom continued a brave combat a long space, untill Guido by his terrible blowes was grievously wounded: who intending to revenge himself, struck a most violent blow, which lighting crooke his helmet brake his sword: which the Knight of Fame seeing, cast down his own, and aiming to have his odds of weapons, and joining himself close to Guido, with long striving and main force, in the end slung him down from his horse, where with the people gave such a shout, that the earth seemed to shake with the Echo of their voyces: by which time he caught his black mantle, began to cover his head the whole earth, and there remained no more combatants against the Knight of Fame, but to his unspeakable honour he remained victor. Then present he was in a triumphant manner (according to his custom) with the noise of a trumpet, conducted to the Kings Pallace: where the King & all the vanquished knights greeted him with great honour. Amongst the rest, was the King of Arragon, a most gallant and brave Knight at Armes, who greatly desired to be acquainted with this brave Champion, using him with the rest of the knights with all courtesy and kindness. After many solemn welcomes paid on every side, and he unarmed, the King speaking to him uttered these words: O noble Knight whose prowess hath performed a lasting commendation, according to my former decree, and the promised reward to the Conqueror, I will to your lovely Daughter, the only heir to my Kingdom, when King Phylana by the Lord, he delivered her to him. The Knight of Fame with great reverence kissing her hand, uttered these speeches. O sacred Princess, how can I resist

©

entire

nally rejoyce, that on this day exalted to the highest type of Heavenly felicity, by being eternally preferred to that point of glory. That I beseech you pardon me though I am yet, that humble as to efforts of me, as one that is altogether bound to your service, and though by right of Conquest, I may justly challenge you for my own, yet be you assured, I will request nothing at your hands, but what shall be granted with your free consent: that I need not advise, I humbly beseech you of in all humbleness.

Which words being ended, (he that never before his Ladies lips) with great reverence took of her a sweet kiss, and she with a happy heart, and with behaviour, yielding herself as his to dispose of, which she was constrained to do by her Fathers promise, and the brighten worth of desires: though inwardly in her heart, she devoted all kind Love and affection to Remulus: on whom being by the common mild and modest look inwardly wishing he were the man might claim her by right of Conquest, as well as by the type affection he bore her.

What might the Knight of Fame was honourably treated by the King, and afterwards conducted to a most princely lodging. And being now alone he began to meditate of his state, and to ponder how happily he had escaped shipwreck, and was preferred to such high dignity as to marry the daughter and only heir of a King: which withal he began to call to mind every particular thing, he could remember of his birth and bringing up in the Island of Rocks, his fancy presenting him, that he was so much to some greater personage than he yet knew of in the world, well pleased as himself might be had kept her through his marks long name, which she gave him in charge to keep close, which thoughts, and withal, a secret instinct of nature, which he felt in himself aiming to higher matters, settled a persuasion in his thoughts that he was born of royall race, and therefore meet to marry with Kings Daughter. And calling to mind the exceeding beauty of Phylana, imprinting in his fancy a perfect remembrance

of her graces, sweet countenance and with beholding, he felt a secret stirring and throbbing in his heart, which disturbed all his senses, that he was as it were transformed into a kind of pleasant delight, whereunto he fell into a dead slumber.

In the midst of his sleep the Goddess Venus, pitying the troubled thoughts of her devoted son Phylana, willing to recall the fairs of this Knight, appeared to him in a vision standing by his beds side, with a clear burning taper in her own hand, and holding a most beautiful Lady in the other which shewed her perfection, that neither man nor earth could nor in his fancy frame a more perfect image of purity: the Lady Venus uttering these words.

Thou Knight of Fame regard the words I speak:

Seek not by force, Loves constant hands to break,

Phylana fair the beautiful heyr of Tiburn:

Her constant Love on Remulus doth place,

Desire not then her liking to attain,

But from her Love thy fantasy refrain.

Thy Conquest right, give him that hath her Lover,

And from their hearts the cares thy bide remove,

This Lady bright, thy fantasies shall overcome,

Then to her Love, prove constant, just and true,

First seek her out then to her pleasure tend,

To win her love thy whole affection bend,

Of royall race thy self arightly sprung,

Left by thy friends as thou wert but a page,

Thy Fathers name hath hid the world with praises,

And by Mothers gifts her lasting honours raise,

Bend thy desires their comfort to procure,

Thou for thy love sad sorrows do endure,

Which the Goddess uttered these words, the Knight of Fame diligently marked the exceeding beauty of the Lady she held in her hand, and thinking to have demanded her name

name he presently vanishes, whereunto he awakes.

The remembrance of this vision, drove him into a confused mixture of thoughts, one while persuading himself it was but a dream and not to be regarded, and then again affecting himself it was a vision, like to that which appeared to him in the Island of Rocks, but chiefly such a secret impression of the Ladies beauty was fixed in his remembrance, that he quite forgot and forgot the least thought of Phylena, whose beauty in his fancy was nothing comparable to her divine perfections that calling to mind every particular note he had seen, the perfect Idea of the Ladies countenance, stature and beauty, was so deeply impressed in his heart, that no other thought could sink into his brain, but that the world was the Lady which he should honour, and that he vowed to search the world throughout to find her, and come to the knowledge of his Parents. In these cogitations, he spent the rest of that night.

Early in the morning he was honoured with all diversities of courtesies and most royally treated of the King, and by his appointment should be affianced to Phylena, within six days. The knight of Fame remembering the vision, being most commonly in company of Phylena, diligently noted which might be the knight Phylena loves and soon perceived it was Remulus, who amongst the knights of Thrace, had fought most meanes to honour him, who little thought the knight of Fame had noted the kindnesse betwixt him and Phylena: but he noting all circumstances, perceived that Phylena was deeply enthralled in the hands of Remulus.

For though he were in talk with him, yet he was continually on Remulus, glancing some secret looks (intermingled with sighs) towards him, that he thought it a most discourteous and inhumane deed to part them.

And once taking occasion, when Phylena was in a deep sleep, he said.

O Dear Lady, may I be so bold as to break off your hand, and withdraw you from heaviness to your mind: and expell this careful disposition, and rather spend your time in mirth and pleasure.

pleasure: I have often noted your heaviness, which makes me suppose my unworthinesse to be the cause thereof: but since my interest is such, as that I may claim you for my own, I beseech you do not so much disgrace my travailles, as not to vouchsafe me that kindness which belongeth to the condition of my conquest, and your Fathers decree: and if you esteem me, because unknown, as yet not to have deserved your love, impose me any task, and I will undertake it for your sake, and not onely labour to win your love by desert, as by the Triumph I have attained the interest of your person. But I perceive your cares are such, for some other great occasion, that I am an unwelcome guest, to your company, and another hath already attained your sweet love: which if it be so, sweet Lady hide not the same from me, but make me privy thereto, for I am not of that rude disposition, to challenge any thing, at your hands, or inforce you to any thing, but what shall stand with your liking: and though your vertues force you to yield to your Fathers decree, yet considering that love is not won with sword, but with a mutuall consent of the heart, I yield my self to be censured by you, and give my right of triall into your hands, and the interest I attained by conquest, I surrender to your censure to be revoked or established.

Phylena hearing his words, with teares standing in her eyes, made this reply, most courteous knight, whatsoever I have settled my fancy heretofore, that is now countermanded by my fathers promise, and your interest: that I am not mine owne to dispose of, but must in all humblenesse rest at your disposition.

And if any other had my promise of a love, yet now I must revoke that promise, and labour to attend your liking: therefore I wholly commit my self according to your right of conquest into your courteous hands.

Deer Lady (quoth he) know this, that I account my self unworthy of that Honour, and am unwilling any way to contradict your will, or disturb your quiet: but knowing that which you unweildly conceal, will surrender my estate

State to the Knight you most fancy: for the honour I have won shall be my sufficient reward: therefore I beseech you, conceal no part of your mind from me, for I will not deny to perform any thing you shall command, but will hazard both life and honour to satisfy your fancy, and any way procure your content.

Phylena with a blushing countenance made this short reply: Most noble Knight, Remulus is the Knight I have long esteemed: but must now forsake him, or purchase my parents discontent, and deny you the right of your conquest. The Knight of Fame smiling at the inward conceit of his Vision: made this answer, And dear Lady, I will yield my interest to Remulus, onely to procure your content: for he hath worthily deserved to be beloved of you, besides the honour he hath done me (notwithstanding I might be the onely man to hinder his content) Yet with the abundant vertues, that rule his heart. He had not scarce ended those words, but Remulus feeling his eares to glow, and thinking all time tedious out of his Ladies sight came into the Gallery, where they were in private conference: But seeing them half repenting his intrusion made haste kept back, towards whom the Knight of Fame came, leading the Princess by the hand, and contrary to Remulus expectation, said. Count on Knight, your interest in this Lady is greater then mine: for you have her heart and I but her hand; which I surrender unto you with all the State I challenge in her by right of conquest: and effectually will I deal with the King, to your good liking, that he shall confirm that to you, which I should possess by his grant. Remulus hearing his speeches, was so revived with joy, that he could not tell what answer to make him: and Phylenas heart leapt within her, being most glad Fortune had effected such means for her to enjoy her dear friend Remulus.

The Knight of Fame having his thoughts troubled with the remembrance of his troubles in search of his unknown Lady, and willing to leave them to their secret content, with all countesse (after many speeches past) departed from them who

who took such felicity in the assurance he had given them of obtaining the Kings consent that their joy was not to be compared, spending their time in sweet and pleasant communication: After wards the Knight of Fame grew into great familiarity with Remulus, and the day for the solemnization of the wedding being come he with Phylena in great pomp were conducted to the Chappell to be affianced together, where the Knight of Fame kneeling down desired the King to grant him one request: who swate by his Crowne and Kingdoms, to grant it him whatsoever it were. Most noble King (quoth he) my humble desire is, that you would without further doubt, sacrifice that which I shall perform in the behalf of the Princess. Thou shalt not be denyed quoth the King.

When the Knight of Fame rising up, took Phylena by the hand, and gave her to Remulus: the King being astonished thereat, yet remembering his Oath, said. Since by right she is yours, and this being with her liking, I give her freely to thee Remulus, and withall I adopt thee my heire with her after my death. Remulus kneeling, thanked his Majesty, and presently they were affianced together, and the rights and solemnities of the wedding performed with admirable pomp, to their joy, and the high honour of the Knight of Fame.

#### CHAP. VIII.

How *Archas* discovered *Soranas* deceit, and missing *Viola* slew her. And how *Viola* lighted on a Hermits Cell, who conducting her towards *Bohemiah* dyed: and of the miseries she endured afterwards, untill she was entertained at *PANNAMUS* Castle near the Forrest of *ARDE*.



*Rehas* (as before is declared in the fifth Chapter) having caught himself by *Sorana*, whom he supposed to have bin *Viola*, without speaking a word, he having come while embraced her in his arms began his dalliance; whom *Sorana* so cunningly handled, that notwithstanding



ding his former familiarity) he perceived nothing but that it was *Viola* indeed. At the first she made a shew of strangeness, but afterwards entered whatsoeuer he proffered, with whom he spent that night, giving no respite to sleep, but greedily satisfying both their desires, untill the morning approaching: *Archas* according to his mistress's command departed, and left his Paramour in her bed: his fancy perswading him that she was the most sweetest Lady in the world, which so rejoiced his heart, that he spent that forenoon in much mirth; but missing *Sorana*, so that he had not seen her all that day, he went to her chamber, where being entered, he saw some of *Viola*'s Attires and Ornaments confusedly cast about, and all things in such disorder, that he could not tell what to think. At last, he enquired of every one for her, but none could tell what was become of her; untill coming to the Guardians they told him, that *Sorana* went out of the Castle the last night, and that she had left with them his Ring. *Archas* seeing the Ring, knowing that he had given it to none but *Viola*, was so amazed and astonished with doubt, that he presently suspected *Viola* to have escaped, and coming to the Chamber where she should have been, softly drawing the Bed curtaines, found that *Sorana* had been his Bed-fellow in stead of *Viola*, who after her pastime was fallen asleep. *Archas* now perfectly knew that *Viola* was escaped in *Sorana*'s disguise, and thought that it could not be, but that she must be consenting therunto, went presently to fetch his sword, determining to end her life: but by that time he was returned she was awaked, and seeing him come towards her with his sword bent to her death, being terrified therewith she gave such shrieks, as many of the servants hearing the noise, came running into the chamber, but he being incensed with exceeding rage for *Viola*'s loss, and inwardly fretting at her deceit, with repentance that hee had bestowed his love on that loathsome creature: who now seemed most ugly in respect of the divine and sweet Lady he supposed he had embraced, caught hold on her, and by the help of the Bed dragged her out of the Bed into the midst of the Chamber, uttering

saying these words. Most detested Strumpet, couldst thou not be content to consent to *Viola*'s escape, but thou must also betray my love to thy loathsome lust? Was not the favour I daily shewed thee, sufficient to defer my mind from offering me that abuse, deceiving my expectation, betraying my life by her escape? I could peradventure have remitted the one, if thou hadst not been guilty in the other; but never shalt thou rejoice in my fall, and little pleasure shalt thou reap by thy night's work; where with not suffering her to make him answer, assuredly perswading himself she was guilty in both, he thrust his sword quite through her body, and there in that undecent sort left her, giving many a groan with the date of her life.

The servants seeing this, covered her body and afterwards buried it. *Archas* presently arming himself, giving special charge to the Guardians to keep diligent watch, posted that way he thought best in her search.

*Viola* by this time was wandered a great way, sore battling her steps, and least to be again surprised took away the tediousness of travell. At last following the beaten way, she wandered at last into a desert and unfrequented place, being so full fraught with trees and little springs, that there she thought was the safest harbour, wherein to remain undescried: Being tired with travell, and possessed with care, she sat down upon a Bank side to refresh herself. She had not long staid in that place, but she espied an aged man, whose years made him stoop towards the Earthwards carrying a few dry sticks under his arme. *Viola* thinking she might repose some confidence in his vertues, because of his years, drew towards him: who seeing so beautiful a Lady in that unfrequented place, unattended, exceedingly marvelled, to whom she said. Ah good Father, whose years bears reverences, will you vouchsafe a distressed Lady succour, who by extreme compulsion, am wandered to this unknown place, sore wearied with travell, and in requital of your kindnesse, my prayers shall invoke the Heavens to grant you felicity.

The old man hearing his speeches, made this answer: fair Lady my homely Cell, is not worthy to receive your person, but such as it is, you shall be heartily welcome thereto: For I desire to lbe no longer then to extend my small assistance to such as are in distresse, but especially to such harmlesse creatures as your self: Therefore if it please you with kindnesse to accept what succour my ability will afford, what counsell my experience can give you, you shall receive both with a willing heart. And for that I see your travell, (upon what occasion as yet to me unknown) hath both wearied you, and this cold earth whereon you sate, may endanger your health, give me your hand. I will lend you what ayd, my weak strength will permit, to guide you to my Cell which is hard by. So good Father (quoth she) and I thank you most heartily: Where I will disclose to you my unfortunate mishap; What said, she leaned her self upon his aged arm, too weary with travaille, that she scarce could set her feet, upon the grassie earth for burning them. His Cell, it was no other but a hollow Cave, which the poor Oldman by his own industry, had cut any undermined under the side of a Rocky-hill, which was well contrived, having his lodgings severall from the rest. And so artificially had he framed his Chimney, that through a hollow Vault, he conveyed the smoke, at the foot thereof, ran a most pleasant Spring, where the cleare water striking with the smooth pibbles, made a bubling noise, where the comfortable beames of golden Phæbus had full force. On the other side was a sweet spring, where the birds kept continual pleasant recording harmony. As soon as *Violetta* was entred this oldmans paradise he seated her upon a soft chair, giving her all countious entertainment he could, and bringing forth such cates as he had provided: which was white bread, cheese, and apples: his drink the cleare brook water, that ran by his Cell door, where-to because he would attend the taste to her liking, he mingled *Aquavita*, *Violetta* being hungry, thought his poor provision in that quiet place dainty fare, wherewith she stanch'd her hunger, and in the mean time, the oldman had heat water and herbe

for

for to bath her overtrabelled feet in, which she kindly accepted, perceiving that it came willingly from the oldmans heart, as her good deed came from my, and therewith bathed her feet. This done, *Violetta* desired the old man to seat himselfe downe by her (who taking a stole, sate down right against her, fixing his eyes upon her face) whilst she did speak as followeth.

Good Father (quoth she) the Kindnesse I find in your entertainment, sheweth the vertues that rule your heart, which maketh me no whit doubt to commit the dangerous report of my Tragical misfortune to your secrecie, neither need I require any stricter assurance, then your promise already past, to extend your ayd to my distresse. Therefore thus it is: I was born in *Thessaly*, and there Wedded to the Noble and courteous Knight *Pollipus*, who came but lately to *Bohemia*, with the most Noble and famous Prince *Parismus*, who hath brought hither the Kings daughter of *Thessaly*, the veritions Princessse *Laurana*; we had not staid long in the *Bohemian* Court with great joy; but this our felicity was crost, (my Lord and I one day) inticed by the heat of the Sun to seek some cool shadow, wandred from the Court into a pleasant Grove, where haunted a wilde Bear, whom my loving Knight espying, pursued: And I fearing lest some harm might befall him, compelled a desire of his Welfare, thought to have followed him, but wandred a quite contrary way; and being gotten out of the Wood, fearing to return back, was by *Archas* (to me before unknown) by cunning deceit conveyed to his Castle, his promise being to have carryed me back to the *Bohemian* Court. Where when I had remained some two dayes, he certified me falsely (which I afterwards perceived) that *Pollipus* was dead, which I believing, took it so heavily, that I was often in danger of my life thereby, but in small time I plainly found his falshood, and understood his intent, which was, to detain me in his keeping, to satiate his lust, which grew to such fury, that surprising me unawares in his Garden he would have forced me, had not a Gentlewoman, by my shrieks & cries repaired to the place where I was, & thereby prevented him, whom I made privy to all my secrets, by whose means

meanes, late yester night I stole from the Castle. Now good Father (quoth she) counsell me how to escape his hand, who I know maketh all diligent search for me; and unless you helpe me, I am like to fall into his hands again: which rather then I will do, I will indure a thousand deaths.

The old man had all this while diligently noted every circumstance of her discourse, making this answer. Lady, I perceive by your speeches what miseries you have undergone by *Archas* treachery, whose infamous deeds hath made his name famous, being (the chief Governour of these Mountains) indeed extremely and generally hated, who delighteth in no virtuous actions, but continually addeth his mind wholly to villany and unknighly deeds, out of whose hands you are most happy to have escaped: neither are you in the Country of *Bohemiah* (as you suppose) but far distant from thence: and the best and safest means for you to get thither, is to change your habite, whither my self (if it please you) will be your weak, yet trusty guide.

Violettaes heart leapt within her for joy, to heare his speeches, which she presently put in practise, giving him a Jewell; which he at the next town exchanged for such homely weeds as they devised to be fittest to shrowd her from being descried. Therewith having appaialled her self, she departed with the old man, who left his Cell to the keeping of his Son, who was servant to a wealthy *Bore* living thereby. The first dayes journey they overpassed with ease, shortning the tediousnesse of the way with the old mans discourses: and at night rested themselves as conveniently as they might upon the cold earth, and in this sort they journeyed for three dayes, untill their provision began to decay, and they were without hope of getting any more to supply their want; for that they were entred into a desolate wilderness, which they could not passe over in three or foure of their short dayes journey. Violetta of the twain was the best traveller: for the old man by reason of his withered Age was so nuyted, having no such inward conceit to drive him forwards as she had, procured by a longing desire to see her dear knight *Pollipus*, that she with a thousand

times that her guide had been young, and of better strength to indure their journey. But thus contrary it fell out, that the old mans time of death then approached, who having taken a surfeit with lying on the cold earth began to be very sick, and in the end so weak, that hee could indure no farther travell: but sitting down upon a bankes side, feeling an extreme faintnesse to possesse his heart, he uttered these speeches. Unfortunate wretch that I am, that am not able to perform my promise made to you most courteous Lady, but must here leave you in distresse and without comfort, would that my Destiny had not suffered me to live until this instant, or that your good fortune had bin so favourable to have lighted on a safer guide that you might have escaped the desolation. I am most unhappily like to leave you in: his unfrequented wilderness, affording no release to your cares: but after my death, your travels are to begin afresh, being without a guide, which may chance to bring your vertuous perfections into some further danger: onely this comfort remaineth to my careful dying heart, that your habit may be a means to bring you safe from all danger. This unfrequented place is so full of uncertaine wayes, that I know not almost which of them to counsell you to follow: onely this keep the Sunne at his sitting right before you, for that way lyeth the *Bohemian* Court, and so sweet Land: I commit you to an good fortune: for I see the date of my wretched life is at an end, wishing all prosperous successe to your journey, all happy escape out of danger, and your owne sweet hearts content: desiring you to make no ratiance to provide my Funerall, but leave me in this place, for little account will make of my aged body. And so again, I wish you all happy felicity, with a blessed and joyfull end of your cares: which words being ended, he gave up the Ghost.

Violetta seeing the good old man dead, was overcome with such infinite multitudes of cares, that she had much ado to keep herself from following him, that she sat there shedding abundance of tears, and what with the remembrance of the desolatenesse of the place, and the dead body of the old man,

which

which was a fearful Course to look upon, her senses were drawn into such an exceeding terror, that she was half benighted her self therewith: and being agast with the sight of the Old man, hasted with all speed for could onward on her journey, but dark night approaching, her mind was then rackt with such confused teares, that sometimes she thought the Old mans Ghost haunted her, which much appalled her senses with a deadly ghastfull terror: When she thought she heard some wilde Beast behind her, ready to seize upon her, which made her leave the chosen place she meant to have shewed her self, and to seek out another: in her fancy more safe: so that in a multitude of such like cares she overpast that tedious night, uttering many a heavy sigh for the Dornings cheerefull approach: which being come, she againe betook her selfe to her solitary travaile, inwardly sorrowfull for her late misfortune: but most of all terrified with feare to meet Archas, yet thinking wholly to bend her steppes towards Bohemia.

But Fortune intending to augment her cares, and lengthen her restless troubles, caused her to wander a quite contrary way, and she nothing misadvising, but supposing she was in the readiest way, kept on her steps some three dayes without intermission, and at the last, she espied an ancient Castle, whose craggy walles were ready to fall down in shewe to the ground, where she was constrained by reason of extreme hunger: to seek for succour, and coming to the gate, she saw an aged old man, with a sad countenance keeping the entrance: to whom Violetta spake in this sort. Good aged Sir, bestow please a poor distressed woman some reliefe, being wandred far out of my way, and so, want of food, am like to perish.

He lifting up his head made this answer: This place is to you no comfort, because every part thereof, is repleat with sorrow: but come in and what entertainment it shall be to you shall be welcome unto: What said he that the Gate, and brought her into the Castle, where were a few servants in

mour.

mourning attire, fawning by their habits and sad countenances, to be quite overgotten with discontent: and in a room severall by it self, sat a beautifull damoyell, with her eyes fixed with griefe: to whom, the Porter brought Violetta, and said: Madam Clarina, this distressed woman craveth some succour, being wandred far from her way, whom I will leave with you, because I must return to my charge. Clarina rising up, took Violetta by the hand and desired her to sit down by her: to whom she said as followeth.

This place by reason of our misfortunes, may rather add to augment your sorrows, then comfort your distress: For the misery that hath lately befallen us, is such, as hath expelled all joy from our hearts. And because you shall be acquainted with the truth of all, I will relate the circumstance of our Tragedy.

There remaineth a Giant, not far from this place called *Brandamor*, in a Castle of such invincible strength, as it is impossible to be vanquished by million of Soldiers, who take delight in nothing but cruelty and unlawful attempts. Who upon a time chanced to arrive at this Castle, and by ill fortune chanced me walking abroad in company of my Parents, my Mother *Pannamus*, and two of my Fathers servants. And (I know not by what desire thereto drawn, his mind being apt to mischief) he viewing me, liked my beauty, and presented such a disordinate desire kindled in his Breast to obtain the same, that he threwd himself in secret, untill he chanced his best opportunity, and suddenly set on my Father, offering to take me away by violence: My Father denying him, untill the Giant being enraged, drew out his sword, and assailed him, whom in short time he slew: Which my Mother and I seeing, fled towards this Castle, and in the meane time my Brother *Pannamus* continued fight against him, but being unable to cope with so mighty an Enemy, was by reason of many grievous wounds, in the end left by him for dead: Which done, *Brandamor* perceiving us fled, hasted after us: but before hee could come at us, we attained the Castle, and rescued our selves from

from his possession. But when he saw himself disappointed, he made as though he had departed from hence, and contrary to our thoughts he hid himself amongst the bushes.

My Mother being overcome with extreme sorrow for my Fathers death, neither regarding doubt nor danger, went back with hope to recover him, whom *Brandamor* surprised and carried away with him, hoping by her imprisonment to win her consent to yield me into his hands.

My brother *Pannamus* within a while recovered his son, not knowing of my Mothers misfortune, with great danger of his life crawled home: whom I had much ado to preserve from death, and now he is departed towards the *Forck of Arde*, where the Gyants Castle standeth, to invent meanes to set my Mother at liberty, and this night is the promised time of his return.

And thus have you heard the whole circumstance of our sorrow. Which when she had said, abundance of teares issued from her eyes, which made *Viola* (whose tender heart was ready to relent at every sad discourse) accompany her lamentations with watry eyes: withall, remembering how unexpectedly she was still crost in her desires, which was to attain to *Bohemia*, and how contrary to her expectation, she was wounded quite another way, and brought both in danger of her life, and that poor and distressed estate, her heart was filled with such inward sorrow, that she could not stay the passage of her teares already begun: but such a violent flood distilled from her pious eyes, that *Clarina* could not chuse but move them: and withall, grew into an earnest desire to know the cause of that extraordinary passion: Also, well viewing her Beauty and sweet countenance, collecting into her fancy every circumstance, she began to suppose that *Viola* was so much as her apparell showed, but of better birth and bringing up, then to be so meanly attyred, and desiring to be resolved of those doubts which did possess her fancy, she uttered forth these speeches.

I know not (O she) what title to ascribe unto you, for that

I am ignorant of whence you are, but if you will commit the report thereof unto me, I promise you both to conceal the same (if any such need be) and also to do my utmost pleasure you any way.

Wherefore I desire you to impart the rest all thereof to my sister, that knowing your estate, I may know how to use you according to your necessities.

*Viola* being desirous to seek any meanes to comfort her self, made this reply: I most heartily thank you for offering me so large a proffer of your assistance, which I stand in need of, for that my endless travell grows long easier for my luckless stars have allotted me such superfluous as would soon eat out the wretched fibres of young blood, neither death nor ought else will be so salubrious as to rid me from further calamities, but I am still plunged into their intricate labyrinth: for know most courteous Lady, that my self of late was promoted to all felicity, but now am contrarily plunged in all distress: that this night I have only put on to shroud my self from many perils, but I was formerly subject unto, for I am an *Italian*, and as you are, by extreme misfortune drawn from my dignity, friends, acquaintance, and forced both by want and need, to seek refuge in this place, whereby your kindness shall be well requited: neither will I conceal any of my misfortune from your knowledge.

Then *Viola* repeated the whole truth, as she had done before to the Old man in his Cell, which when *Clarina* heard, she feared she did partake her sorrow, and taking her by the hand, pressed her so to hold her company, for not without that behaviour towards her, which her estate deserved, promising with willingness, to further her safe conduct into *Bohemia*, which he knew her brother *Pannamus* at her intreaty would undertake. In this and such like conversation they spent their time, until *Pannamus* return, who should come without hope of recovering the *King* *Brandamor* and her time, and *Clarina*, as soon as he was come, declared unto him all that she could of *Viola*'s estate, and what she was: among the rest,



He told him that he was espoused to a Knight named Pollipus Pannamus bearing her name Pollipus called to remembrance the speeches he had with a Knight that day, and he assuredly thought this was the Lady he went in search of. When the Knight he had met was Tellamor, who entering into communication with him, enquired if he could tell any news of a Lady that was unfortunately lost in Bohemia (relating the very same circumstance that Clarissa told him. Violetta had before declared unto her) Tellamor demanded if he had not met a Knight bearing this device in his shield: A King pursuing a Bear. How it fell out that Pannamus by his notable combat that Pollipus fought with Brandamor and remembering his service knew him to be the same Knight. Tellamor inquired after to whom he declared all that he knew concerning the battle with Brandamor and unto the chetous he was surpris'd and mispos'd.

Tellamor hearing that Pollipus was imprisoned in the Forest of Arde, departed with his wife and Pannamus unto his Castle; where at his coming he found Violetta in such array, and hearing his sisters speeches weighing each circumstance, found that she was the very Lady that the Knight inquired after, and that Knight that fought so valiantly with Brandamor and was by him imprisoned, was her husband.

Pannamus having gathered this intelligence of Violetta's misfortune, and remembering the noble valour of Pollipus, was touch'd with an affectionate pity of her distress, being all the more so by his own lost daughter and Clarissa's interest: resolved to use his utmost endeavours to work her comfort, and coming to Violetta declared the whole circumstance of all that he had heard of Tellamor, and of Pollipus, in the case of Brandamor.

Violetta hearing accurately that Pollipus was yet living, and as she did before, was surpris'd (for though she perceived the contrary both with Archas's Council yet a simple remembrance in his mind thereof) was somewhat comforted, and in some better hope to come to him again: but calling to mind

the danger he was now in, was exceedingly again surpris'd with care of his welfare, and hearing of his imprisonment, determin'd to endanger her own liberty to enjoy his company. If no other means could be thought to his release, Pannamus seeing her overpowered with such a chaos of confused ideas, said as followeth. Most virtuous Lady, since Fortune hath brought you into this place, and that you have thus happily heard of your Knight Pollipus, release your self from the bonds of those cares, which disturb your quiet: for here you shall want nothing that accordeth to your will, and my self will do the best I can to get Pollipus at liberty: which whilst I go about, to please you my sister Clarissa, shall keep you company, whose griefs are as great as may be.

Sir (quod Violetta) might I obtain this favour at your hands, that you would give the knight your knowledge of my being here, then I am sure he will soon come to me, with whom I would gladly speak, for I know he is one of the knights of Bohemia.

That I will do (quod Pannamus) by any thing else you shall command me: and because I will not be disappointed of meeting him, I will early in the morning take to him, for that he is gone into the Forest of Arde, where I will surely find him. So early the next morning according to his word, he took horse, and departed after Tellamor leaving Clarissa, and Violetta together, being the best persuasions they could to comfort one another.

### CHAP. IX.

How Pannamus met with Tellamor, and how he and Tellamor met Barzillus at the Golden Tower: And regarding all together at Pannamus's Castle, Tellamor was enamour'd of Clarissa.



Now Pannamus having left Violetta and Clarissa together, with all that he had to do, he went to find Tellamor, and riding an unwonted pace he overtook him at the entering into the forest, unto whom he says

Sir Knight, let me be so bold as to ask you one question. Tellamor hearing his words, and knowing him to be the same Knight he had met withall before, courteously bad him ask what he pleased. Are you not a Knight of Bohemia (qd. he) Tellamor marvelling why he ask him that question, told him that he was indeed belonging to Parismus Prince of Bohemia. Then said Parismus, a Lady that remaineth not farre hence named Violetta hath sent me back unto you, and desireth to speake with you. Tellamor hearing his words was affected with exceeding joy thereat, made this reply. Sir Knight, in a happy hour did I meet with you; by your meanes to come to knowledge of her abode I most desire to finde: indeed Violetta is the Lady I go in search of, and also wife to the Knight you told me of yesterday, who by your report remaineth prisoner in the Fort. Therefore I will re-ur-e with you to visit that Lady: unto whose service my life is wholly dedicated. This said, they returned back together, but the night being approached, and they without any place to lodge in, thought it best to travel all night, as to take up their lodging upon the grass ground, whereof Parismus undertook to guide them, trusting to his own knowledge, and contrary to his expectation, wandred a quite contrary way: and when Phobus began to illuminate the earth with his golden brightness, they were come into a pleasant valley, where they beheld two knights continuing a most fierce combat, and drawing near unto them, Tellamor presently knew the one of them to be Barzillus, the occasion of which combat was thus.

After Barzillus had parted from Parismus, and Tellamor taking the middle way, he wandred many dayes without any adventure, and at last arrived at a most goodly Pallace most exceedingly beautified with innumerable Towers of exceeding height, that their toppes seemed to equall the cloudes, being of such curious and wonderful as the like hath not bene seene, whose glittering spires measured by the Sunnes bright beams, that it past the eyes of the beholders, with an admirable glittering.

In the midst of the Stateliest Pallace, stood a gallant building in form of a Temple, seeming to the view of such as beheld the same, to be made of the most purest and finest gold, on the top whereof, stood the form of a most goodly Lady, with a Crown of gold upon her head, whose lively proportion and form of exceeding beauty would have detained a most constant mind, in a wandring delight to behold the same. Barzillus beholding the exceeding beauty of the Pallace, and the stateliest form of the pictured Lady, was very desirous to know who inhabited there, and to that intent drawing nigh thereto, at the entrance he beheld a Tent, with these verses ensuing written therein.

Pass not this Bridge before thou knock,  
Least thou too late repent thy pride:  
Leave not obtain'd thou mayest go back,  
For entrance is to all deny'd.

A Knight within must know thy name,  
Thy boldnesse else will turn to shame,

Barzillus reading the superscription, smote the Tent with his Lance, whence presently issued forth a Knight, in every point ready armed, to whom Barzillus said as followeth: Knight, I reading the superscription over the entrance into the Tent, according to the direction thereof, have called thee forth, demanding the meaning thereof, and what goodly Pallace this is, the like whereof I never beheld for beauty: Knight answered he againe, this pallace is called the Golden Tower, belonging to Maximus the most mighty and famous King of Natolia, wherein is his only Daughter Angelica, for Beauty without compare: for wit, form, and vertuous Ornament, excelling all the Ladies in the world, whose name was never heard of, nor can be found in the spacious continent of the earth. And therefore the King hath placed her in this most rich and gorgeous Pallace, whose walls are

of brass, and framed of such invincible strength, that no power of man is able to subdue the same: She hath to attend her a hundred Ladies of great dignity, and a thousand of the most valiant Knights in all the world. The occasion why he gathered thus her person is this. At her birth, an old Enchanter prophesied, that her beauty should set things at discord, and be the cause of her Father's death.

A Child is born whose beauty bright,  
 Shall passe each form of other fair,  
 As doth the Sun in perfect light  
 Each little star fixt in the ayre.  
 For whom great Kings shall enter strife,  
 And warre shall shed *Natolians* blood,  
 Whose Ire shall spill *Maximus* life;  
 Yet wisdom oft hath harm withstood.  
 A mighty Prince her love shall gain,  
 Though vice doth seek to crosse their blisse:  
 He shall her winne with restless pain,  
 And she of sorrow shall not misse.  
 Much barbarous blood revenge shall spill,  
 And all of Warre shall have their fill.  
 All this shall happen by degree,  
 Before this Child shall wedded be.

And because he will match her according to her Dignity, he hath likewise made a vow that none but the greatest Potentate in the world shall be her Husband. Which said, the Knight went into his Tent and brought forth a most gallant Picture; this (quoth he) is the Ladies form, wherein the Artisan hath shewed some pretty skill: but so farre is this picture unconformable to the perfect description of her Celestiall perfections, and as far different in delicacy, as is black from white, or beauty from deformity, whose view would change the affections of the chaste Knight living, from his former constant resolving, to adore her beauty, and forsake his

former loves onely to attend her person, for so divine are her lineaments and so rare her perfections, that her fame is even spread through all the Regions of the world, Barzillus hearing him enter into a new discourse of her beauty, and that in such an affectionate sort, having before in his fancy said enough, began to laugh at him, saying.

Knight, me thinks thou dost, or else art mad to enter into such commendations of this Ladies beauty, having peradventure never seen other fair Lady, or else for that thy selfe art affectionately devoted to love none but her; for I have seen a Lady, that as farre excelleth this picture, as thou reportest she doth all other: (which words *Barzillus* spake onely to see whether his valour and boastings were agreeable) wherewith the Knight that kept the tent was so vexed that he uttered these speeche.

What ill nurtured creature art thou (quoth he) that deridest the beauty that is rather to be admired, hast thou no more manners then to make so little estimation of that which all the world adores? Thou shalt dearly report this discourtesie: and with that he mounted himself; and charged a spear at *Barzillus*, who answered him with such a courage, that at two courses he overthrew him from his horse. By which time a number of Knights were got upon the Battlements viewing their combate and seeing the Knight that kept the Tent foyled burst into an exceeding laughter and so departed.

*Barzillus* having foyled the Knight, for that the night drew nigh, withdrew himselfe from the Golden Tower, into a pleasant Valley, and there stayed that night. The Knight that kept the Tent was belonging to the King of Candie, who came with perswasion to winne *Angelica* with his promises, and with much adoe: had obtained leave of the Guardians to keep the passage, but he not contented with his toyle, intending to revenge his disgrace, followed him into the Valley where *Tellamor* found them combating, as is aforesaid: who knowing *Barzillus*, stepping betwixt them, parted the fray. *Barzillus* likewise knowing *Tellamor*, with great kinde-

ness embrace him, and upon his request declared the cause of their Combate. Tellamor then speaking to the knight of the Tent, gave him this answer. Knight, returne to your charge for your Combate here is at an end, for busine of more importance withdraweth this Knight, which may turn to thy good for by all likelihood, thou wouldest have perished by his prowess. You shall have occasion enough to exercise your armes against such as would steal your Lady, which this Knight intendeth not; therefore, return to your Tent, and defend her beauty there, which none here gain-sayeth. Tellamor having ended his speech, intreated Barzillus to depart with him, which the knight of Candie seeing, returned to the Golden Tower.

By the way as they were returning towards Panuamus castle, Tellamor declared to Barzillus how fortunately he came to the knowledge of Violetta, which exceedingly rejoiced Barzillus's heart: but when he understood of Pollipus's misfortune, he was contrarily affected with as great desire to set him at liberty: which communication shortened their journey, and in the end they arrived at the Castle.

The news of their approach soon came to Violetta's bearing, who knowing both Tellamors and Barzillus, welcomed their presence with such effusion of teares, that for a good space she could not utter a word, but her flood being somewhat stilled saluting them most kindly, she uttered these speeches.

Your presence, worthy friends, bringeth great comfort to my heart after my tedious toyle of misery, what thanks my undeserving heart can yield, I render you for the paines you have taken for my sake: For I know you undertook this travell to find me, being not worthy to be so well esteemed of you much lesse unable to make you the least part of amends. You may see to what poor estate I am brought by the treachery of a disloyall Knight, who hath caused my misery, your travell, and *Pollipus* imprisonment, untill I was succoured by this courteous Lady, whose kind entertainment hath preserved my life from famishment,

This homely attire I undertook for my safer passage: but misfor-

misfortunes still await my miserable steps, which no diligence can prevent: with that her teares burst into a flood again.

Barzillus being moved with her teares, was ready to partake her grief in the manner she bid: but at last he said, I beseech you comfort your self in these extremities, and let not such passions of sorrow oppress your heart: since the worst of your dangers are past: we have all the reward we expect for our travailles, now we have found you, for so much are we bound to that worthy Knight *Pollipus*, & that noble & gracious Prince *Parisius* (who is likewise travelled in your search) that we account our lives well imployed to pleasure them and you.

Violetta hearing that *Parisius* was travailed in her search, was almost overcome with passionate affection of his kindness, and remembering what sorrow *Laurana* would ensue for his absence, with sighes she said: I of all most unfortunate, to be the cause of that noble Knights travail, which many wayes doth hazard his safety, and breed much disquiet in the *Bohemian* Court but especially to that most vertuous, courteous, and honourable Princessse *Laurana*, whose sorrow I know will be most exceeding and procured by my unlucky destiny, that am altogether unworthy to be esteemed of them, nor in any degree to be so highly regarded.

Tellamor likewise grieving to see her sorrow, comforted her with these words: Dear lady, leave off these sad cares, and let no disquiet thoughts trouble you, for what is past cannot be recalled, but all is now amended by your recovery, whose death we all greatly feared. By this time Panuamus had prepared their dinner, which was served in after the best sort, so which, he and *Clariana* welcomed them with great kindnesse. *Clariana*'s heart, being somewhat comforted by their company, hoping by their means, to see the downfall of *Brandamor*, and her Mothers release,

When they had well refreshed themselves, and heard Violetta relate the whole circumstance of her misfortunes they began to devise what course to take to set *Pollipus*, at liber-

12, which they found impossible to do by force, because the strength of the place was invincible: at last, they determined the next morning to travail, to try if fortune would any way favour their attempts: After they had spent some time in these speeches, and every one fully resolved what to do, Barzillas, saw a pair of Chess standing on a side table, which he went unto, and began to place the men in order, which Panamus espying, came to him, and said: That if he pleased he would play a game with him, wherewith Barzillas was contented.

Clariana seeing them busie at Chess, tooke Violetta by the hand, and requested her to walke into the Garden: Lady (quoth Violetta) if so pleasest you, this Knight may bear us company. When taking Tellamor with them, they thre walked into the Garden together, and a while recreated themselves with severall discourses of the vertue of the hearbes and salt flowers they encountered. And at last being weary with walking, and procured thereto by the heat of the Sunne, they seated themselves together under the shadow of a myrtle tree, upon a rising bank, bedect with many sweet smelling flowers. Tellamor seeing their sadnesse, entred into many a pleasant discourse to expell the same if he could out of their minds, but no speeches, he did use, could once remove their cast downe countenances, But Violetta leaning her self upon her elbow, fell fast asleep, and left Tellamor onely to comfort Clariana, for she heard not what he said; which he perceiving left off his talk a while, and in short space after fell into a deep study, from which he suddainly revived himself (thinking Clariana had noted the same, and casting his eye upon her, he saw how busie she was cropping the sweet flowers, and collecting divers of them together, began to frame a Rose-gay.

Tellamor seeing her so busie, was unwilling to interrupt her quiet content: withall, viewing her sweet beauty and pretty gesture: his mind was affected with great pleasure to behold her, and her carefull nipping the flowers with her white hand, exceedingly graced her perfections, that his heart inwardly burned with a suddain motion of delight: and his fan-

cy began to commend her sweet behabour, that even then his affections entertained a secret motion of love. whilst he blushed her thus precisely, she suddainely cast her eye upon him, thinking he had been still in his dumps; but perceiving how steadfastly he beheld her, a suddain blush attained her, that therewith the sweet Rosate colour glowed in her cheeks: which he likewise perceiving, went towards her, with great Reverence, and folding her pretious hand in his, said as followeth.

Fair Lady, I am sorry my presence hath interrump ed your quiet meditation, and hindred your delightfull exercise. Sir (quoth she) your presence hath done me no harm: my study being but idlenesse, neither was my labour well bestowed, therefore you might the better hinder it.

If (quoth he) you make so little account thereof bestow these Flowers on me, and I will become your debtor for them: and your study was not, I think, as you meane to rearm the same, idlenesse: For now I see you are fallen into it again: which maketh me marvel why you should spend your pleasant dayes in such cares and sad cogitations. Sir (quoth Clariana,) how can I do otherwise when my sorrowes are past compare.

Sweet Lady (qu. he) should you follow my advise, you should mitigate your passions, and banish that care which oppreseth your heart: for things past remedy, are not to be lamented, and impossible to be recovered: but I beseech you pardon my boldnesse, that presume to enter into speech of your thoughts, which may (contrary to my knowledge) be procured by many other occasions: more he would have said, but Violetta awaking, broke off his talk, that letting go Clarianaes sweet hand which he had held in strict imprisonment, he rose up from the rosate bank, whereon he sat, feeling a suddain passion overwhelme his heart, and turning to a Rose-bush, crop of a rose which he smelt to, and marveling at that sudden dump, pondering what might be the cause thereof, he felt loves inclinations to take possession of his heart, but suddenly reviving himselfe from



from that dump, he returned to them again: ~~the~~ were risen from their seat, and attended them into the Castle, where Panuamus and Barzillus were, who even then had ended their pastime, whom after wards they accompanied till the nights approach broke up their society.

Early the next morning, these Knights (resolving to follow their former purpose) armed themselves, and came down into the Hall, to take their leave of Clarina and Violetta. Clarinaes heart melted with griefe, by remembrance of her Fathers death, her Mothers imprisonment, and the danger these Knights and her Brother might incurre that withholding her self to a window, she bewewed her Cheekes with Christall teares; which Tellamor perceiving, having his devotions bowed to her Service, and having but lately entertained love, pitying her laments, and desirous to shew his affection towards her: (Whilest Barzillus and Panuamus were in conference with Violetta) he came to her and said.

Most vertuous Lady, your sad laments, affect my heart with grief, neither can I chuse but partake your woe, therefore I beseech you tell me what is the thing you most desire, and which may adde any comfort to your heart, and I will venture both my life and liberty, to purchase the same to your content.

Courteous Knight (quoth Clarina) no other cause of care troubleth me but my Fathers death, my mothers imprisonment, and the danger you and my Brother are like to incurre, by the treachery of that Gyant *Brandamor*: for your proffered friendship, I yeeld you thanks; being all the reward I am able to make you: wishing you not to hazard your self for my sake, that am unworthy of such kindness, and unable to make requital for the same.

Does Lady (quoth Tellamor) vouchsafe but to enshrine my willingness in your remembrance, and give me any command, I but accept me for your preservation, that is the only reward I crave, and you shall see that I will in all duty endeavour to become

more gracious in your sight. For my heart desireth nothing more, then to employ himselfe in your service. Clarina hearing his speeches, could not chuse but take them kindly, and marking with what affectionate devotion they came from him, made this answer.

Good Sir to withhold that small favour you demand, were discontented: Therefore because you proffer your friendship so freely, I give you leave to assume that name upon you, which is fittest for your dignity, and if you hereafter perform your words, you shall And me nothing unkindly towards you: which words being ended, Tellamor with reverence, parted with a forest kisse from her Cheek coloured lipps.

## CHAP. X.

How Tellamor, Barzillus, and Panuamus, set the Lady *Moderata* at liberty from *Brandamor*s Castle. How they met with *Parisinus*. And how the Knight of *Fame* arrived there, and preserved *Parisinus* life, and overcame the Gyant,



After many ceremonious farewells past, they parted, they went to their Chambers, and the knights to their journey towards *Brandamor*s Castle, before at last let they arrived; and for that night took up their Inns under the robbet of a spreading Oak, resolving amongst themselves, by what means they might attchieve their desire. Early the next morning, Argall issued out of the Castle, having as his custom was, to search if any Knights were in the street: (for ever since *Vendoes* imprisonment, divers knights of *Lybia*, came to try their fortune against *Brandamor*, whom these three knights supposed to have been the Gyant himself, and Tellamor being the forwardest, went toward him, whom Argall thus greeted.

Knight of whence art thou? O, wherefore comest thou to this forbidden ground.

Gyant

Spant (quoth Tellamor) I come to vesse thee, that blasphe-  
such privilege to examine Passengers, and my intent is, to  
delight of thee to keep my standing on this ground, which is  
(quoth he) to redeem a knight, whom contrary to equity thou  
detaimest: and a Lady, whose Lord thou lately stolest, that  
dwelt in a Castle herby. Argall hearing his speeches, burst out  
into a laughter, saying.

Thinkest thou now, knight, to do more then many of thy bet-  
ters could accomplish: No knight, thou art so far from attain-  
ning the least of thy desires, that thy self art like to hear them  
company: wherewith Tellamor ran at him, and in the encoun-  
ter hurt his spear: whom the Spant valiantly resisted. Panu-  
mus and Barzillus, regarding to perform no acts of knightly  
Chivalry to him that was without regard of Humanity, pre-  
sently both at once most fiercely assailed him, and within little  
space had brought him conformable to the mercy of their sword  
when Argal saw himself so cowardly handled, and his life in  
that danger, he uttered these speeches.

Valiant knights, spare my life, that never yet offended  
you: and let me understand whereof I have done you wrong,  
and I will do my best to make you restitution. Spant (quoth  
Pannamus) haddest thou a thousand lives, all of them could  
not make us restitution for any of the least injuries thou hast  
done unto us; but now thou test thy self in danger thou treadst  
for pity, when other wise thou intendedst nothing but violence:  
thinkest thou our misdeeds are so easily drawn to use mercy to  
warps thee, that hast filled the world with thy tyrannies, and  
perdest no favour to any that come within thy power: No,  
know thyself, that is the last hour thou hast breath:  
wherewith he advanced his sword to have thrust it through  
him.

Argal fearing his resolution, cryed unto him, to hear  
him speak and said as followeth. Who thy knights (quoth he)  
before you finish my dayes, know whom you put to death: I  
am not Brandamor whom you suppose me to be, but his wife

her: my name is Argal: that never in my life offended you:  
therefore, I beseech you spare my life, and whatt ever you in-  
pose upon me, I will perform to my uttermost power. Bar-  
zillus hearing his speeches, told Pannamus that he might be a  
means to save their further travail, if he would set the La-  
dy Madera and Pollipus at liberty: therefore he thus said, Ar-  
gal we know not how to trust a man of thy nature and dispo-  
sition, which thinkest every dishonest action lawfull to further  
thy end: nevertheless, and regardest neither vertue nor disreputa-  
tion, but onely thy will: therefore if we should enjoyn thee to  
any thing, thou wouldst dishonestly break for word, and soon  
forget what thou promisedst to us to perform: and contrary to  
honour, rather betray us to the teachers, but if thou wilt save  
the life, assure us to set at liberty the Lady Madera, and the  
worthy knight Pollipus, and on that condition we will let thee  
go free. Argal hearing his speeches, bowed and protested  
with infinite protestations to fulfill their request within three  
dayes, upon which condition they let him depart.

Argal being gone began to consider what promise he had  
made them, and by what means he had escaped death, and how  
consequently upon his wishes, they had saved his life, and  
gave credence to his speeches, which with intemperate resolution  
he purposed to accomplish, and being entered the Castle, com-  
ing to Brandamor (wounded and laid with bleeding wounds)  
he told him all that had happened, requesting his consent to  
accomplish their demand, which he had bound himself by oath  
to perform. Brandamor hearing his speeches, with Brother  
(quoth he) consider you not what dangers they will  
if I should accomplish your request, and will you do you  
not remember the danger that is in this knight Pollipus, which  
might by his liberty bring us all in danger: As for the  
Lady Madera, I regard not it, I send her hence: For now I  
do not esteem her Daughters beauty, which was the cause  
I have so long detained her: When if you of me send  
unto them, and let them see the performance of the rest  
how

how they call: for what need you regard your promise, being out of their danger? Argalt hearing his speeches, perceiving he could persuade him no way, was content with that. And withall, being easily drawn sleightly to forget his solemn oaths to them made, thought that Maderas releasement would satisfy them, and be more then he needed to perform: wherefore he resolved to send her to them presently, with a message, that Pollipus could by no means be set at liberty.

And coming to Madera who still continued in her heavy dumps he told her, that her time of liberty was come, and that she should no longer be detained in that place. Madera the first gave little credence to his speeches, but perceiving he meant as he spoke, thought that he was very welcome, and let her go out at the Gate, only attended by her two Damazels, desiring her to tell the Knights that sought her liberty that Pollipus could by no means be released, but that they might speak with him if they would, whom they should find in a window right over the Castle bridge. Madera was then espied by Pannamus, who knowing her, with dutiful reverence saluted her, with his knees on the ground, whilst she with another leaves repaired to see him. And being met with Tellamor and Barzillus, she declared to them what Argalt had said concerning Pollipus; which when they heard, they were exceedingly comforted with vocation of the Gyants dignity: yet notwithstanding, setting all doubts apart, they determined to try if the Gyant meant true, that they might come to his speech, which was comfort to them: and though they knew he would still be opposed to betray them, yet they went to the bridge. (Having a careful respect to their danger) where according to Argalt's message they found Pollipus, who knowing them with great joy welcomed them with these speeches.

Dear Friends (quoth he) you see how I am inclosed by these cherous means, coming to release the late Venola, Daughter to the King of Lybia: here am I well used, therefore I pray tell me the occasion of your arrivall in this place.

Most noble Knight (quoth Tellamor) we rejoyce at your health we have also found the vertuous Lady *Violetta*, who remaineth in good health, at yonder Ladyes Castle, having endured many miseries before she came thither. We had not scarce ended these words but Barzillus espied Brandamor, with five knights in his company, crossing the channell that encompassed the castle with a boat, whom they were sure meant them no good, therefore they withdrew themselves from off the bridge, the better to withstand them, which Pollipus perceiving a thousand times with himself amongst them, being ready to tear the hair from his head with extreame vexation. Brandamor, being landed, presently with his mighty mace; set upon them with great violence, who to their bittermost behaviour resisted them most valiantly, but by reason of their great odds (for all the knights that were with him, assailing them) they were in short space soze wounded and brought in great distress, which pannamus perceiving, left his spother and came to their rescue, who likewise in short time by their cruell fight was grievously wounded, so that hee began with the rest to faint and despair of victory: notwithstanding they had slain three of Brandamors knights.

Whilist they continued in this Combate *Parisus* by good fortune (hearing by a knight of *Venolacs* imprisonment) arrived there at the very instant, and espying their cruell combat, perceiving the Gyant by his huge proportion to be one of them, and knowing Tellamor by his armour he suddenly ran in amongst them, reaching so valiant a blow at Brandamor, that his Armour on his left arm burst, and the blow flued out at the entrance his sword had made, and redoubling another blow before Brandamor could lift up his mighty mace beat him so right upon the Crest that with the blow he made the fire flash out of his eyes.

Tellamor and Barzillus presently knew the Prince by the fashion of his armour, which again so revived their dismayed senses, that with great valour and resolution they renewed the fight against Brandamors other three knights, whilst

Parismus dealt most valiantly with the Gyant himself: whoselt his promise to be such, as that it every way was able to counterbaile and Cope with his great and mighty strength.

Bolipus still standing at the window, saw and beheld when Parismus came whom (by all likelihood) he thought he knew to be the worthy Prince of Bohemia, which stirred such a resolved courage in his heart: that with many force he slew the Traytors man his keeper, and so ranged from Chamber to Chamber, untill hee came to the place where Venola was, being continually attended and guarded by ten Knights: whom Pollipus (nothing regarding his nakednesse) desperately assailed with his Barrell of Iron, continuing so long a fight, and with such courage that he had seld slain the one half of them and the other being terrified with this feare, fledde from him, and fast bolted and barred the doore, with such strong devices, that it was impossible for him to get out that way.

In which time the Cowardly Guardians made such a horrible out cry, that both Argall and all that remained in the Castle, presently armed themselves: and some of them issued out to Brandamor, and immediately set upon Parismus, and the rest, thinking by force to make them prisoners; but contrary to their expectations, they withstood them with greater courage, especially Parismus layed about him with such violence, that many of them lost their lives by his strokes: But Brandamor still continued such eager pursuit against him, that he was most grievously wounded, which so enraged him, that he drove his enemies to their uttermost wits. Argall being likewise issued out with others in his company, with their multitude had slain Barzillus, and brought Parismus to most extreme danger of his life; who notwithstanding seeing Tellamor fall down, and under his enemies mercy, gathering courage a fresh bestirred him, & with his undaunted and brave valor, saved his life from a great number that assailed him.

In the mean time, Brandamor had respite to take new breath

breath, but seeing now one of his knights, and then another drop down by Parismus strokes, continuing behind the place most like a cowardly Traytor, hee advanced his pace to have broken him; but ere the Gyants blow was descended, there came a knight rushing his speare against him, and most violently overthrow him backwards: which done, drawing his sword, and dismounting himself with great nimblenesse and force, set his foot on Brandamors neck, and had not Argall prevented him, hee had parted his head from his shoulders: and likewise turning to Argall, followed him with such violent pursuit, and drave at him with such swift and eager blowes, that he made him stagger and reele backward.

Now began the flight afresh, continuing with such fury that my Unskillfull Pen wanteth ability to describe. Parismus beholding so vallant a Champion, came in to his rescue, revived his courage, and although he were grievously wounded, and never before in his life time brought to that extreame danger, yet his noble courage gathered such a new spirit, that brandishing his sword, and stepping from Tellamor (who by his succour was well refreshed,) presently sent the Ghost of one of Brandamors Servants to Hell and after him another. In the mean time a most cruell fight continued betwene Brandamor and Argall against the new come knight, who both at once assailed him, till in the end, Argall unable to endure any longer by reason of the grievous wounds he had receivd, with hisous groanes gave up the Ghost: The strange knight likewise perceiving the danger Parismus and the other two knights were in, and how grievously they were wounded, with all his force, and adding courage to his strength ran with such violence at Brandamor with the point of his keen sword, that lighting on a broken place in his armour. It pierced him in the shoulder bone, where it stucke so hard that hee was compelled with a snatch to draw out the same, wherewith Brandamor let fall his speare, and this worthy knight with a careful looking back on Parismus, saw him fall down in a traunce,



procured by the exceeding abundance of blood that issued from his wounds, and Brandamors servants ready to make a full end of his precious life: amongst whom he rushed with such violence, that he soon made them flye from their intent to save themselves, insomuch, that none of them durst come with in compass of his sword, but betook themselves to flight, some one way, some another; in which time Brandamor was gotten unto the Wygge, thinking to have obtained the Castle, whilch this knight perceiving, hastened after him, and overtook him on the middle thereof, and with his sword gave him four or five mortall wounds. The Gyant perceiving himself so hard beset, and now fearing his everlasting downfall, ran upon this knight, and with great force, grappled him in his huge and boisterous arms, who being of an undoubted courage, and fearing no force, got under the Gyant, and with long striving and struggling, at last overthrew him against the railles of the wygge, which being rotten, and not able to uphold his weighty carcasse falling with such force, burst, and he fell down into the Charnell. That done, this worthy knight nimbly catching up his sword, pursued the other of Brandamors servants, who fled into the Castle intending to shut him out; but he being warpt to prevent such a mischief, flew the blindest way as he was entering the Gate, that his dead body fell so right therein, that the other were thereby disappointed; and by that means could not get in, which they perceiving, were so terrified with fear of him, that every one of them fled, and hid them from his sight. In which time Madera and her two maids seeing Brandamors overthrew, and all his servants fled, came to her son, who of all the three was nearest death, to whom she gave breath by pulling off his helmet. Her Damosels likewise came to Parismus, whose never they lift up; and withal, gave him fresh air, afterwards pulling off his helmet, he came to himself again, being fallen into that trance by extrem heat, want of breath, and effusion of blood; but by the Damosels endeavours, was prettily recovered; and remembering himself, wrote earnestly about to the knight that came in such prosperous time

time to his rescue, and neither seeing him nor the Gyant, he marvelled what was become of him, that raising himself up, he went with Tellamor towards the Castle gate, where he found that most valiant knight breathing himself, whom Parismus embraced in his armes, saying: Most noble and courageous knight, whose pastwells have redeemed our lives, and destroyed our enemies, what praises may I give to your victory, with what thanks may I gratefully pour out towards you, that only by your happy arrival and high Chivalry, have been sheltered from the tyranny of that cruel homicide, and cut him off from executing any more of his treachery? If ever it lies in my power, you shall both command me to requite your kindnesse, and binde me to you in all the undissoluble bands of true friendship.

This knight thus replied: I count my undeserving valor unworthy the least estimation, much lesse to deserve such thanks at your hands, who before my coming had so weakened my enemies, that it was an easie task for me to accomplish his overthrow; but if it were in my power to perform any such deed as you ascribe to me, I would most willingly do my best to pleasure you, who attributes that commendation to me, that by all rights belongeth to your self. I thanke you most heartily, (quoth Parismus,) hereafter trusting to be both better acquainted with you, and of better ability to requite your kindnesse; by this time Madera had brought Parismus to his sences, who was entered the Castle being supported by his Mothers two Damosels; for of himself he was not able to stand.

Parismus demanded of Tellamor, if he knew him? By No, (replied Tellamor) this knight is Sonne to this ancient Lady who came hither with mee, and the valiant Barzillus, to redeem her that this day was Prisoner in this Castle, and by us released, as I will declare to your Honour hereafter. In whose Castle (situated not far hence) remains Violetta in good state, and kindly used. And may it be (quoth Parismus) that Violetta is yet living, and in late years



What joy will that be to *Pollipus*, if he might come to the knowledge thereof, who no doubt, is travelled farre hence to her search? Not so my Lord (replied *Tellamor*) *Pollipus* hath knowledge of her being there, who is prisoner within this Castle, and to day was in good health. Then (quoth *Parismus*) what further cause have we of sadness, but onely for the death of *Barzillus*, whom I was every way beholden unto; which we must overpasse with forced patience, and let us seek out *Pollipus*, who I know will rejoyce to meet us here: then turning to *Pannamus*, he most lovingly embraced him: the like he did to *Madira*: and taking the knight (whom unknown) by the hand, he desired his company to search for *Polliquis*, and the Lady *Venola*; (whose imprisonment was caused of both their arrivalls there (who willingly went with him: before their departure making fast the gate that none could enter in, or go out.

As they entred into the Hall there were divers of the Gyants Servants, who willingly submitted themselves to their mercies, *Parismus* told them, if they meant faithfully, he would no way offend them; which they assumed by many protestations. Then quoth he, one of you direct us to the place, where the Lady *Venola* remaineth: but they made answer, we dare not come thither, for there is with her a Knight that hath slain five of our fellows, who likewise will use us no better, if we come within his reach: Well (quoth *Parismus*) come I will be your war rant.

## CHAP. XI.

How *Parismus* met with *Pollipus*, and the Lady *Venola*, and of the joy was made, especially for the knight of *Fames* arrival,



hen *Brandamors* servants conducted them to the Chamber doore, which was fastned with many bars, that it was long before they could undo the same. *Pollipus* as aforesaid, having slain *Venolas* Guardians, and seeing that he could by

by no means get out, came to *Venola* desiring her not to be dismayed to see his rudenesse: for (quoth he) there are divers knights in fight with the Gyant, amongst whom is the most valiant Prince of *Bohemia*, unto whom I would willingly have gotten down: for I greatly fear his death, being beset with the Gyant, and a number of his Servants. He (quoth *Venola*) do not think me on what dismayed with your presence for I wish you all happy successe and the overthrow of your enemies, and fortunate had that worthy Prince been, if he had not arrived here: for *Brandamor* by his treachery no doubt will betray his life and liberty.

Then both together stepping to the Window, saw the combatants, and beheld the danger *Parismus* was in, and the coming of the strange Knight to his rescue, and withall, how valiantly he overthrew the Gyant, which when he did see, he thought in his fancy that he had never before beheld so valiant and comely a Knight. And also noting the carefull regard he had of *Parismus* he exceedingly wondered what he might be, that his heart was drawn to so great an affection towards him, entering into these speeches.

Most fair Princeesse, did you ever behold a goodlier, or more valiant Knight then yonder is, who by his single prowess hath overcome such enemies? Do you not behold how carefully and valiantly he hath rescued the Prince? which maketh me so much the more marvail what he should be: for never in my life, did I before thus see him: neither such valour, such courtesie and comeliness, did I never behold in any: for with the one, he hath left his foes slaughtered, and with the other, preserved the Noble Prince from most eminent danger.

*Pollipus* had no sooner ended his words, and *Venola* ready to make answer, but they heard some unholing the doore, which made him again betake himselfe to his barre, but when he beheld *Parismus* and the rest entering, he ran to him embracing him with such kindnesse as true and loyall friends might

proffer: he did the like for the strange knight, and the rest. Parismus seeing so beautiful a Lady in his company, so gorgeously attyred and attended by so many Damozels, thought that she was the Princesse Venola: whom he most kindly saluted, whose heart melted into tears of joy for her delivery and their victory: after that such courteous greetings past on every side, as would be tedious to describe; but suppose them to be such as proceeded from the depth of joy. Presently Parismus, Telamor, and Pannuamus, were charmed to have their wounds dyest, which task the Lady Madera undertook, which when she had performed, dinner was brought up by Brandamors servants who had all submitted themselves to the Conquerors.

The strange knight all this while was providing things necessary, with as much diligence as might be, that all ingenerall wondered at his courtesie. who would not unarm himself untill he had well ordered matters for their security, not trusting to the truth of Brandamors servants. And when they were ready to take their repast, Parismus desired him to unarm himself, and not longer to conceal what he was from their knowledge. For Parismus thought him to be some knight that knew him. Venola likewise thought him to be some knight that sought her love, but both were deceived. Now this knight was the knight of Fame, the occasion, whose coming thither shall be declared in the next chapter: who being drawn by naturall instinct, so much revered Parismus: that he thought he could not sufficiently expresse his love towards him, and though he never saw him before, yet such a secret impression of reverence towards him, was stirred in his heart, that he desired nothing more then to be gracious in his sight: and although he had not the least thought that Parismus was his father, nor he one persuasion that the other might be his Sonne, yet both of their hands, were stirred with an earnest and devoted expectation of friendship, and nearness of acquaintance. And the knight of Fame noting the others behaviour, thought that Parismus was some great

great personage, and hearing him thus desirous to discover himself, made this answer?

Right Noble knight, at your command I will unarme myself, being a far born stranger to this Country, neither have I any acquaintance in this place, but by misadventures forced to wander through the world to seek that I have not yet found, nor scarce know if I meet withal, being only fortunate to arrive in this place, to make some tryal of my strength in your defence; which said, he presently unarmed himself.

Parismus beholding his youth, (began with all the rest) to admire his valour, accompanied with such young peares, that he embraced him in his armes, he could not by that courtesie expresse his good will towards him. The knight of Fame likewise reverently kissing Venolæ hand, said;

Most Noble Lady, my coming to this place was to set you at libertie, and also to revenge the death of the knight Tyrides, Son to the good Duke Amasenus of Thrace, unto whom I am infinitely bound; that had I a thousand lives, I would venture them all in his behalf that now is dead. And seeing by the danger and valour of these knights, you are set at libertie, and released from bondage, be of good comfort, for the king your Father will shortly be here, with thousands of knights to conduct you safely into Lybia; who at my last being in his Court, great preparation was made for his expectation.

Venola made this reply; Courteous knight, I yield to you and this noble Prince, all humble thanks for your kindness, being all the reward my barren estate can afford; and for the news you bring me of my Fathers approach, that can yield no such quiet to my heart, as your happy victory hath done; which hath expelled those infinite troubles wherewith I was on every side encompassed; and instead of care, replenish my heart with comfort. When these ceremonious salutations were past, they went to dinner. Pollipus diligently noting the knight of Fame, his countenance, proportion, and gesture,

gesture thinking in his fancy. he never saw a Knight moze like *Parismus*: that his mind was inwardly stirred with a great desire to know his name and his birth. After dinner was ended, *Parismus* with *Pollipus* and *Tellamor*, grew into conference about *Violetta*, determining the next morning either to go to the place where she was, or else to fetch her thither, *Venola* still continued in conference with *Lady Madera*: entering into many exceeding commendations of the valour of these three Knights, *Parismus*, *Pollipus* and the knight of Fame but the knight of Fame withdrawing himself into a private place, revolved in these cogitations.

How unfortunate am I above all knights living, to be tormented in such restless cares as daily torment me, and am subject to so many innumerable troubles, as none but my selfe could endure: First, my birth and parents unknowne: Next my troubles in *Thrace*, and the task imposed me by *Venola*, to find the Lady she shewed me in the vision: whom I was in hope had been the fair Lady *Venola*, but contrary to my expectation, I am still allotted to endure more miseries in her search.

But (quod he) may not *Venola* be the Lady she meant? Is she not fair, Noble, and vertuous? May I not be deceived by the Vision, and so driven to consume my time in purchasing my own torment? Do not dreames often fall out false and vaine? But, why do I make these doubts, *Venola* is fair, yet nothing comparable to the same I see; whose sweet Ideas perpetually set in my remembrance. *Venola* is both noble and beautiful, yet the countenance of my beloved countermandeth that noblenesse: and that vision cannot prove fallible, neither can I account it my labour, if I endure a thousand miseries in her search, so that in the end, I may obtaine her heavenly sight. How should I come to any knowledge of her abode? Which way should I direct my steps in her search? Shall I seek my Parents, or shall I give over my care for them, and employ all my endeavours to find her, thus a Chaos of confused cares to oppose my senses, that I know not what to determine, where

whose counsell to follow, or what aid to implore. If I know in what continent of the world she is harboured, then would I with some comfort direct my steps thitherward: and though danger though never so doubtfull, to purchase her good liking well, I will pacifie my selfe with constrained countenance and patience endure the hardest extremity. In these and such like complaints he spent some time, and afterwards came, and accompanied *Parismus* and the rest, who spent that night in quiet, resolving upon other matters the next morning.

### CHAP. XII.

In this chapter is declared the cause why the Knight of Fame departed from *Thrace*: and how by the way he arrived in *Lybia*, and from thence came to *Brandamors Castle*.



After that the Knight of Fame had wonne the chief Honor of the Triumph in the Court of the King of *Thrace*, and had given away the Kings daughter to *Remulus*, with her Fathers consent thereunto, and the solemnization of the wedding past, and performed with great state, the king calling to mind the valour of the knight of Fame: & how prodigally he gave *Phylena* to another, whose beauty might have satisfied a mighty Potentates liking: and withall, how little he regarded his Heire, by which means afterwards he might have come to the highest degree of dignity, and to the high honour, to be king and Queene of so mighty a Nation: wondered what might move him to refuse the offers: sometime thinking it proceeded for want of wisdom: then againe he supposed a Knight endued with such bountifull and rare gifts of prowess, could not chuse but likewise enjoy sufficient wisdom to consider the value of such gifts. And entering into a further consideration thereof, he began to conjecture that he was sprung of some great personage, which might be the cause thereof, and so, that he was unknown, he thought it to be the very truth. When againe he called to remembrance,

byance what Amasenus had told him' about his coming into that Country, that he was by these thoughts grown into such a desire to be satisfied therein, that he sent for the Knight of Fame, and in the presence of the Queen, Amasenus, Remulus, and Phylena and all the assembly of gallant knights that came to the triumph, he said as followeth:

Worthy Knight, whom I so much affect, that if it lye in my power to do you any more honour, then I have heretofore preferred, I would willingly do it, for your valour deserveth everlasting commendations. I have offered you my Daughter in marriage: and withal, intended to have adopted you my son and heir; both which you have refused, yeelding your interest in my daughter to *Remulus*, and therewith left the inheritance I adjoynd to her marriage, which were both worthy of regard, for that such gifts are seldom given: which maketh me send for you, desiring to be satisfied for your coming in the one, and also to know of whence, and what you are, if I can without offence to you, obtain the same.

The Knight of Fame made this reply: Most high and mighty King, I will satisfy your demand: I confess your Majesty did so much honour me, as my life shall be alwayes ready at your command in requital of the same: and your Princely gifts are of such estimation, as I account my self far unworthy to possess them; but that they might have been bestowed on the greatest Potentate in the world, which I neither refused nor lightly esteemed, but alwayes regarded, as of precious and inestimable value: nor drawn thereto by any want of consideration of their worthinesse, but for the honourable respect I bear to loyalty. For should I have presumed to have wed your Princely Daughter, I should have done her great injury, and thereby parted the hearts of true and loyal friends.

For pleaseth your Majesty, at the first I intended with a joyful heart to have claimed my interest in that sweet Princely love: but I was commanded the contrary by an undoubted means, (which if it so please you, I will in private unfold) as also perceiving the friendship betwixt her and that

Noble

Noble Knight *Remulus*, past with consent of both these parties: I should have esteemed it either in my self, or in any other, an act of great dishonour and impiete, to part those sacred bonds of Friendship, which if I had dissolved, might have turned their sweet content into discontented misery, neither could I so readily presume, to challenge interest into so sweet a Ladies love without desert, which is not attained by armes, but by loyalty; which was the cause that I yeilded my interest unto him, that had taken possession in her gentle heart, before my coming: and for my birth I know not my Parents, but the truth of all that is manifest unto me, the noble Duke Amasenus hath made you part unto it.

The King bearing his speeches, greatly commended his honourable mind, saying, Thou worthy Knight, if there be any means left wherein I may pleasure you, do but ask, and you shall assuredly obtain, whatsoever it be; for which kinde and Kingly proffer, the Knight of Fame with all humility gave him great thanks.

Whilst they were in this communication, there suddenly entered into the Hall, four Knights in mourning attire carrying on their shoulders, a coffin covered with black, by their countenances pretending the discovery of some Tragical event. The King of Thrace seeing this sad spectacle, greatly marvelled of whence they should be, and what heavy newes they had brought: And they being come to the place where the King was, setting their Beards, spake as followeth:

Most high and mighty King of Thrace, we are Knights belonging to the King of Lybia, who kindly greeteth your Majesty by us, requesting you to take no offence at our rude message, the occasion whereof is this: It is not unknown that the King our Lord, hath but one only Daughter, named *Venola*: who on a day riding forth on hunting, being by a Tempest severed from her Train, (being accompanied by many knights) amongst whom was *Tyrius*, a knight of Thrace, unto whose custody the King had com-

committed her, and was unawares surprized by Gyant Brandamor, (that dwelleth in a Castle in the Forrest of Arde) and by him by violence carryed away, whom this noble Knight Tyrides pursued, but the Gyant too mighty a foe for him to cope withall) slew him, and so conveyed the Princesse into his Castle: whose corps we have (according to our Kings command) brought hither.

Amasenus hearing this sad report, ran unto the dead body of his Son, breathing forth such lamentations, that it would have made the very Rocks to have rent at his sorrows: whom the King comforted by all possible means he could, but grieved for his Sonnes untimely death, so over-welmed and oppressed his heart with such passions of desperate care, that he fell into an extreme Sicknesse (which his old Age being not able to out-wear) within few dayes after ended his life.

Amasenus death who was so generally beloved, turned their mirth to sorrow, and their joy into sad preparation for mournfull Funerals for the two dead Knights: which was afterwards performed in most stately manner.

The Knight of Fame seeing his dearest friend Amasenus dead hearing of Venolacs Imprisonment, resolved in requitall of some part of Amasenus his Friendship to revenge Tyrides death on the Gyant: besides his mind was affected with such desire to see the Lady Venola, that giving no respite to delay, he presently after the night of Amasenus Funerals was performed, made his intent known to the King, and withall revenge took his leave of him.

Likewise others that came to the Assembly, and staid maintained in the Kings Court being grown into great familiarity with the Knight of Fame: and desirous to make tryall of their valour against the Gyant, departed likewise toward Lybia, with the knights that brought the dead body of Tyrides: amongst whom was the King of Arragon, named Archylachas, Guido of Thrace, Trudamor of Candy, Drion Sicill, Tristramus one of the White-bellied Brethren, and within three dayes arrived in Lybia, where the King hearing

of their intent, and cause of coming, entertained them Royally.

The Knight of Fame remained in the Court of the King of Lybia, some time dayes: where his entertainment was most courteous and honourable, which might have drawn a resolute determination to have taken a delight therein: But hee thought all time, though entertained with varieties of pleasure, tedious: all delicate fair and costly banquetting, superfluous, and all company wearisome: having his cogitations oppressed with care, his mind filled, meditating on his Ladies sweet beauty, and his heart thirsting for revenge of Tyrides death respecting no pleasure, nor affecting no delight, but to find some knowledge of his unkind mistress, making preparation to besiege Brandamor, and thirsting for honour, secretly departed towards the Forrest of Arde where he arrived most fortunately, to preserve his Princely Fathers life, (though to him unknown) as is declared in the former Chapter.

## CHAP. XII.

How Pollipus, and Tellamor departed from Brandamors Castle to *Violetta* and *Clariana*, And how as they were returning back with them: they met with Brandamor whom they supposed had been dead, and of the arrivall of the King of Lybia in the Forrest of Arde.



Parismus the Knight of Fame, and all the rest, being in Brandamors Castle began with good advisement to determine what to do, and at last concluded, (because Parismus and Tristramus were grievously wounded, and thereby not able to endure trauell) they should stay, and with them the Knight of Fame (to guard Venola:) Pollipus and Tellamor, should depart towards Pannamus Castle who taking their farewells of Parismus and the Knight of Fame, betook them



themselves to their journey, towards the place that burdened their chiefest delights. Pollipus being vntwined with an exceeding desire, to see his constant Lady Violetta, from whence he had been a long time severed, and to recreate his senses overrul'd with care, in the sweet salace of her heavenly company, the remembrance of which delight, filled his heart with exceeding affectionate content. Tellamor likewise had taken such a surfeit with beholding Clarianaes sweet beauty, that no Physick but her beauty could cure the same, neither could a thousand perills, detain him from thence: which hopefull conceit, fed his heart with inward delight, that in these meditations intermingled with pleasant communications, they spent their time until they were come near to the Castle, when within short time they arrived, And dismounting themselves they came to the Porter, who knowing Tellamor admitted their entrance: being conducted in by some of the Serbants into the Hall, and asking for the Lady Clariana the waiting maid told them that she was in the Garden, accompanied by Violetta offering to conduct them to the place.

Nay (quoth Tellamor) fair Damozells I pray let us go alone: with that Pollipus and he entred the Garden, and stopping where they were seated upon a Greene Banke in communication: And pacing softly towards the place, they sheltered themselves from their sight by a Rose-bush that was close by them and heard their conferences; which was this: Violetta leaning sadly upon her elbow, her countenance bearing shew that a multitude of cares possesse her heart, and Clariana was seated a little distance off; tearing and dismemb'ring the sweet Flowers that she had carelessly tropt of their stalkes. Violetta answering to some speech that Clariana had before uttered said, Yea my misfortunes have beene too extreme, and such I think as no creature ever endured the like, but my most unhappy selfe: which now being overpast, would soon be banisht from my remembrance, might I once enjoy the sight of my dear Knight Pollipus, which hope hath been the onely preserver of my lifes. Oh (quoth Clariana) happy and

con

ten times more then happy, in my fancy are Ladies that are wedded to such constant Knights; but I feare me, there are too many of the contrary part: But I with my Brother, and these two other courteous Knights such good successe as to set him at liberty, so that I might behold him, whom you so highly commend.

Yea (quod Venola) that would be a happy day to me, but I greatly misdoubt that will not suddainly come to passe, and I have been so often cross in my desire, that my doubtful heart will not suffer me to entertain the least conceit of such felicity: Which said, tears in abundance fell from her eyes: Which caused Clarina to do the like, and wept for company. Pollipus hearing Violettaes speeches, and seeing her teares, could no longer withhold himself, but intreated Tellamor to discover himself; and coming towards them, both of them espying them, at the first marvelled what they should be, but Violetta knowing Tellamor, thought the other had been Barzilas, Tellamor coming to Clarina, graced her ruddy lips with a sweet kisse saying, Most vertuous Lady, We bring you happy newes, of the safety and releasement of your good friends, and the death of *Brandamor*.

Violetta well noting the other Knights Shield, had a mighty perswasion, that by his Device he would be Pollipus: with all, marking his Proportion, her heart sometimes fainted, and sometimes a pale colour appeared: which straight was overspread with a Rosate blush, and such perplexities, one while of joy, another while of sorrow, so overwhelmed her heart, that the brinish salt teares overflowed her eyes, and she turned back to wipe them off, thinking to have concealed the same. In which time Pollipus had unbuckled his Helmet, and discovered himself.

Violetta having wiped off the due of her salt teares, and lifting up her head, espied him; which suddain joy, so revived all her senses, that she fell into his armes, not being able to utter a word: Whilist he lovingly embraced her, reviving her senses with many sweet kisses,

h

which

Which done, he said: Welcome my sweet delight: after so many cares, let us now bid adue to griefe and, forget sad mischances.

My dear Knight (quoth *Viолetta*) my trauels are now conuerted to carefull quiet rest, and the conclusion of my miseries to sweet; as all the worlds ioyes cannot be compared therewith. Since that I haue my dear *Lobe* folded within the circuit of my embrace, since I enjoy your company, which I haue so long time wanted: since after my griefes, I am possesse with such delightfull felicity: whose pleasure may be compared to mine: what delight may equall my content? My care is banisht to comfort: *Wo* with weale is controlled: pain conquered by pleasure: joy vnited with joy: and pleasure with delight possesse my heart.

Which words being ended, he entertained him with such a sweet *Labyrinth* of kind welcomes, that it would haue raviſht a discontented heart, with surfeiting content to behold the same: which ended, *Pollipus* with great kindeſſe ſaluted *Clarina*, and having not yet ſatisfied his fancy with joy of *Viолетта*'s welcome, sight, and sweet preſence, he led her aſide, delighting in each others company, with inexplorable content.

Which ſorted to *Tellamors* deſire: whose heart was inflamed with *Lobes* burning fire, that coming to *Clarina* with a ſubmiſſive geſture took her by the precious hand, ſaying: O ſoft verruous Lady, how happy are thoſe that injoy ſuch content, as theſe two *Lovers* embrace, which maketh me eſteem my ſelf unfortunate, that haue not yet taſted theſe delights, but haue been tormented with *Lovers* reſleſſe deſire: neither could I euer ſettle my Fancy, to entertaine that diuine diſty: untill I beheld your Beauty, which hath tyed my heart with untoward Paſſions, procured by the entire aſſections of my earneſt devotion to your perfections, that I humbly ſue to your courteſſe for pittie to my cares, beſeeching you to conceale right of my meaning, and to moderate my extreame grief with the ſweet ſalve of your clemency,

die, I preſume thus boldly to commit my Paſſions to your remembrance, procured by my reſleſſe deſire to be acceptable in your ſight. I cannot boaſt of loyalty, becauſe hitherto you haue had no tryall of my truth, nor any cauſe to command my deſert, becauſe the want of means to be imployed hath kept me from performing any ſuch duties: but I proteſt and promiſe as much as any true heart dare affirm, or the conſtantheſt friend may perform: Therefore I beſeech you ſweet *Miſtreſſe*, grant your ſervant ſome labour, wherewith to comfort his poor heart, which hath devoted it ſelfe everlaſtingly to your obedience.

*Clarina* hearing his ſpeeches, having before grown into ſome good liking of them, and having ſome ſparkes of *Infant Lobe* kindled in her breaſt, and being ſomewhat willing to yeeld to *Lobes* aſſault, yet doubting his conſtancy, made this answer, Good ſervant, what further labour doe you require, then that which I haue already granted? For ſuch paſſions as you ſpeak of, I know not what they are: and withall, I thinke ſuch ſuddaine *Lobe* cannot proceed from any firm foundation: neither could I wiſh you to make any ſuch proteſtations or promiſes to me, that am neither worthy thereof, nor expect any ſuch, being the ordinary ſpeeches of light *Lovers*: with which I pray you trouble not my quiet ſences, for it cannot pleaſure you, to diſturb my cogitation with *Lobes* vanities, when you your ſelfe are fartheſt off from the leaſt reſpect of loyalty: Therefore, as I haue beſtowed you the uttermoſt labour which with modeſty I can afford, I pray you reſt contented therewith.

I but dear *Miſtreſſe* (quoth he) *Lobe* which you terme vanity, is of ſuch power, that it bringeth the fraileſt minds ſubject to her obedience, who hath taken ſuch full poſſeſſion in my heart, that no miſery or torment can remove the ſame: then I beſeech you, repute not me to be one of them that entertaine *Lobe* of cuſtome, but let your Clemency conceive a better opinion of my fate, which is grounded upon the firmeſt foundation of perfect loyalty: and though I confeſſe the labour which you haue

already granted me, is more then I have deserved, or ever shall be able to requite, yet extend your courtesie so far, as to consider of my affection, that it may move your gentle heart to yield me Love.

For otherwise, I assure you my life without that will be but grievous, and my sorrows so exceeding, that in the end you will repent the cruelty you used: but I trust your virtues will not contain such rigour, but according to the courteous Pleas that aboundeth in your gentle heart, you will yield my humble Request; which shall both shew you pity, and bind me to you in all bonds of perfect Constancy.

Clarina thus answered him again: Well Servant, your requests pierce so deep into my breast, that I promise you this further favour, that according as I find your desires I will give credit to your speeches: and in the mean time take this comfort, that none shall remove my good liking from you, untill my self find you false.

Tellamor hearing the sweet content of those Nectar-breathing words, ended the rest of his speech upon her Lips: which Pollipus nor Violetta had no time to take notice of, being themselves every way delighted with as sweet content: And afterwards coming all together, they went into the Castle, (delighting each in others sweet company) especially Clarina, began to conceive such good liking of her Servant Tellamor, that she took no other felicity but onely in his sight; where Pollipus declared to Clarina their happy victory, and how that it was Maderaes will she should depart with them to Brandamors Castle, which she willingly yielded unto; the rather, thereby to enjoy Tellamors company: and so the Night approaching, Pollipus and his sweet Violetta betook themselves to their rest: and Tellamor and Clarina to their several lodgings, whose hearts with themselves the like happy content, they knew the other two should enjoy, if their Honour would have permitted them.

Early the next Morning, they departed towards the Forrest of Arde, being accompanied by twenty trusty Servants belong-

longing in Clarina, passing away the time in many delightful speeches, two of Clarinaes Servants by occasion staid behind the rest of their company, and as they were newly entered the Forrest, they espied the Giant Brandamor crossing the way, which brake them into such fear, that like men distract of their wits, they fled from him. Brandamor seeing that, pursued them untill he overtook one of them, and slew him, the other making the more haste, overtook his company, being so affrighted that for a good space he could not utter his mind: which brake them all into an admiration; afterwards breathing, he said the Giant Brandamor was alive, and had slain one of his fellows. Pollipus hearing his speeches, wondered whence they should proceed: for that he and all the rest thought the Giant had been drowned, wherein they were deceived; for he having received the fall by the Knight of Fame, with much ado scrambled out of the water, which was not deep enough to drench his huge body, but giving some credit to the Fellowes speeches, Pollipus and five or six of the servants went backe with him, and presently espied Brandamor, bearing in his hand a strong young plant which he had pluckt up by the root for his Meal upon, who seeing Pollipus and his company, knowing him would have fled: but Pollipus overtaking him, beset him with such strict bessege, that notwithstanding he laid about him with his mighty staffe, yet he soon brought him to his subjection causing his armes to be fast bound with cords.

And in that sort they brake him before them untill they arrived at his Castle: whether they were kindly welcomed by Parisimus, who rejoiced to see Pollipus and Violetta, so happily met again.

And seeing Brandamor they all both marvelled how he had escaped death and were glad they had him again, to be revenged in more severe manner, for the outrages he had done them.

The Knight of Fame noting the exceeding joy of Parisimus, and Pollipus, for Violettaes safety, & of Parisimus with his mother and sister Clarina. And noting Tellamors merry countenance (procured by a great hope to attain Clarinaes love) was

drawn to such a sad remembrance of his own misfortune, that was enjoyned to a task to find his Parents and the Lady to whose service he was dedicated: unto whose beauty he was become so enthralled, that his heart could harbour no conceit of joy, but only in meditating on her perfections: which by absence, bred thousands of cares in his troubled head: whose affections he thought would best agree with his sadness that he accompanied her to many communications.

Words was brought them the castle, was round begirt with Souldiers; which the Knight of Fame hearing, desired that he might go out to Parley with them, to know whether they be friends or foes? which they all gave consent unto, who arming himself, went forth gallantly mounted and found that it was the King of Lybia; who before having some knowledge of the Knight of Fame, knew him again by his Armour, marvelling to see him (contrary to his expectation) to issue out of the Castle.

The Knight of Fame coming towards him, said: Most mighty King, I as one of the Guardians of this Castle, having by the overthrow of the Gyant *Brandamor* Conquered the same, yeeld the same into your hands.

The King hearing his speeches most lovingly embraced him; saying, Noble knight the report I have heard of your knightly prowess, are verified in this noble attempt, that have subdued that hateful contemner of honour? Which none but your self could have so valiantly performed,

Noble king (quod he) here is within this Castle the most famous Prince of *Bohemia*; Whose hardiness and valour before my approach, had so much weakned the Tyrants power; that my task was easie to subdue him. The king hearing that wondred what occasion had drawn *Parismus* into those parts of whom he had knowledge in *Thessalie*.

The King of Lybia, accompanied by *Archiliacus*, with divers of his knights was conducted by the knight of Fame, into the Castle, to the exceeding joy of *Venola*, who with humble

humble reverence fell prostrate at his feet: hee coming to *Parismus* saluted him with great courtesie. who likewise returned him and the young *Archiliacus* the like salutation, and after that every one in most kind and courteous manner saluted each other, spending the rest of the day in such content as the place yeilded.

## CHAP. XIV.

Of *Brandamor*'s death, and of the Kings departure backe into *Lybia*. How *Venola* was enamoured with the Knight of Fame. How she devised meanes to stay his departure with *Parismus*. How *Tellamor* dissembled himself sick, to stay in *Clarinas* company. And of other accidents that befell the Knight of Fame.

**T**he next morning *Brandamor* was brought into the Hall before the whole Assembly of States, to whom *Parismus* said; Disturber of Peace, the time of punishment draweth nigh, therefore declare to whom thou art prisoner, for but one was thy Conquerour, at whose hands thou mayst receive reward according to thy desert. *Brandamor* made this reply. I yield my self to that strange Knight, by whose valour I was conquered: otherwise, not all the force the King of Lybia hath brought would have prevailed against me. The Knight of Fame hearing his words, said. Since thou hast yeilded thy self to me, I surrender my interest unto this Princessse *Venola*, who may at her pleasure dispose of thee as shee shall thinke good.

*Venola* hearing the Knight of Fames words, presently yeilded him great thanks: desiring the King her Father to appoint his punishment, who caused him that day in the presence of them all, to be drawn in pieces by Wolves: which done, the King of Lybia came to *Parismus*, requesting him be-

for his return into Bohemia, to sojourn some few days with him, which he kindly accepted, with whom Pollipus the knight of Fame, and Violetta likewise departed: Pannamus stayed still with his Mother in Brandamors Castle, which by consent of all was given to him, in recompence of the injuries hee had sustained.

Tellamor seeing all things fall out contrary to his liking, could not devise what meanes to use to stay behind, to enjoy Glorinas company, without the which, it was impossible for to enjoy any quiet: and casting in his mind all devices hee thought fittest, at last hee fained himselfe extremely sicke, which hee performed so cunningly, that although they had suspected his drift, yet they could hardly have espied his policy: by which meanes Parismus left him behind, upon his faithfull promise to come to him at such time as hee was to depart from Lybia. The King of Lybia with great joy (having such noble and valiant knights in his company) where he was most joyfully entertained by his Nobles, who hearing that Venola was released by the valour of onely two Knights (which was Parismus and the knight of Fame, applauded their victorie, with great praises, and devised all the means they could to increase their honourable entertainment.

Likewise the Queen used many courtesies towards them in requitall of their kindnesse, where were feastinges, Banquettings, Maskes and Tryumphs, performed by the knights there assembled, with exceeding pomp and pleasure: the chiefest honour whereof redounded to the knight of Fame, whereby his fame is spread into most places of the world. Venola noting his exceeding valour and beauty, and withall, how much his splendid fame was extolled in every mans mouth, in recompence of the travels he had endured to set her at liberty, used such extraordinary kindnesse towards him, as he perceived that to proceed from an universall liking: and beholding the gifts of nature that abounded in him, he began to be intangled in loves hands, offering exceeding kindnesse to demonstrate the affections to him; to the intent hee should perceive the same: which

when she saw took no such effect as shee desired, it rather increased her desire, then any way mitigated the same: that she that had before refused many things sutes, was now enthralled by her own choice, and to such a one as made no show or signe of such devoted kindnesse as she expected in him.

For not many dayes after she used that extraordinary behaviour, which many began to note, thinking the same had bene procured by his sute but he contrarily was nothing so affected, but his senses were so benumbed with compleating the perfections of his unknown Mistress, that Venolacs kindnesse (which many would have taken as high favours) were bestowed in vain, which in time she well perceived, marvelling that he could not understand her meaning: which aggravated her desires, that they grew as a burning flame which so melted her yielding heart, that nothing could stink in her fancy, but how to give knowledge of her good will: that by the concurrence of these passions she began altogether to delight in solitarinesse, unlesse it were in his company.

The time of Parismus departure being come (which was appointed the next morning) Venola was drawn into an exceeding feare, least that the knight of Fame would go with him, that she began to devise what meanes to use to stay him, which she could by no meanes of her self invent, which drove her to her wits end, and in great heavinesse complaining in her chamber, casting her self upon her Bed, she uttered these complaints. What misery may be compared to the torments I endure, procured by love which hath intangled me in her snares, and setled my liking on a stranger, that as carelessly regardeth my good will, as I earnestly affect his perfections? What extremity is this, that my unlucky Destinies have allotted me to refuse the offer of many Kings, that have humbly sued for my love, and to make choice of one that maketh least account of my kindnesse? For it cannot be, but he perceiveth my love, which being so, how discourteous is he, that in all this time will not yeeld me any recompence for the same? peradventure, he seeth nothing in me worth the liking, or else my beauty



beauty is not such, as may flatteringly have perswaded mee it is. Am not I a Kings Daughter, and he peradventure borne of mean Parentage? And what dignity might he come to by my Love? But all this he regardeth not, but being rudely brought up, according to that rudenesse, cannot conceive of my liking. But what meane I to disgrace the Knight, whose courtesie maketh him beloved of all, whose comelnesse maketh him liked of all, and whose valour maketh him honoured of all: who hath no doubt, already placed his affections on some beautifull Lady, and that is the cause of his strangenesse: yea that is the thing that hindreth my joyes: for without his love I can attain no quiet, which now I am likewise like to lose by his departure, which I feare me will be too soone: which words being ended, such passions overwhelmed her heart, that her eyes burst forth into tears, and there she lay upon her bed, tumbling with extreame griefe and torment of those restless passions.

Whilste she continued her sorowes, in comes Flavia her Nurse, who by espying her cheekes besmeared with tears, and her sad countenance, marvelling what should procure the same said: My sweet Mistresse, how happeneth it that you weepe thus? Who hath done you wrong? Or why doe you torment your sweet self with this sadnesse? Deare Lady tell mee? O Nurse (quoth *Venola*) my owne folly hath procured mee this disquiet: and my self bearing the cause, whom should I blame but my self? Why Lady (quoth she) what have you done? What is the matter? have you done your selfe any harme? Why should you conceale any thing from me, that have all your life long loved you as dearly as my owne heart? My sweet Daughter hide nothing from me: but tell mee why you mar those your pretty eyes with such sorrow? Why (quoth *Venola*) what should it availe me to tell you, when I know you cannot helpe me: if I should declare it to you, and by that meanes come to my Fathers knowledge, it would bee more grievous to me then death: When good Flavia, did not take to know my cause of care, but let mee consume my selfe in

silence

silence when I have no other means of remedy. Flavia hearing her words, was the more desirous to know what the matter was, sometimes weeping, sometimes intreating her to tell it her, and sometimes protesting that she would rather endure any torment, then reveal the same: thus *Venola* won with her perswasions, teares, and protestations, and withall desirous of comfort, imparted her whole mind unto her, desiring her to be both secret and trusty: and withall asked her counsell how she might stay him from departing with the Prince of *Bohemia*. Lady (quoth Flavia) since you have imparted your secret unto me, I wil both secretly keep your counsel, and diligently labour to stay his journey at this time. I but (quoth *Venola*): I pray thee do it so, that he may not way perceibe that it was by my procurement. Let me alone for that, (said she) and in the meane time cast you off these cloudy cares: and get you downe amongst the rest of the Ladies, rejoycing with a merry countenance, and commit the care of this matter to me, which I will effect to your good liking.

*Venola* being somewhat rebited with Flavias promise with a merry heart forsook her Chamber, Flavia being departed about her businesse, and going into the City with all hast: went where dwelt an ancient Apothecary, a very good friend of hers, to whom she durst commit any secret, whom she desired to compound certain of his Drugges together, and to make a somniferous Potion, which would cause one sleep for four and twenty houres, in such sort, that the party might by no meanes be awakened, promising if he could make such a confection, to reward him very richly.

The Apothecary hearing her words, told her, that if she would stay, he would compound such a drink as should ever way work the same effect she desired. Flavia having attained her desire that way, came to a Goldsmith and bought a most curious round bottell of Gold, whereon she caused him to engrave these Letters.

My

My pleasant task doth doubts appease,  
 I banish care and grieve unkind :  
 Things yet unknown, I doe reveal,  
 Unknown is he that shall me find,  
 A friend unknown, hath thee this sent,  
 Behold and cast incontinent.

And having gotten every thing according to her desire, returneth to the Court, and the time of rest drawing nigh, she wrought such meanes, that she had the appointment of the Knight of Fame lodging, where she laid the bottle (in which thing she had put the somniferous potion) so right in his way, that he could not chuse but find the same, intending that if she failed of her purpose, yet she would work such meanes, that she would give it him in the morning.

The Knight of Fame all that day kept company with *Parismus*, unto whom his heart bare an inward love, determining to bring him towards Bohemia, and after to travell in search of his Parents. *Parismus* likewise was grown into such love of his qualities, and such a hidden desire to pleasure him, was stirred in his heart towards him, that he blest him with such an extraordinary kindnesse, as the friendship that past betwixt them, seemed inseparable.

Thus the day being spent, every one took them to their lodgings: the knight of Fame coming to his lodging, walking up and down lighted on the bottle, and noting the same, took it up; and espying the verses, read the contents, which drew him into many cogitations how the same should come there: at last, amongst many other thoughts, hee was moved by the contents of the verses, hee was the man should taste thereof. Then he began to feare least it might be some poyson laid on purpose to betray his life, but that suspition was soon extinguished, the desire he had to find ease to his doubts, which the contents of the Superscription promised: that tasting a little of the liquor: and finding the same pleasant being perswaded, that it

was

was conveyed by some divine operation to procure content, he drank it quite off, and presently went to his bed: which when *Flavia* saw, with a joyfull heart she went to *Venola*, and declared unto her what she had done; and afterwards leaving *Venola* to her self, she came to an old acquaintance of hers: who at her request wrote a Letter to *Parismus* in the Name of the Knight of Fame, which the next morning she delivered to him, the contents whereof were these.

**M**ost noble Prince of Bohemia, my full intent was for the undeserved kindness, I have found in you, to have attended you toward Bohemia, but a contrary occasion hath withdrawn me: therefore, I desire your honour, both to pardon me, and make no enquiry after me: for I will as soone as I have ended my business, repaire to shew my duty to you in the BOHEMIAN Court: so in all reverence, I commit your worthinesse to all good fortunes.

*A poor Knight unknown.*

*Parismus* reading the Letter, marvelled what occasion had withdrawn him, but being therewith contented, and trusting accordingly to see him in Bohemia, he made no other speech of him, but taking his leave of the King and Queen, having in his company *Pollipus* and *Violetta*, with some forty Knights of *Lybia*, hee departed towards Bohemia: Tellamora all this while remained in the Forrest of *Arde*, in company of his dear Mistresse *Clarina*, so cunningly handling his business, that none could perceive but that he was very sick indeed: in which time *Clarina* was his Physician carefully tending him, and doing a most extraordinary kindnesse, whose company was more pleasant to him than any thing else: that therewith and other sweet labours he received from her kindnesse, he forgot his sickness, and prosecuted his love which in time of his sickness he had that good issue, that *Clarina* was no lesse loved in the end of Love than he was. And upon a time, when *Clarina* was in her Chamber unaccompanied by any, hee amongst other kind-

kindnesses, uttered these speeches, My sweet Mistresse (quoth he) how much is your poor Servant beholding to you, that have so tenderly regarded me, and taken such infinite paines about me, which maketh me so much bound unto you, that my life is, and shall be for ever dedicated to deserve this kindness: besides the affection which I bear to your excellencies: maketh me presume prosecute my sute unto you, thereby to bring my selfe further into your debt: desiring you to yeeld pity to my distresse, and ease to my restlesse passions, procured by your Beauty, which if you withhold, soon will care consume my weary life; neither can my heart attain to any quiet or content, without your love, which I more esteem then either life, or any other thing that I en joy; Therefore sweet Mistresse deferre my sute no longer, but now extend your favour to my distresse, and grant me love for my love, whereon my chief felicity dependeth.

Good servant (quoth Clarina) were I assured of thy constancy, soon shouldst thou know my mind, but some cross misfortune will soon alter thy affection, and so thou wilt leave me in distresse: then what misery may I incur by granting to thy sute? Sweet Mistresse (quoth Tellamor) if ever knight were true, then will your poor Servant prove true: if ever heart harboured constancy, then be you assured that constant love possesseth my heart: for so entire are my devotions to remain immovable, that no misfortune or calamity whatsoever, shall cause me falsify my faith, but rather let all plagues and unfortunate miseries light upon my head.

Clarina hearing his speeches, made this reply: Well dear Servant since I see thy faithfulness, and how diligent thou hast been to win my favour, I yeld both my love and my self into thy possession, which hereafter account as thine stone to dispose of: and be thou assured notwithstanding my strangeness, my love hath every way equalled thy affections, and with so free a heart I give my life and love into thy hands: as willingly as thou desirest to have the same. Tellamor having received this assurance of her loyalty, to revive his senses

withall, entertained that comfort, and her presence with great delight, leaving off his sute, and spending the time in embracings. Many dayes continued these true lovers in great pleasure being grown to that familiarity, that oftentimes such kind labors past betwixt them that Clarina overcome by his intreaties, yelded by her fortresse of virginity unto him: oftentimes frequenting each others company, in that kind sort tasting their stolne pleasure with great delight, untill the news of Parismus returne came to their knowledge, (and Tellamor bound thereto by oath, must needs depart,) which strooke an extreme sadness to both their hearts, But especially Clarina took the same so heavily, that no perswasion could give comfort to her heart. The remembrance of whose departure, overcame her with such passions of grief, being in her Chamber alone, that she uttered many mournfull plaints and withall such abundance of teares, that a heart of the hardest steemant, would have dissolved at her lamentations: to ease which grief, she devised how to enjoy his company, if it were possible to the last hour of his departure, and by the counsell of one of her Wantozells named Ancilla, she wrought such means that she enjoyed his company that night.

Tellamor being a knight of honourable conditions, laboured all that he could to leave her contented, and to perform his faithfull promise to Parismus; then before his departure, taking his leave of Madera and Pannuamus, who so well liked his company, that they were unwilling to leave the same. After which he went to bed, thinking to take his farewell of Clarina betimes in the morning, when none but themselves should be party thereto: but the poore Lady, being last fettered in the snares of love, having contrived every thing for her security: when he was in his deep sleep, approached to his Beds-side, with a clear burning Taper in her hand, where she stood a great while, being unwilling to interrupt his quiet sleep, revolving many thoughts in her troubled head. At last, she could not chuse but touch his manly hand, which hung over the Beds-side

side wherewith she awaked him, who being scarcely out of his dreawle sleep, spying his beloved standing by his Bedde side, could not of a suddain conceit, nor being there, but at length having received his senses by rubbing his eyes, he took her by the hand, and won her consent to come into the Bed, where he entertained her with many sweet embracings, and pleasant conference, who tooke no small delight in his company, after much time (which they thought too short) spent in kindness, Clarina demanded when he would return, for (quoth she) My self is nothing without your presence: neither shall I attaine any quiet in your absence: therefore I beseech you have regard of my honour, which I have yielded into your hands, and when you are amongst your friends in *Bohemiah*, be not unmindfull of *Clarinaes* Love, who hath committed her Life, Honour, and Chastity, into your gentle custody.

Most dear Clarina, (quoth Tellamor) my return shall bee as speedy as may be: for like as you, my self shall never enjoy one minutes respite of content without your heavenly company, whereupon your chiefeest felicity dependeth: and as you have yielded all that I can desire, or you grant into my unworthy keeping, I will as carefully labour to preserve the same from all spot of dishonour, hoping at my return to enjoy the possession of your Love, as well by generall consent of your friends, as by your courtship. I have attained their divine fruition in private, then I beseech you, let no disquiet disturb your peace, let no doubt trouble your fancy, nor any suspence of Loyalty take root in your heart: For sooner shall the Sea become dry Land, the Sun and Moon lose their clear light, and all things turn to their contrary, before Tellamor will any way falsifie his faith.

In these, and many other such like speeches, they spent that Night, taking their leave each of other: with many a ceremonious Farewell, and parting with many a heavy sigh and sad tears, thinking that with each other sight, and others life had parted, Tellamor according to his promise ar-

rode in Lybia and at the time of *Parismus* departure; whom he will leave onwards on his journey towards *Bohemia*.

The knight of Fame having slept his fill, and longer a great while then he determined, awaked within two dayes after *Parismus* departure: little thinking the Prince had been gone, but beginning to arm himself, Flavia coming to him, said as followeth. Worthy knight (quoth she) I am glad to see that you are well; which untill now I doubted. The knight of Fame hearing her speeches, said; Gentlewoman, as yet I have not been sick, then why do you make any question of my health.

Indeed Sir (quoth she) I see now you have not been sick but you have slept very long, for I have been your keeper this two dayes, ever since the Prince of *Bohemia* departed; who thought to have had your company some part of the way, but seeing you asleep (from which you could not be awaked) he imparted his mind to the Lady *Venola*, who hath given me speciall charge to attend you diligently,

He hearing her speeches: was amazed in his thoughts to think of them, entering into many cogitations what should be the cause of his sleepiness: which he perceived was the potion which he had taken, whereat he was exceedingly enraged with himself, that he was thereby disappointed of *Parismus* company, whom he esteemed above all the knights that ever he met withall. and making a vertue of necessity, blaming himselfe for his sleepiness, he went downe into the company of other knights, making the best excuse he could thereof. Flavia in the mean time went to *Venola*, and told her all that hapned: and what she had told him of *Parismus* departure: wishing her to advise what she thought best to satisfie his mind. The knight of Fame being desirous to know what message *Parismus* had left with *Venola*, meeting with Flavia, desired her to certifie him of his distress, that he attended her pleasure, to know what the Prince of *Bohemia* had told her as concerning him.

Flavia hearing his speeches, brought him into a Gallery, where she desired him to stay, and shee would go bring him answer:

answer presently: So coming to Venola, she told her thereof, Venola then having rid her Chamber of all company, told her to bring him in; whom she welcomed with untold kindness; and taking him by the hand desired him to sit down by her upon the Beds-side, to whom he said as followeth.

Most courteous knight, the Prince of Bohemia would move to certify you, that he would within four dayes return to this place, to desire your company: in executing a secret of importance: desiring me that I would intreat you to stay here some few dayes, and at his return he will requite that kindness: Therefore I pray (quoth she) be my guest for so long time; for I have received such benefits by your courtesie, as I would willingly if it lay in my power requite the same.

I thank your excellency (quoth he) for proffering me such kindness, acknowledging my self both unworthy thereof, and unable to requite the same: being so much the more willing to stay *Parismus* return, thereby to shew my duty to your request: and seeing you vouchsafe me to be your guest, having as yet deserved no such kindness, pleaseth you to command or employ me any way, and I will most willingly undertake any travail or industry whatsoever to procure your content: which words he spake, though little thinking what passions had possessed her tender heart: whom she used so kindly, and entertained with such loving glances, that he began greatly to commend her courtesie.

And again he marvelled much, why she used him with such kindness, as that it would have pierced the heart of any other knight but onely himselfe: whose affections was settled on his inward devoted Lady that Venolacs kindness was bestowed in vain, and she spent her sighs and good will in a barren way, where she wept in hope of recompence: which drove her to such extremity of grief, that she was often in mind, having by good chance, gotten him so fitly into her company, and fearing to loose so sweet opportunity, (to reveal her love to him of her self.

But yet that purpose was suddenly altered again by quite contrary thoughts: that she late oppressed with so many & so extreme cogitations, that she grieved one the one side that he could not conceive of her good liking, by so many evident tokens as she had shewed thereof, and her owne passions overwhelmed her heart, with such care, that she suddenly burst out into abundance of teares, and so rose from the Bed and went to a window.

The Knight of Fame, marveling what should be the cause of her sadness: thinking that his company could but disquiet her, departed her Chamber: which she perceiving was overcome with such passions, that she fell down in a trance, as she were dead. Wherewith Flavia gave such shrieks, that the knight of Fame hearing her outcry, suddenly returned, and finding Venola in that estate, did the best he could with the spurle to recover her senses: which at last began to return to their wonted uses.

Venola lifting up her eyes and espying the knight of Fame holding her in his armes, wished that for ever she might have continued in this trance: who carrying her to the bed, there lay her down, and Flavia and other Damozels by that time took her into their custody; which caused him to depart again: After whom Venola cast such a greedy look: accompanied with such scolding sighs, that Flavia feared she would have fallen into the like trance again. After she was well recovered and all her attendants departed, Flavia said as followeth. Why dear Distresse (quoth she) how immoderately do you govern your selfe, to fall into these extremes? I shew my heart, if I do not repent that ever I tooke my hand to be an actor herein. What have you no more wisdom but so fondly to dote on a stragling knight, that cannot, or at the least will not understand my meaning, taking a delight to see your torment, for it is impossible but that he should perceive your love towards him, then be not so affectionate towards such a one, as neither regardeth love, nor knoweth what belongeth to Courtly civility. Peace peace (quod Venola)



either fill my ears with the sound of better wordes, or else hold thy tongue; for I tell thee it is more odious unto me then death, to hear thee so much disgrace the Prince of courtesie: for in him remains all honourable parts, whose presence is more dear to me then all the proffered services of the Knights of the world: and if thou canst comfort me no better then by these speeches, keep secret what thou knowest, and hereafter thou shalt know no more of my mind,

For I imparted the same to thee, thinking to have comfort by thy counsell, but thou contrarily addest care to my griefe. Sweet Mistresse (quoth *he*) I beseech you doe not conceive so hardly of my meaning, for I speake nothing, but with intent to procure your good; and rather will I tear my accursed tongue from forth of my head, then it shall utter a word to displease you.

Then (quoth *Venola*) once againe counsell me what to doe, for thou seest how far I am tyed in the bonds of Love to that worthy Knight, that without some hope of comfort, my cares will be exceeding, and more then my poore heart will be able to endure. This I think (quoth *Flavia*) is the best to be done, either do it your self, or let me give him knowledge of your love, and then shal you soon see whether he wil accept thereof or no. Do so then (quoth *Venola*) I commit all to thy discretion.

The knight of Fame being departed from *Venolaes* chamber, was as far from conceiving the cause of her passion, as he was from the knowledge of all things, and being walked into a Garden alone by himself, *Flavia* came to him, when he kindly greeted, asking her how her distresse did.

Sir Knight (quoth *he*) in the same case you left her, and yet rather worse, the cause of whose disquiet is procured by no disease, but by an extraordinary occasion, which none but one can remedy; which I would willingly give the party knowledge of, but that I know not whether he will take the same kindly, or no. Else were he much to blame (quoth *he*) for hard were his heart, that would not pity the distresse of so divine a creature,

content. Gentle sir (quoth *he*) thus it is. My Lady hath ever since the first sight of your person, been greatly tormented with Loves passions, which is the cause of her sicknesse, which reflecteth onely in your power to salve.

The knight of Fame hearing her speeches, was so suddenly astonisht, and therewith drawn into such cogitations, that he stood a good while like one in a trance, at last he said, the harder is her hap, and the worse my misfortune: for I am unworthy of such kindnesse, and unable to proove her recompence: which words being spoken, he turned himself from her, being drawn into such a deep meditation, that he regarded not, nor scarce heard some words *Flavia* spake to him afterwards, who thinking that he had of purpose contemned her, departed in a monstrous rage, and being alone by himself, cogitating upon these events, perceiving that her former kindnesse had proceeded from the same root of affection, greatly condemning himself of dulnesse, that could not before that conceive the same: wishing that he had departed with the Prince of *Bohemia*, for that his fancy could by no means be drawn to the least conceit of her Love: for his heart was wholly employed another way.

Then he began to call to remembrance the miserable condition he had tasted, by which means he was disappointed of *Parismus* company, revolving every consideration and circumstance of the same, and these events, was in the end fully persuaded, that it was purposely done by *Venola*, or some by her appointment, to stay him there: which thought was so fully grounded in his fancy, that he assuredly persuaded himself, that was the very truth, and none else: which drove him into many studies how to rid himself from thence. At last he determined to depart in secret, and unknown to any; And took this resolution. all that day he accompanied the rest of the knights, thereby to shun all occasions of hearing any further speech of *Venola*. When hearing how sorrowfully he received *Flaviaes* message, (which *Flavia* had told her) entred into such extreme complaints against her hard fortune: and shed such

such abundance of teares, that the *Isle* whereon the lay, was watered therewith: In which estate she continued, tormenting her self with extreame care.

Early the next morning, the Knight without the knowledge of any departed, clogged with such a Chaos of confused cares, as that he with the date of his miserable life (subject to so many crosses) were expired, intending never to returne thither, whom *Flavia* soon miss: the news whereof, she conveyed to the hearing of *Venola*, who took the same so heavily, that many daies she continued as one liker to entertaine death, then to survive: which drove her Parents into an extreme sadnesse, from whom she still concealed the cause of her griefe, In which estate for a while we will leave her, and the Knight of Fame onwards on his journey, and *Clarina* in great care for the absence of *Tellamor*, in the Forrest of *Arde*.

## CHAP. XX.

How the Knight of *Fame* arrived in *Natolia*, and by what meanes, he found the Lady he saw in the Vision, And of the Combat he fought with *Collimus*.



After the Knight of *Fame* was departed the King of *Lybiaes* Court, to avoid the love of *Venola*, he travailed many daies without any adventure, tryed with extreame care and desire to come to the knowledge of his Parents, and to find his devoted Lady, that when the Sun was at the highest, and by that meanes the season very hot, he alighted from his horse in a pleasant valley: where sitting under the shadow of a Chest-nut tree, he entred into this communication to himself.

What varieties of crosses do still persecute my Senses, that I can in no place be at quiet, but am still troubled with that which I would not, but cannot find the thing I desire: my whole day was beginning of my sorrowes: since which time, nothing but care and vexation hath befallne to me

my state: whereas to the contrary, I see other Knights enjoy their hearts content.

As concerning my parents, they are so hidden from my knowledge, as that my selfe travailling to find them, Peradventure, goe rather a great way from them, then to them, for the *Island of Rocks*, from whence I came, and where I was brought up, is very farre distant from this place: and I think if I would come to their knowledge, it were my best course to returne thither againe: Was I not overfoolish to refuse the marriage of *Phylana*, the Kings Daughter of *Thrace*, upon the vain confidence of a dream; upon whose certainty I can no way build, which might be procured by some sorcery of *Romulus*, to make me refuse a high Honour, onely to the intent he might install himselfe therein: and cause me to deat on the Beauty of a Lady which is no where to be found: for the whole World contains not such an essence of perfect Beauty, as that which I beheld. Then what shall I doe? Or which way were I best to shape my course: Shall I give over her Search, since dreams are so uncertaine? Yea, but this was more then a dream, it was a Vision: for I beheld the Goddess *Venus*, who enjoyned me this task, holding that sweet Lady in her hand, whose forme so perfectly is printed in my remembrance that I cannot forget the same, which assuredly is living and to be found; and therefore I will never desist untill I have found her, although I should spend the whole race of my life in that Quest: Which if it were ordained for my endlesse torment, then how should I avoid the same? Neither care I what paine I endure, if I may after all my travails but find her.

In this sort he spent much time, untill he fell in a deep sleep, and leaning his back to a Tree, he fell fast asleepe: whilst he was in this sweet sleep, (by happy fortune) *Angelica* the faire, that day had forsaken the Golden Tower, (which was not farre from the place where the Knight of *Fame* lay) to meet the King her Father, who with the Queen was coming from the City of *Ephesus*, where he kept his Court, to sojourn certaine daies for his disport in the Golden Tower,

Tower, that yielded all kind of delight. Angelica passing along this pleasant valley, gallantly attended by an untold train of gallant Ladies, and guard of Knights, espied the Knight of Fame, supposing that he had bin dead: to ease which doubt, she willed one of her Knights to see what he was. The Knight coming to him, awaked him, who suddenly starting up, began to lay hands on his sword; but casting his eye aside, he beheld Angelica's gallant train, and amongst the rest herself, whose countenance he presently knew to be the very same Lady he had seen in the Vision, whose beauty and sudden presence strook such an amazement to his senses, that he stood like one in a trance. Angelica seeing that he was alive and not dead as she supposed, past on her intended journey, not regarding him. He seeing her departed, thus said to the Knight, Courteous Knight, I pray let me know that gallant Ladies name. Sir, replied he, her name is Angelica, Daughter to the most mighty King of Natolia, who passing this way to meet the King and Queen, who are coming towards the Golden Tower, and seeing you lying under this Tree, sent me to see whether you were alive or dead: which said he departed.

The Knight of Fame rejoicing that he had seen his long expected Mistress, was suddenly rapt into a heavenly conceit of joy, that he thought himself as it were transformed into pleasure, such comfort revived his drooping heart from sad dumps, with her delectable sight, even then beginning to study how to come to her speech, to purchase occasion to give her knowledge of his best wits, finding out so many lets and impossibilities between him and his love, that he began to dispute thereof: at last, resolving upon nothing, but determining to do something, he mounted upon his Steed, and followed that way Angelica went, purposing to take a more eminent view of her perfections, being hopeless and destitute of any other comfort.

He having soon overtaken her Train, not yet resolved by reason of his Strangeness, what to do, or what means to use to speak to her, being encompassed by such a number of Knights:

Knights: At last he thus thought with himself: I that have refused the good will of Kings Daughters only to find out this beautifull Lady, and in her search have endured so many mischances, shall I now when I see her, be afraid to speak to her? Or may I not hereafter be disappointed of such fortunate occasion, as is now offered me? What though she be guarded by these Knights, being alone, it can no way breed offence to them that I speak to her. With this resolution he passed by the hindermost of her company, without speaking to them, who greatly marvelled what he should be: and coming right against Angelica, whom he easily knew from the rest by his former little view of her forms in the Vision, he kindly drew neare her. And with a submissive kind of Reverence first given, he said as followeth.

Most sacred Lady, pardon my boldness which I beseech you do not account rudeness: I have travailed many a mile to attain the height of this felicity, to behold your divine perfections, which maketh me contrary to that dutifull reverence my heart hath vowed, to intrude my self thus rudely into your presence, being void of other means to demonstrate my depth of devotion: therefore I humbly once again desire your pardon, that have offended against my will: desiring you withall to enter into this opinion of my meaning, that (notwithstanding what perswasion my rudeness may breed in your heavenly heart) it is both loyall, verinuous, and nonourable, and no way intending to presume above my desert, yet my life shall be alwayes employed in your service to deserve as well as the best.

Angelica hearing his speeches, sadly noting his countenance, and being of a most singular wit, admired his courage, that notwithstanding all her Guard, he durst so boldly presume into her presence, which caused her the better to regard both his speeches and proposition, made this reply, Sir Knight, if may be you are deceived, for you have not found that which you have so long sought, which maketh me account your speech utterlies, and your boldness folly: entring into no other conceit

conceit of your meaning, for be it either good or bad, I care not, for the one cannot harme me, nor the other pleasure me: but for your good will, I take that kindly, though in my fancy you make more then you will performe.

He made any (quoth he) vouchsafe but to employ me, and then shall you make tryall of my forwardnes, which shall be no tricke then I have promised: for my speech no bold approach into your presence, had not proceeded from want of respect of your worthines, but from a strict command long since enjoyned me to become your dutifull servant: therefore I humbly beseech you, judge favourably of my mooving, for I will rather hereafter consume my heart with silent care, then by my speech purchase your displeasure, if you command the contrary. He had not scarce ended those words, but shee let fall her Glove, which he seeing presently alighted and took it up, with reverence kissing the same, offered it her againe. Knight (quoth she) take it for your labour, where with she turned away from him, for that she espies her Father coming: which caused him being glad of that favour, to withdraw himself. One of Angelicaes Knights named Collimus, to whose principal custody the King had committed his daughter, above all the rest noted the Knight of Fames behaviour, and disdaining that a stranger should carry away the globe, which he esteemed a favour far beyond his desert, himself having been her servant a long time yet could never attain any such kindness, withall, supposing he was some Knight Angelica knew, presently hastened after him, trusting too much to his own valour, and bluntly had him render back the Princes globe. Sir (quoth he) the Princes gave it me, & for her sake I will keep the same. Wherewith Collimus without any more words, retired back to encounter him: and he did the like, and remembryng it was the best deed of Chivalry he could performe in his Ladys presence, thought with himselfe, that if he did not sit fast, he would quail his courage: presently they met each other, the one with bravery, the other with force, but Collimus measured his length on the ground. By this time the King and Queen had met Angelica, and all greetings overpast, their Trains met, which almost filled that pleasant valley;

valley in company of Maximus and Camillus, son to the King of Slavonia attended by a number of gallant knights, who hearing of the exceeding beauty of Angelica, was lately come into the Country as a suter, to whom Maximus said (beholding the brave course between the knights,) what knight is yonder, that hath overthrowen his adversary with such agility? A comely knight he is (quoth Camillus) but it seemes he is a stranger with that another knight of Angelicaes attendants upon the same quartrell, encountered the knight of Fame, who tasted of his valour, as his predecessor Collimus had done: after him another, which when Maximus beheld, he called a Gentleman to him, willing him to request the strange knight to come and speak with him, which fell out well for the knight of Fames quiet, for had not the king been present, the knights of Angelicaes guard had taken such a secret indignation against him, that they by violence would have sought his death. The messenger Maximus sent, told the knight of Fame, that the king did request to speak with him. Sir (quoth he) I am ready at his command: to whom Maximus said, as followeth.

Sir knight, you are it seemeth to me a stranger in this place, but notwithstanding somewhat bold with my knights, both whose quartrell against you and your cause of arrivall I desire to know. Most mighty king (quoth he) I am a stranger in this place, or in any else, in my travell meeting with this gallant Troop, to any of whom I have as yet given no cause of offence, which should make them trouble me,

Sir (quoth Maximus) they have reapt shame for their discontent: but I pray let us without offence know your name, and of whence you are: neither fear to unarm your selfe: for upon my promise, you shall have no wrong offered you: which said, the knight of Fame pulled off his helmet, making this answer. My name most noble King, I am called the knight of Fame, my birth to my selfe unknown, by no ill intent drawne into this Country, but onely to find out my Parents, which are likewise unknowne: my self subject to miserie, by the want of knowledge of my self. Marcellus Sonne to Maximus,

a Knight of exceeding courteous and honourable parts, bearing his Speeches, humbling himself upon his knee before his Father, said: I humbly crave your Majesties favour, to entertain this Knight honourably, so that I have some knowledge of him and of his valour, which I will declare to your Highness hereafter.

Maximus hearing his Sonnes Speeches, said: Rise up Marcellus, for thy sake, and for his own too, he shall be welcome whom do thou use according as thou shalt seem good, and be agreeable to his honourable deserts. The knight of Fame hearing his Speeches, most humbly thanked him: and Marcellus presently embracing him, shewed him many tokens of hearty good will.

Angelica all this while noted every circumstance of this Knights arrival, as first, how she found him asleep: and next, of his Speeches to her: then, how valiantly he had overthrown three knights: then her Mothers Speeches: and lastly, his gallant youth and comely person; which altogether wrought such a kind of admiration in her, that she began with a curious eye to mark all his actions: and to affect his company, more then she had done any mans: oftentimes casting a look upon him, she perceived his eye was still upon her: which made a riddle unto her beautiful cheekes. In which time: the king intreated him to stay some time with him, if his important business did not withdraw him: which offer he willingly and kindly accepted: all which fell out according to his own hearts content.

## CHAP. XVI.

How the Knight of *Fame* was entertained at the Golden Tower, and what speeches past between *Anna* and *Angelica*.



As after many Speeches past the King, Camillus, the Queen, Angelica, and all the rest, departed towards the Golden Tower, and by the way Marcellus began to declare in hearing of them all, what he had heard of the Knight of Fame, of his valiant exploits in Thrace, and afterwards how in the Forrest of Arde, he slew the Giant Brandamor, which he uttered in such ample manner, and with such commendation, that it made them all admire his noble gifts: especially Angelica above all the rest, noted every circumstance thereof, with such regard, that she seemed to take great delight therein. The Knight of Fame hearing thereof, entertaining his Mistress with such pleasure, and admiring her Beauty with such surfeiting delight: that he rode like one in a Trance, having all his senses bent upon her.

By this time they were come into the Golden Tower, where was exceeding preparation made for the King, who speaking to Camillus, and the Knight of Fame, told them they were most heartily welcome thither. Likewise the Queene welcomed them with great kindness, especially Marcellus care for the Knight of Fames entertainment was very great, who caused him to be lodged in a most stately lodging, where every thing was readily prepared for him in the best manner, Everyone being departed to their severall lodgings, the Knight of Fame meditating on his good Fortune, and the kind entertainment he found in that strange place, weeping on the one side how late he was plunged in care, and how suddenly he was possessed with pleasure: how from misery he was advanced to the highest degree of his felicity: how he was lately in dispaire of finding his devoted Lady, and how prosperously



ronally he had now met with her, and had in some part manifested his affection: how the occasion of his quarrell for his Ladies globe, was the cause of his kind entertainment: how fortunately in that strange place his deeds were extolled; and how kindly Marcellus used him, whose acquaintance and friendship might be a meanes both of his stay in that place, and also of obtaining Angelicaes love. When again, considering how strange it was, that he should stay in that very place where his Lady should see him: and how luckily he had left the Court of the King of Lybia, and thereby he was rid from Venolaces rash love, which might have both endangered his honour and person; that with the remembrance of all these happy concurrences his mind was exceedingly contented, and he seemed to have attained more happy successe then he would have wished: that in the same path of sweet delight, accompanied with quiet sleep, he spent that night. Angelica was likewise no whit inferior, to him in contrariety of passions, but having likewise spent the day in company of her mother, when the time of rest drew nigh, she soon gave from out of all company which she thought troublesome, being much disquietted in her thoughts, feeling a kind of alteration to her former liberty of mind, being desirous to be alone, she got to her Chamber, where was none but her Damezell Anna, that was her Bedfellow, to whom she said, I pray thee good Anna leave me alone for a while for my thoughts are possesed with such disquiet, that I desire by solitarinesse to ease my passionate heart.

Anna hearing her speeches marvailling, what might be the cause thereof, and being in all respect dutifull, departed. She was no sooner gone, but Angelica sitting down upon the rushes leaning her head upon the Beds-side, began to stumpe whence the occasion of that suddain alteration she felt in her self should proceed: sometimes deeming this, and then that, but still she could not tell certainly what to judge thereof: that her mind was drawn to an extreame torment, which so opprest her senses, that presently she called Honna againe: who marvailling at her strange behaviour, and grieved at her

her sadnesse, kneeling down by her uttered these speeches.

My dear Mistresse, I beseech you conceal not from me the occasion of your disquiet, to whose secrecy you need not fear to commit the same, for I hope you are sufficiently perswaded of my truth, that do esteeme my duty to you more dear then my life, which I would most willingly spend for your sake: or if you will vouchsafe to employ me any way, or in what sort soever, so it please you to command, I will be most willing to use my uttermost endeavours, as faithfully as ever did my servant, to purchase your content.

Are me wretched creature (quoth Angelica) it is not mistrust of thy secrecy, nor doubt of thy ayd, or ought else that I misdoubt in this: for if I should shew it thee, I cannot, for this passion is so newly begun, that I cannot rightly conjecture what the cause thereof should be, or why my thoughts should be thus suddainly disquieted: and such assured confidence do I return in thy fidelity, that I should conceale no part of my thoughts from thee.

Anna hearing her Mistresses speeches, presently began to suspect that she had entertained some good conceit of some of the knights that were arrived that day, whom she thought to be the young Prince Camillus: which caused her make this answer,

Dear Mistresse (quoth she) I beleeeve the approach of some of the gallant knights that came with the king, is the cause of your alteration. Why (quoth Angelica) dost thou think their approach should disquiet me? Marry (quoth Anna) because many Ladies have been suddainly overtaken with love: wherewith Angelica blusht, saying. Dost thou think my affection so light, to look on every one I see.

Pardon me dear Madam (quoth she) I do not thinke so, well (quod Angelica) suppose thou hast jumpt upon the right, which of these knights dost thou suppose it is? Will you pardon me said Anna, if I give my opinion? I will said she. I thinke (quoth Anna) it is the brave Prince Camillus.

Camillus

Camillus (quoth she) It is rather the stranger. Indeed (quoth Anna) that strange knight farre surmounteth all the knights that ever I beheld, for courtesie, comeliness, and prowess. I am sure said Angelica (breathing forth a sad sigh) thou speakest this rather to flatter me, then according to that thou thinkest: for otherwise why didst thou speak of Camillus. Faith spiketh (quoth she) I named Camillus, not for any thing I see in him comparable to that strange knight, but for that I would thereby know your mind: which now that I understand, if you would follow my counsell, you should not only like him, but also love him: for there is no doubt but the cause of his coming hither, was onely for your sake, who in my rash opinion, will prove both constant and loyal: for his very countenance becometh the united essence of true Nobility and Vertue, to be placed in him.

O Anna (quoth she) thou woundest me to the heart: before I had but a suspicion of love, but by thy speeches begin to be enthralled therein. Do not, I pray thee, seek to augment that, which is impossible to come to perfection: which if I should entertain (as I shall I fear me against my will), thou knowest, how many impossibilities do threaten my endless torment thereby: therefore I pray thee do not once name him to me again, for if thou doest, I shall be more enthralled to that name then to all the humble fates of the most noble Knight in the World.

Didst thou not heare my Brother *Marcellus* report, how prodigally he gave away the Kings daughter of *Thrace*? and what paines he took to redeem *Venola* that beautifull lady, from *Brandamors* Castle.

I know thou didst but likewise I know thou didst not hear what he said to me, to refell these doubts, that he was long since enioyned to my service, and how that was the thing he had long sought to attain.

Didst thou not see how I found him asleep, and yet notwithstanding all the knights that guarded me, how resolutely (yet

with humilicy) he approached my presence. When he told me that no want of regard had bred that rudeness, but fear of mistaking that fit occasion, considering how strictly I am kept and pyed into by my Fathers decree.

Didst thou see how bravely and valiantly he overthrew three stout knights together that would have taken my glove from him? Dcest thou not see how dearly my brother *Marcellus* loved him, and all in generall are well affected towards him? These I think are occasions sufficient to refell all suspect of his good intent and meaning.

Quoth Anna, truly most gracious Madam, I think verily (all things considered) he hath nor his equal, neither for valour nor for vertue, you may do as you please, whom I will not so much as once speak of hereafter, since I shall offend you thereby.

What I pray thee speake of him? (quoth Angelica) for nothing can please me better, though I fear me nothing will do me more harm And well mayest thou think me over-fond, to be so soon intangled in the bonds of Love, with a stranger, that I neither know of whence or what he is: of whom we have said enough at this time: therefore I pray let us deferre any further commendation of him, until we have made better proofe of his worthynesse, which said they betook themselves to their rest.

Early the next morning the knight of Fame was up, to whom *Marcellus* was soon gotten, who took no other delight but onely in his company, and him to kindly and honourably, that the knight of Fame marvailes thereat, wondering whence such kindnesse should grow: that he began to seek his company: and being come into the kings presence, who was accompanied by Camillus, they spent the forenoon in severall discourses: likewise Angelica spent the time amongst certain ladies of great account, in such sort as agreed best with their fancy.

Winter time being come, a most costly and sumptuous Feast

Feast whereupon Maximus invited all his nobles, and Camillus and the Knight of Fame, amongst the rest, as his chiefest where they were most honourably entertained, sumptuously feasted and kindly welcomed.

Camillus seeing that the Queene and Angelica were wanting, was suddenly fallen into a sad damp. because the Lady of his delight was absent: which the King noted more specially then all the rest, who supposing that Camillus came as a Suiter to his Daughter: had of purpose given order to the Queen, that she should banquet the Ladies by themselves: which was so done, that neither Camillus nor none else perceived his distaste therein, which made Camillus extremely angry with himself that he had not the day before (when he enjoyed both her sight and full liberty of speech) in some measure to give her knowledge of his love.

The Knight of Fame on the contrary did govern himselfe with more moderation: for he having attained such good success as his heart did wish, was therewith for the present contented: hoping that fortune, that had been so favourable to him would not suddenly alter her countenance, but still continue her aid to his furtherance: whom Maximus likewise noted, having suspicion that he likewise came for Angelicaes love: though he dissembled the contrary of which he could perceive no likely hood by his merry countenance, which caused him only to suspect Camillus, and not him.

The feast being ended with great Royalty, every one after some Courteously pastime past, betook themselves to what exercise they liked best. Camillus still accompanied the King viewing (for grief of Angelicaes absence) such a kind of behaviour, as though his senses were bewitched with carelesse passions, which he noted diligently, thereby breeding in his mind an assurance of his suspicion. The knight of Fame having drawn himself into the Garden, and seeking the solitary place he could find, began to recall the sweet remembrance of Angelicaes Beantie into his mind, whereunto he was more firmly

firmly enthralled then he was before he had seen her, though even then his Love was firm, having but seen her in a Vision: that he was not only contented with that favour she had already bestowed him, but also devised and studied how to become more gracious in her sight, and attain some better hope of her love, which as yet he had not likelihood to attain: whilst he was in the depth of these cogitations, Marcellus missing him and seeing him before enter into the Garden, never left untill he had found him out, to whom he said; Sir Knight, I am somewhat bold to interrupt your quiet Meditations, by my approach, being desirous of your company: therefore, if I may without intrusion accompany you, I will stay, otherwise, I would be loath to breed your disquiet.

Most noble *Marcellus* (quoth the Knight of Fame) I am not troubled with your presence, but even thinke my self most happy to enjoy the same, as far unworthy such kindnesse, being a stranger here, and thinke my self so highly honoured by your presence, that I shal for ever rest bound unto you for the same, thinking my self more happy thereby, then I could have wished, being before subject to all evil fortune, yet now exceedingly fortunate by your kindnesse and friendship.

I could wish it were in my power (quoth *Marcellus*) to deserve so well of you, being more willing then able to pleasure you; for the report of your honourable gifts, hath made me long since desirous of your acquaintance, that if you please to stay with me in my Fathers Court, I will endeavour to shew my good will towards you; and if you will accept of my plaine meaning, without any further tryall, I will hereafter prove your faithfull friend. Most courteous Knight (quoth he) I can yield no other recompence, but most hearty thanks for your great kindnesse, which hath extended it selfe farre beyond my desert, with so willing a heart accepting your kind proffers, that before I prove disloyall, I will tear my heart from out my breast. Then (quoth *Marcellus*) let us conclude this suddaine consent of good will, which for my part, shall never while life doth last be dissolved.

Desiring you from henceforthwards, to make such account of me, that wherein soever I may in any degree please you, I will as assuredly do my best, as in my power consists. With that they embraced each other, betwixt whom such good will began to grow, as was ever after both constant and indissoluble.

## CHAP. XVII.

How *Angelica* was imprisoned, and how *Maximus* rebuked his Sonne, for suffering the Knight of FAME to speake to *ANGELICA*.



*Marcellus* having awhile walked with him in the Garden, desired him to accompany him into the Court to visit the Ladies, who (quoth he) are this day feasting by themselves. The knight of Fame gladd thereof, willingly gave his consent, being the only thing that contented his mind: and being come into the presence where the Queen was, and having done his Reuerence, shee kindly welcommed the Knight of Fame, but he told *Marcellus*, that his coming was to see the young Ladies: whereat *Marcellus* smiling, departed to a Gallery where were a multitude of sweet Beauties, exercising themselves at severall pastimes. Some at Chess, some at Cards and some in pleasant communication, whom *Marcellus* kindly embraced, but the Knight of Fame, by reason he was a stranger, was not so bold, but having his mind dedicated to serve no Saint but *Angelica*, looked for her, whom he espied at the further end of the Gallery in a heavy dump, leaning on her elbow: who hearing *Marcellus* voyce, looked back, and cast her eye first on the Knight of Fame, on whom she fastned a steadfast eye a good space: But remembering her self, with an exceeding blush she withdrew the same, because she saw his eye settled on her.

Mar-

*Marcellus* by this time was come to *Angelica* and perceiving her blushing countenance, caused him to note how melancholly she was alone, saying to her: How now Sister? What solitary study is that, which hath so withdrawn you from your pleasant company? to my mind (quoth she) is better exercised by being sometimes alone, then in their company: But since your presence hath broken my meditation, I will be content to forsake the same to enjoy your good company, which me thinks is very rare.

I thank you good Sister (quoth he) assuring you, that I take it wondrous kindly, that you will think so well of me: Which hereafter you shall at your command enjoy: withall, I desire you for my sake to bid this Knight welcome, whom I esteem as dearly as my self. With that *Angelica* turned toward him, and he with humble reverence kissed her hand, to whom *Angelica* said: Sir, by my brothers command I bid you welcome. The Knight of Fame most humbly thanked her being so exceedingly ravished in his mind with joy, that no joy might be compared to that he endured.

*Angelica* on the other side, was every way affected with as sweet content, by that opportunity to take a more precise view of his comeliness, entertaining the same with such interesting delight, that she not onely augmented the heat of her former affections, but also was now more fettered in the irremediable bonds of Love.

*Marcellus* and she continued some time in conference together, in which time *Angelica* cast many sweet looks towards the Knight of Fame, which he well perceived, by reason his eye was never off her, which she likewise noted, striving not to shew the like kindness again, but not withdrawing, contrary to her purpose, her heart in much affection constrained her to behold him, which made her stand so long and continue single, oftentimes breaking off their speeches with such passionate smiles, and sometimes breathing a silent sigh, which *Marcellus* noted, but yet seemed not to marke. In the meane time came the Queen, who calling *Marcellus* unto her, en-

ted into communication with him, which when Angelica beheld, her heart began to throb and pant with a kind of delight: the Knight of Fame likewise was tormented with diversity of passion, being desirous to speak to Angelica, yet not daring to attempt such boldness in presence of the Queen, having before heard of Maximus's death. Whilst he was in this cogitation, Anna seeing her mistress alone, and the Knight the so dearly loved lady by her, came and used some speeches to her on him, which he well noted, at last the Queen departed again, and Marcellus went to sport amongst the rest of the Ladies, having before noted his sister's passions, which he was in some suspicion, was by reason of the Knight of Fames being there.

The Knight of Fame seeing the Queen departed, and Marcellus amongst the Ladies, not rashly attempting such boldness, but with a submissive and comely behaviour, drew towards Angelica (being surprised with such a fear to offend) and care what to say, that his heart shook therewith, and humbly kissing her hand, with trembling fear will help the same in his palm and said: My divine Lady pardon my presumption that over boldly and contrary to my desert, presume to trouble your sacred eares with my speeches: which if I did suppose would be offensive, I would bury them all in the closet of my troubled heart from whence they proceeded, but if I may be so gracious in your eyes, as to gaine the sweet opportunity, by your favourable licence, as to declare the depth of my devotion, and how and in what sort, and how long since I was enjoined to become your devoted servant, I shall rest so much more intalled to your vertues, as my poor heart shall for ever be unable to give sufficient thanks for which I dare not presume to do, without your favourable consent: which I desire you to grant. Angelica all this while stood as one transformed into bashfulness, being possessed with delight, yet unwilling to make up words thereof, which caused an exceeding blush to beautifie her cheeks, which added some splendour to perfect beauty it self, which at all times appeared most lively in her sweet countenance: at last withdrawing her hand which now began

began to sweat with his strickt embrace, how he was unwilling to let go, yet fearful to hold without her consent, to whom she made this answer: Sir, where no harm is meant, there needs no such entreaties for pardon, for she actually offends I see none, but if any be intended, it is more then I know' and therefore without my power to forgive: neither doth your speech much please nor offend mee, but if spoken with good meaning, I cannot blame, nor will deny to hear another time; withall, wishing you not think me tractable to every persuasion, but have yielded you that favour, never yet had any at my hands: which peradventure, imboldeneth you to use your accustomed manner of flatteries, whereunto most men are addicted, wherein you shall do greatly amisse: for though I condescend to hear you, yet do not think my mind easily drawn to believe every protestation.

Most vertuous Lady (quoth he) neither doe my words proceed of custome, but my speeches proceed from the depth of my true and humble heart: that hath vowed never to start from the constant verity which hath long nursed many bitter torments, proceeded by desire to find your vertuous self: which hath been the cause of my long travaile. When I most humbly beseech you to deem of me: as one that can breath no longer then he is in your favour. For sooner shall all things be dissolved, then I fall in duty to your service and constancy to continue devoted to your command: which, if I may be in any hope to attain, though it be with the extreamest hazard that ever Knight endured I shall account my selfe the happiest man living. Wherefore, I beseech you let no suspected conceit of my state withhold your vertues from pitying me: For without the fruition of your sweet favour, it is impossible for me to live. Beseeching your Excellency likewise not to suppose my words to proceed from fained affection, but from a heart that hath vowed to be perpetually constant, and will never start from truth, whatsoever miseries or crosses may happen to try my constancy.

Angelica hearing his speeches, withall, noting with what motions



motions and alterations, his heart was oppressed, by the soft change of his countenance, and withall, being her self every way as much enthralled to love as himself, hoping that his heart if it be touched true love, would not be a little of her courtship (for the noblest minds) are soonest taken to pity, gave him this kind reply.

Sir Knight, your earnest speeches hath so much prevailed with me, that gladly I should know you that kindness reflect in me, but that I am faine to be deceived. Therefore if hereafter I see you constant, make no doubt, but I will be as kind as you can wish, and yeeld unto you what recompence I can in requitall of your good will, withall wishing you to think that my heart hath yeilded you that favor, which yet never any had from me.

Angelica had not ended these words but in comes Maximus, putting with veneration, to whom Collinus had declared, that the Knight of Fame was some disguised counterfeit, that came to seek Angelicas love (whereon his life depended) and committing to him, leaving him in care with his daughter, said, Knight (quoth he) what maketh thee thus bold, to far to presume above thy desert to intrude thy selfe into my daughters company, which thou knowest to contrarie to my decree.

Then taking Angelica by the arm, he thrust her from him, commanding (Collinus who was ready at hand) to commit her to safe custody, and upon pain of death not to suffer any, not so much as his son Marcellus to come to her speech: by whose means Collinus had told him the Knight of Fame was brought into her company.

Collinus having this charge, which was his own seeking, immediately conveyed Angelica from their presence: who notwithstanding her Fathers presence and displeasure, turned back and gave the Knight of Fame a kind look at her departure: which he well noted, and therewith conceived more joy, then heooke griefe at Maximus unkindnesse.

By this time Marcellus was come to his Father, who cast such a displeasing countenance upon him as that he well perceived he was some way incensed against him: wherewith the King in a great rage departed, not speaking a word to him. After he was gone, Marcellus coming to the Knight of Fame, (whose heart was bent with grief) and noting his sad countenance, departed with him down into a Garden: where being come, Marcellus said as followeth: Dear friend (quoth he) for by any other name I will never call you, be not disquieted with my Fathers displeasure, who giveth too much credit to untrue reports, and that causeth him both to be offended with any that speaketh to my sister, and also suspicious of all that come into his own company, whereby he dishonoureth his own name, liveth a troublesome life, and also keepeth her as it were in prison, which I am sure can breed no little care in her breast, whose hard hap I much pity, and would any way ease, if it lay in my power.

Most honorable Knight (quoth he) I am most heartily sorroy, that my over-boldnesse hath caused your Fathers displeasure, and that divine Ladies disquiet, which is more grievous unto me then death, which it was my accursed misfortune to procure, being drawn to that presumption by attractive beauty: wishing that I had some way ended this my accursed life, before my approach in this place, that thereby I might not have been so unfortunate, to be the cause of her care, and your disquiet, for that I see the King is offended with you. As for that take no care (quoth Marcellus) nor be so much grieved for my sister, for these troubles will soon be calmed: which to effect let me alone. In the mean time (whatsoever inward thoughts you conceive, yet smother your discontent) and shew yourself cheerfull, as heretofore you have beene; for I perceive that some of envy hath incensed my Father, the truth whereof I will find out. Marcellus having ended these speeches, left the Knight of Fame walking in the Garden, and presently without any signe or shew of discontent, went into the presence, where hee found the King in company of Camillus,

according to his wonted manner, doing his reverence, and taking his usuall place. The King marvailling how he durst so boldly presume into his presence, without reconcilment, thought that either want of duty had procured the same: or else he did not perceiue he was displeased with him: to ease himself of which doubt, he said as followeth.

Marcellus I had thought your care would have been greater to regard my good then any mans else, considering you know the depth of my secrets, as concerning Angelica, on whose Beauty my life doth depend, and not so negligently and disobediently, not onely to suffer that strange Knight to proffer love to her, but also be a meanes to bring him into her sight, and help him to her speech, wherein you have shewn your self undutifull, which maketh me rather to suspect you as one ready to seek my life, then careful to preserve the same.

My Lord and Father (replied Marcellus) I trust your Majesty do conceive no such thought of me: which have in no degree deserved the same; much lesse in thought ever disagreed in the least poynt of duty to your decree: besides my Lord, I do assuredly beleieve, you are informed of the strange Knights meaning: whose intent is honourable, and from the least thought of love to my Sister, but there are some in credit with your Highnesse, who disquiet you too much with their flatteries, and will rejoyce rather to see all things fall out according to their reports, then be any way sorry to see the same; whose speeches and false informations I trust shall not alter your good opinion of my loyalty: Whose constant Love, Duty, and Obedience, shall continue firm, when their treacheries shall be revealed, and they found traytors: therefore I beseech your Highnesse both alter your conceived displeasure against me and the Knight of Fame, of whom so honourable reports hath been spread in more places: For it wil be accounted an act of great discourtesie to use him unkindly.

Maximus hearing his Sonnes speeches in accusation of them he most favoured, and in defence of the Knight of Fame, against whom he was mortally incensed, was turned into such choller

choller that he gave him this rebuke. Darest thou both envyously accuse my friends, and disloyally plead for my enemy? Henceforth presume no more into my sight, without my licence for I will rather esteeme thee as a private enemy, then as my naturall Son. Which when he had said, turning as he departed, marvailling who it should be that had incensed the King against him, being so inwardly grieved in his mind, that he thought to leave no meanes unassayed to learn the truth thereof.

Angelica before said being conveyed by Collimus to safe custody began to conceive such sorrow for her Fathers displeasure taken against the Knight of Fame, unto whom she began to be an exceeding lover: Such effect had his perswasive speeches wrought in her gentle hart, that she entred into these exceeding sorrowes, embracing diversly, what disquiet that discontent might breed, by reason of her Fathers jealous suspect already begun: and how the Knight of Fame might be abused in that strange place, having no friend to take his part: which thought strook a saddaine penitence to his heart. Contrarily she thought that would be a meanes to try his loyalty, which somewhat would have eased her heart, so that no other danger would have ensued thereon. At last having no other meanes of comfort (no friend to impart her mind unto) she called Anna unto her, and wisht her to learn how the Knight of Fame had overpast her Fathers displeasure: but so secretly, that none might perceiue the same: who presently went about the businesse Angelica had enjoyned her. Thus will we leave them all in divers cogitations,

## C H A P. XVIII.

How the King of *Lybia* hearing that the Knight of *Fame* was in *Natolia*, by *Flaviaes* false accusation, sent messengers to *Maximus*, to intreat him to put him to death. And how *Maximus* threw him into the Lyons den.



After that the Knight of *Fame* was departed from *Lybia*, and *Venola* had knowledge thereof by *Flavia*, she continued many dayes in great sorrow, but afterwards by tract of time calming her grief but no whit her affection, by *Flaviaes* persuasions, who was privy to all her actions: turned her from good will that was grounded upon vertue, to Lust and mad desire, that feeling she could not by fair meanes winne him to love her, she thought to leave no meanes unassayed, either by force to compell him thereto or else in some measure to be revenged on him for his discourtesie.

The mind being alwayes ready by every persuasion, to yeeld to work any meanes to work desired content: even so casting about many devices with *Flavia*, one day (finding fit opportunity when the King was in his dumps for *Venolaes* sicknesse, came unto him and told him, that the cause of his Daughters sicknesse was procured by an exceeding fright she had taken by the discourteous usage of the Knight of *Fame*, who for that cause was lately fled from the Court, which untill that day she had conteated from her, neither should she ever recover her self untill she were in some hope to be revenged on him.

The king willed her to declare the same unto him. *Flavia* then began as followeth. My Lord, this knight presuming often into my Mistresse presence, by reason of the kindnesse she shewed him, for working her release in *Brandamors* Castle, (which he well deserved) began oftentimes to make Love to her, whom she answered in good sort, being unwilling to make chaffe of any, but by your appointment: but in the end, his

sute,

sute grew to that importancie, that he would have no denial. Wherein coming into her Chamber, chusing his fittest opportunity, when my Mistresse was in her Bed, and surprizing her unawares, offering her exceeding shame and bittany, but being by her striving and outcry disappointed of his full intent, he presently fled away.

The King hearing *Flaviaes* speeches, was exceedingly enraged with fury, commanding his knights to post every way to learn where he made his abode. This newes being spread, at last came to a knight of *Natolia*, who by occasion was then in the *Lybian* Court, who presently came to the king, and told him that he needed not to make enquiry for the knight of *Fame* for that he was at the *Golden Tower*. The king hearing that newes, was exceedingly glad thereof, commanding his knights to stay their journey, writing a Letter to *Maximus*, to this effect.

**M**ost mighty King, I salute you, requesting you to worke revenge in my behalf upon a Traytor, who now remaineth with you, who hath dishonoured my Daughter: he is called the Knight of *FAME*, assuming that name to colour his wicked practises, who no doubt will soon devise some mischief against your person: let him not escape your hands, but rather send him to me, that I may revenge that monstrous injury he hath done me, by his life, which onely shall satisfie me. Thus remembering my love to you, and desiring your satisfaction herein, I cease.

Your Brother of *Lybia*.

Having written this Letter and sealed it with his Agnet, he presently sent the same by certaine of his knights to the *Golden Tower*, who effectually dispatched their journey, as he had given them charge, and arriving at the *Golden Tower*, delivered the Letter to *Maximus*, who caused him to be apprehended, and without any other judgment, caused him presently to be cast into a Den of Lyons to be devoured.

The

The knight of Fame, was no sooner put into the den, but the Lyons made an exceeding roaring, that those without assured, by judged him devoured, and himself expected nothing but that terrible and fearful death: but the Lyons who by nature, will not harm those of Royall blood, spared his life, and not so much as offered to touch him, but were rather terrified with his presence. He being glad of this happy escape, began to assure himself, that he was sprung of kingly race, which greatly comforted his heart, and added a perswasive hope to comfort him withall, that by that occasion he should attain to Angelicaes love, if he could work meanes for his releasement out of the place: most of all he wondered that Maximus had offered him that outrage, in these such like cogitations; he spent the rest of the day.

Marcellus seeing the knight whom he so dearly loved destroyed, without judgement, equity or cause, was so inwardly enraged that he was oftentimes in mind to work himself injury, and seek means of revenge if he knew who had been the cause thereof: and not knowing what to do, nor in whose company to spend his time, he presently thought to go to Angelica, whom he thought bare some good will to the knight of Fame, with her to bemoan his untimely death; but coming to the place where she was, he would have entered therein, but Collinus according to Maximus command denied, and that the more obstinately, for that he knew none favoured the knight of Fame so much as he, whom he mortally hated.

Marcellus being more sufficiently enraged, was now so much more vexed, that he drew his dagger, and with a violent blow stabbed the same to Collinus heart: and withall going to Angelica, he found her very sad, little thinking of these mischances who seeing him in that rage, which she soon perceived by his behaviour she came unto him, having seated himself down in a chaire, and desired to know the cause of his wrath.

O Sister (quoth he) this place is the harbour of cruelty, tyranny, and dishonour, which in times past, hath bene famous, and a receipt of honour, but shortly will bee hated and

gunned as odious and ominous, and all procured by the foolish obtaining of a wicked Harlot, that hath filled my Fathers head with such fancies, that he forgetteth himself, his honour, and kingly behaviour, and giveth credit to none but flatteries, and parasites, imprisoning his children, murdering his friends, and seeking the subversion of hono<sup>r</sup> and honourable knights.

Oh Angelica, what should I say, or to whom should I complain. He hath slain vertue, he hath destroyed honour, he hath murdered my dear friend this kind courteous Knight, he hath cast the unknown (most honorable though unknown) Knight of Fame, into the Lyons Den, without judgement, justice, or right. Angelica hearing his words, was ready to sound with grief; but that fear to discover her love withheld her: but being not able to refrain from teares, she withdrew her self aside to conceal the same, which Marcellus espying caught her in his armes, and sayd.

Say, dear Sister, do not conceal your grief, for his death, from me that love him so much the better: and if you ever conceived any good liking of him, I shall honour you for the same: for he was worthy to be beloved of the best Lady in the world: for in him shined all parts and points of true knighthood, and honour. I cannot (quoth Angelica) deny but that I liked and loved him too: neither shall I ever do otherwise whilst I live, though he knew not so much for whose death my heart shall never harbour quiet, nor never shall thought of other love sink in my breast: for him had I vowed to love, and that vow will I keep inviolable while life doth last.

Oh Angellina (quoth Marcellus) had I known you had loved him so well, I would have dyed with him, but I would have saved his life, which was so suddainly acted and so unexpected that before I could call my senses from amazement, he was past my reach. What cause had my father think you to seek his destruction, but because he saw him in speech with you. Aye me (quoth Angelica) was I the cause of his death, I will I shan go to him: with that such grief oppressed her heart, that she fell down in his armes.

Marcel.

Marcellus called to her maids, who presently came thronging about her, marvelling at her sudden sickness, and especially Anna, who was privy to her thoughts, and hearing Marcellus speeches made great lamentation. This news was soon come to the Queens hearing, who presently came running to the place and having by her labour recovered her, entered into these speeches: Why now now Angelica what meanest thou to do thy self this wrong? What mischance or sudden passion hath caused this disquiet? Then turning to Marcellus, or can you tell Marcellus (quoth she) for you were by? I know not (quoth he) but I am sure we have all cause of little joy, when we that are the Kings children, shall be imprisoned upon the flattering report of every dissembling Sycophant. Why (quoth she) who hath abused you? What did Collimus (quoth he) and him have I rewarded, Besides my Lord and Father hath destroyed that honourable strange knight, because I loved him, who never deserved the least cause of such cruelty, but was alwayes honourably esteemed in every Kings Court, until it was his unfortunate hap to arrive in this place, to end his life by Tyranny, not by Justice.

Marcellus scandalize not your Fathers honour, which may bring you in danger for he hath done nothing but right, and with good consideration, for behold that Letter, and thou shalt soon see what counterfeit that knight of Fame was.

Marcellus having read this Letter, was at the first suddenly amazed therat but yet notwithstanding, said, Upon my life this accusation is most false and untrue. Angelica taking the Letter, and reading the same, was exceedingly astonished therat to whom Marcellus said, Angelica believe it not for it or do you shall too much wrong that honourable knight that is too much abused already, who if he were living would soon repulse these accusations but he good knight is now dead, and past recalling, whose death will bring more dishonour to the Natolians, then ever will be recovered. Why (quoth the Queen) what maketh thee Marcellus thus inconsiderate, by taking a Strangers part, to endanger thy own life, which knowest

knowest the Kings humour: Lobs (quoth he) to that stranger maketh me bewaile his untimely death, whom I would that I had excused.

The Queen seeing Angelica somewhat well recovered, departed unto Maximus, who by that time had knowledge of Collimus death, and was meditating how to chastise Marcellus for that presumption: but the Queen upon her knees intreated him to pardon him, alledging that Collimus had greatly abused him, that told much ado as the King was pacified.

Marcellus, having somewhat comforted Angelica, in a heavy and sad estate departed to his Chamber, and left her with her Damozell Anna, rather ready to peele up the scab, then otherwise likely to survive and night being come, she refused meat, went to her bed, not to sleep, but to bewaile the Knight of Fames untimely death.

The knight of Fame all this time remained in the Lyons Den, carefully devising which way to get out of that place, trying his senses, but finding no meanes of release. One while accusing his hard fortune, and then Maximus for his cruelty. Sometimes fearing to be smothered in this place: and then comforting himselfe, with persuasions of impossible deliveries. Now despairing to be utterly exempt from the sweet sight of Angelica, whose absence, and restraint of liberty, (procured as he thought by his boldnes) pinched his hart with extreme fear.

In this sort he continued so long until he was ready to be starved, and constrained to eat such unwholesome food, that was daily cast to the Lyons. Angelica likewise, no whit mitigated her grief but rather augmented the same: being much comforted by Marcellus, whose mind was not yet satisfied with sufficient consideration of these mischances, both he and Angelica continued as it were in a further hope in their fancies, of the knight of Fames safety: though when they began to comfort themselves with any persuasions, they were quite past hope. Maximus likewise having considered with what severity he had abused the knight, and that he had condemned him without any appeal of the accusation, that had bene used by the knights,



ever since his death. (began to feel a remorse in his conscience of unjustice) but by the settled opinion that was stirred in his heart of the false Prophecies, he soon shook the same off,

Camillus all this time, likewise noted what jealous suspicion the King had of him, and having heard the report why he kept his Daughter so strongly guarded, and of set purpose withheld her from his sight, and noting how suddenly the knight of Fame was made away without any cause of offence given, he began to fear himself, and by that meanes durst not shew any sign of desire to see Angelica, least by that meanes he should seek some occasion of quarrell with him, and use him like the stranger: within a while departed from the Golden Tower: intending notwithstanding, either with force or fair meanes to attain her possession:

## CHAP. XIX.

Of the Knight of Fames preservation, How he got out of the den, and departed the Tower.



The next day after Camillus departure, which Maximus perceived was with a discontented mind, the keeper of the Lions den, came to make the same clean, and used his wonted manner, which was to set open those places that were clean, into which the Lions would soon enter, and having fast bolted the doores, and being owner of the Lyons, entred into the Den where the Knight of Fame was, who suddenly caught hold on him, having before secretly shrouded himselfe from his sight, and being carefull to provide for his owne safety, snatcht from his side a hanging sword: the keeper knowing him, marvailling to see him alive, and exceedingly astonisht at his sight, held up his hands for mercy, to whom the knight of Fame said, my friend I seek not thy life, but mine owne safety, being as thou seest, preserved by divine providence, by the kings cruelty, by him unjustly cast into this place, without any

any cause of offence: but wrongfully as thou mayest perceive by my preservation: for if my fact had deserved punishment, no doubt I could not have escaped the cruelty of these Executioners, having endured great danger of famishment. Now my request unto thee is, that thou wouldest but suffer me to depart hence without describing me, for I have no reason to trust to Maximus courtship, and having already endured this misery by his cruelty, which thou mayest well do, without endangering thy selfe any way, for there is none but both assuredly think I am dead.

The keeper hearing his speeches, and withall, seeing how admirably he was preserved and also fearing his owne death, assured him by many vowes and protestations, not only to do that which he had desired, but also would most faithfully execute what other things soever he should command to his utmost power, wilt thou then (quoth he) do this for me? Give me the keyes, and so make fast the door, so that thou canst not go from me, and then call downe thy boy, and send him to *Marcellus*, to request him to come to thee, but in such sort, that the boy may not see me, and also to do his message secretly: which the keeper told him he would most willingly perform. Then directing the knight of Fame how to locke the door that he could not escape, he called down the boy, who presently came down to him, whom he commanded to seeke out *Marcellus* secretly, and to desire him that he would vouchsafe to come and speak with him, about a matter of great importance. The boy having received his message, immediately hastened to execute the same, and most fortunately met him in the outer Court, to whom he declared the cause of his coming. *Marcellus* marvailling why the keeper had sent for him, presently began to remember the knight of Fame, with which his heart began to fear: but having come to the den, the keeper commanded his boy to depart: and humbling himselfe to *Marcellus* told him that the knight of Fame was still living. Which said, he ran in unto him (who had shrouded himselfe from his sight) and told him *Marcellus* was come: then presently he came forth

forth, whom Marcellus espying, with great rejoycing caught him in his armes, and most lovingly embraced him, seeming to be revived with joy, in respect of the care oppressed his mind before he had knowledge of his safety. Many courteous greetings passed on either side. Marcellus desired the keeper not to reveale this secret to any; for if it should come to my Fathers hearing, it were impossible then to prevent his rigour, and withall promised him, that if he would let him lodge in his house but that night, he would reward him most bountifully, and withall promised him to higher dignity, and to such place of account, as that he would have good cause to rejoyce, that ever the knight of Fame came within his house. The keeper both drawn by his own good inclination, and also by the hope of reward and preferment, being but poor, promised his uttermost aid and assistance to pleasure him, and withal to perform his full desire with such security, that none should conceive any suspicion thereof: with that they altogether departed down into his lodge, where the knight of Fame refreshed himselfe with comfortable meats, being exceeding glad (as he had good cause) of this successe: and rendering many thanks to Marcellus (who well deserved the same).

Marcellus being yet somewhat troubled in his mind about the Letter, the king of Lybia had sent, and desirous to be satisfied of the truth therein, taking the knight of Fame aside, from the hearing of the keeper, said as followeth.

Sir knight, although I have shewne you this favour and friendship, which my fancy often perswaded me to refuse, yet urged by the good will I bear you, and for other considerations which I will yet conceale from you, I could not chuse but rejoyce at your safety, and worke what meanes I can for your preservation, yet there remaineth a grudging in my conscience against you, untill you assure me of your faithfull oath to satisfie me of the truth of my doubt without fraud: for if that be true which is alledged against you by the affirmation of a king, you deserve the punishment my Father inflicted by on you, and rather to be generally hated, then beloved of all. Most honourable knight (quoth he) I know my selfe to cleare

from

from all such villany, as that I swear and protest by my life, by heaven, and by all the good that ever I expect, which I desire to turn to my destruction, if I tell you not the very truth.

Then (quoth Marcellus) the same day that the king my Father caused you to be throned into the Lyons Den, the king of Lybia sent hither certaine of his knights with a Letter, wherein he accused you, to have most shamefully dishonoured his daughter Venola, desiring my Father to dispatch you out of the way: for your life and nothing else might appeare his tre, which was the cause of his cruelty.

My Lord (quoth the knight of Fame) upon mine honour, my former oath, and by all other truth and fidelity, this accusation is most unjust, false, and untrue; which if I may by your favour (in whose hands my life now resteth) have liberty to appone, I will maintain the contrary, even in the Gates of the king of Lybia, and cause my accusers to confesse the contrary: neither did I ever seek love at that Ladies hands, by whose dishonourable meanes this abusive accusation is raised against me.

Dear friend (quoth Marcellus) you have said enough, and I rest assuredly satisfied of your loyalty. The knight of Fame was so inwardly vexed with this accusation, that he was half mad with griefe; but chiefly, for that he thought it was come to Angelicaes hearing, and might be a meanes to cause her utterly to forsake him: which appalled his senses, with extreme deration, that he stood like one transformed.

Marcellus perceiving his discontent, desired him not to be grieved, but to overpasse the same, untill hee had meanes to prove the contrary.

My Lord (quoth he) how can I chuse but be sorry, when thereby I am dishonoured in every mans opinion, which I account more dearer then my life. Besides, with what impatience may I shew my selfe before any knight living, but rather hasten my self out of this miserable life, which is the next way to take this blemish. But if you will vouchsafe to heare the true report of the miseries I have endured since my being

you would say that I am the only man of sorrow, and haine to perpetuall calamity. I desire nothing more (quoth Marcellus.) With that he rehearsed to him all that he could of his bringing up in the Island of Rockes, his departure from thence, and Shipwrack at Sea: How he was entertained by Duke Amasenus of Thrace, and the treachery that was intended against him by Corus and Argalus, then of his successe in the Kings Court of Thrace, and the occasion why he departed from thence to the Forrest of Arde and how there he met the Prince of Bohemia, and released Venola: Then how Venola sought his love, and how she gave him (by subtilty) a somniferous Potion, to with hold his departure with Parisinus, which he had purposed, and how afterwards he perceived her intent, and departed from thence.

With that, he declared the manner of the Vision that appeared unto him in Thrace, and how he was there by enjoyned to seek out the faire Lady that had appeared unto him, and sue for her love, which was the cause that he both refused Phylænaes marriage, and Venolaes proffer of kinnesse: and also he declared how he himselfe arrived in that Country, and met Angelica, which was the very same Lady that appeared unto him in the Vision; and also told him, that he was likewise enjoyned to seek out his Parents, which the Vision told him were of great Birth. This (quoth he) is the true discourse of my forepassed life, which I never yet manifested to any but your selfe, whose favour hath farre surmounted my desert: into whose hands I commit my selfe to be disposed of: desiring you not to conceive amisse of me, for that false accusation being most untrue.

Marcellus again embracing him in his armes desired him likewise, not to thinke that he did any way conceive the least evil opinion, of him but that he did esteeme of him, as the dearest friend he had in the world, and that he did both love and honour him as himselfe, and would never forsake him whilest he lived, but continue his faithfull friend for ever. Having in this sort made a new league of amitie, Marcellus left the Knight

Knight of Fame to his private meditations, promising to returne againe to him very shortly, going directly to Angelica, whom he found continuing her wonted sadness: For she could by no meanes be comforted: but still augmented her love, by remembering the Knight of Fames person, to whom she bare such intire affections, that she resolved never to love any other Knight, but determined to spend the whole date of her life in single estate.

Marcellus suddaine approach, brake of her silent pensiveness, by his countenance shewing a heart replenisht with joy, which he uttered in this sort. Angelica (quoth he) cast off this sad countenance, for I bring you cause of more comfort: for the Knight of Fame is living, and preserved by admirable meanes. Oh Brother (quoth she) this newes cannot be true, which will kill my heart with grief to hear of, and be disappointed therein. Sister (quoth he) it is so; neither marvail thereat, for his innocency in the fact layd to his charge, hath I thinke caused the gods to pity him: besides, thereby you may be assured he is born of royall blood, who is now in the Keepers house in safety, with whom I have been these two hours; Now cast of these discontents, and clouds of care, for there is no further cause of disquiet for his supposed death.

Angelica then verily believing his words, said: Good Brother tell me how he doth, for whose safety I rejoyce? For of all the Knights that ever I beheld, I never liked nor loved any so well; desiring you to keep my counsaile (having bewraied my secrets to none else) and not let him know so much as I have told you. Then quoth both you and I doe him wrong (quoth he) for he hath well deserved love, and especially at your hands: to whom by his owne report he hath long agoe dedicated himselfe, and not only of his owne inclination, but of a high command, for the truth of which he hath upon trust of my secret revealed unto me, which then shall likewise hear: then he discovered the whole truth, even as the Knight of Fame had before done: which when she heard she said: What a discourteous Lady is that Venola, to seek the

overthrow, or to worthy a knight, and how may I esteem him that before he knew me was so constant in his love, without hope of my favour, and refused the proffered love of two such ladies for my sake: before the perill he hath endured in my search: and peradventure, is sprung of greater birth then myself. And now also by my Parents doom was put in that hazard of his life. Good Brother be you careful of his good, and whatsoever you shall counsel me to do I will do it; if my father should know of his safety, then were there no meanes for him to escape death; for such a hard conceit of suspect both possesse his mind, that he hateth all those that bear me any shew of good will, well (quoth Marcellus) rest you contented, and still continue your love towards him, to increase and not diminish the same, who is by destiny allotted to be your Husband; the care of whose wellfare let it be my charge: for I so much love and esteem him, both for his owne and your sake, that I will leave no meanes untrayed, whereby to do you good: which said, he again departed to the Knight of Fame. By this time the dark night approached, and Marcellus and the Knight of Fame, were devising what meanes to use for his safety, and to procure the desired content Angelica expected, who before had given her consent to be ruled by her brother: that by the assurance he had of her, he put the Knight of Fame in assured comfort of her love, by relating in some sort the contents of Angelicas conference before had with him, which affected his heart with greater joy, then ever before hee had endured grief: that his escape from death, did not comfort his heart so much as this happy news. At this Marcellus said, Noble Knight you see how I shall my Father guardeth Angelica, that there is no meanes left, to ease your grief or her care by tarrying here: neither can you without great hazard of your life, remain within the circuit of this Tower: for that my Father suspecteth every one, yet his own children, whereby we are tyed with these troubles, and would willingly worke any meanes to ease our selves, especially Angelica hath been inched up so closely, that she I am sure would undertake any thing to enjoy

enjoy her liberty. Were it in never so poore estate, wherein in my opinion, is many thousand of sweet contents to be found: rather then in this troublesome Tower, which is repleat with infinite cares.

Wherefore this is my censure, that you shall this night (as I will direct you) depart from hence, and go to Saint Austines Chappell, not farre hence, and there stay for me untill so morrow morning, where remaineth an old religious priest, named Iabine, who I you say you came from me, will assuredly give you entertainment: which when you have done, I will so worke with my Sister Angelica, that she shall condescend by such meanes as I will work for, her secret escape to come to you: by which I hope I shall ease the doubts that possesse my mind, rid this Country of the stain which it is liney to runne in, and worke both mine owne, peace, and Angelicas content: for so dearly do I love her, that had I many lives to lose, I would hazard them all to work her releasement: For were she once married, then should the date of that foolish prophecy have an end. The bright of a fine hearing had speeches, which onely tended to worke the content he above all things in the world sought, could not well containe himself from expressing unmeasurable joy, but pressing him humble, hearty thanks to Marcellus, both commended his service, and also intreated him to goe towarde the same.

Then Marcellus called the keeper, asking him to shew him the way whereby the Knight of Fame might get out of the Castle promising him a good reward and full pay pulling from his neck a chain of Gold, gave him the same. The keeper being incited with this reward, (which having thus done, to make things impossible come to effect) presently told them he had a device that might goe for current, if the Knight would undertake the same. I have my Lord (quoth he) a great store of great largess, which sometimes I sell for other wares, which if I should be able to let down into the Lake, he might easily in that get over unto the other shore, which device, Marcellus and the Knight of Fame both liked. And about midnight

when

When all things were at rest, they put the same in practise, and by a Rope let the Wessel down, which did swim more currently.

Then fastning a rope about the knight of Fames middle, and after that with many faire promises and protestations of perpetuall friendship, they had taken their leaved, the Keeper and Marcellus let him down: Who was so heavy, by reason of the weight of his own body and his armour, that they had much ado from letting him fall, and being in the Wessel, was like to sink in the same. But with much ado, and great danger of drowning, by reason of the unsteadfastnesse of the Wessel, which with every little weight more on one side then on the other, was ready to oversturn, he got on to the Bank, which was so steep upwards, that he had much ado to climbe up the same, but was oftentimes ready to fall down backwards, in to the Lake under him, which was of an exceeding great and huge depth: but having thus happily escaped both those dangers, he departed towards Saint Austines Chappell, according to such directions Marcellus had given him to find the same. Marcellus and the Keeper drew up the Wessel, and betook themselves to their rest.

The knight of Fame, had not well remembered Marcellus speeches, and therefore having gone some half a mile from the Golden Tower, fearing to wander out of the way, he took up his lodging under a Cypress tree, spending the whole night in manifold meditations of the successe of his businesse: Being oftentimes in great doubt, and despairing of never seeing Angelica again, reason to that fear, by reason of Maximus fearfull, and the diligent watch he had set in every corner of the town, and especially at the entrance: Where none went up and in, but the Guardians searched them, that his mind was sometimes wrackt with despair, and sometimes animated to comfort, by the assured trust he had in Marcellus. The night being by him so this sort spent, in the morning he betooke himselfe again to his journey, and with ease found out Saint Austines Chappell, and knocking at the Chappell door,

It was long before any came, but at last he beheld old Sabine standing before him: who had been abroad very far, and then returned, whom the knight of Fame most kindly saluted, Sabine marvelling to see one in armour, demanded what he would have.

Right reverend Father (quoth he) I am sent hither unto you by Marcellus, whose request is, that you would for his sake purchase my secret, and hold it with you until his coming, which will be this day, if other contravertitions hinder him not. Sabine noting his comely proportion, and willing to do any thing for Marcellus sake, brought him into his Cell, adjoining to his Chappell, and welcomed him so kindly as he could.

How Marcellus intending to carry Angelica to Saint Austins Chappell, was prevented by Camillus: And how the Knight of Fame departed to seek his Parents. **M**arcellus early in the morning came to Angelica, who still continued pensive, to whom he declared what had before passed betwixt him and the knight of Fame: withall of the promise he had made him to bring her to Saint Austins Chappell, which Angelica hearing, she said, Brother, how can this be effected, when you see so many impossibilities to hinder our intent, that we shall but spend much labour to little effect, and also rather bring my Fathers heavy displeasure against us, then reap any comfort: whose cruelty you see is such, that he will if he should find out our exile, punish us with severity: Besides if it should come to passe, what excuse could you find to pacifie his Ire? Wherefore I thinke it best, that we never hazard our selves, but rather be contented with our quiet estate, least a worse mischance light upon us hereby.

Sister (quoth Marcellus) your counsell is good, but yet heare what I shall say: The life you lead is but miserable, being



being kept like a Prisoner; whereas if you could but winne this liberty, you should enjoy your selfe of hearts content, and be a meane to rid my Father and us from all the doubts we may now endure. Besides, if you loved that worthy knight, whose constancy to you wards is without compare, you would for his sake refuse no perill. My Brother (quoth he) what need you make any such doubt, when I have said sufficient already, unless you thinke me to dissemble. For such is my love and good will, that I will arise willingly undertake any meane to attain his company, then he can desire; not moved by your perswasion, but of my own voluntary will, which hath made some doubt of this attempt: because I am fearfull of your ill, and carefull of your good, but whatsoever you shall counsell me unto, I will execute. Which said, they began to study and consult how to bring their businesse about: but were so confounded in their thoughts, that they thought it altogether impossible.

Now Maximus being rid of Camillus company, and assured of the knight of Farnes death, gave his mind to more quiet, during the time of their being there he had done. And being wearied with care, thought to recreate himselfe with sport; therefore he appointed the very same day for his sport; and to that intent he was early up, sending for Angelica to go with the Queen, even at that instant when she was debiting with Marcellus: which opportunity fell out most convenient to further their intent, which Marcellus told her he would determine of.

Angelica immediately went down with the messenger; and with the king and Queen Marcellus and divers others, departed the Tower. Marcellus all that day kept alligent company with Angelica, untill the king being very earnest in pursuit of the game strayed from them: the Queen likewise was absent, and most of Angelicas Guardians, saving some few, being indeed such as Marcellus had before made privy to his intent, who had firmly protested to keepe his counsell: which opportunity Marcellus tooke, and presently conveyed Angelica to

towards St. Austines Chappell: being without the Parke, when they thought themselves farre enough from the King, they were unawares set upon by a company of strange knights, who offered by force to carry away Angelica.

Marcellus being somewhat astonishd thereat, drew his sword, and being keene well provided with good rehen. Angelicas Guardians did the like: that on a sodaine, there began a cruell Combate betwixt them, untill Marcellus was grievously wounded, one of his company slaine, and the rest in as great danger as might be: but being a knight of exceeding courage, he defended himself most valiantly. So long continued the fight, that in the meane time some of the kings company, having the charge of Angelica, mist her, which they soone declared to the king, who commanded his knights to pass every way, by severall troopes himself and the Queene well guarded, took the readiest way out of the Park; which was the same way Marcellus and Angelica had taken; and hasting, came to the place, where they were in the hottest of their skirmish.

The strange knights, espying the king presently fledde away, with all possible speed (whom many of the Natolians pursued so farre; untill they might descrie a band of Souldiers: wherewith they returned with all expedition possible, and certified the king thereof, who presently hastened to the Golden Tower, with the Queene Marcellus and Angelica in his company: and by reason of the strangers he saw in sight with Marcellus, hee had not the least suspicion of Angelicas intended flight: and marvelling what that Army should meane, hee sent out Spies to view of what force they were. who having done in all points accordingly, they went and certified him, that they were ten thousand Souldiers, but they could not discern under whose conduct.

Maximus fearing the worst, presently sent Letters to the Nobles of his Land, with all expedition to muster by their Forces, and to convey them to the Golden Tower: and also caused most alligent watch and ward to be kept.

Marcellus being most grievously wounded, was likewise with

with all care attended by the Kings Physicians, to whom Angelica repaired, and being with him alone, he said as followeth.

What misery awaiteth my hard destiny, that am thus distressedly detained from my wished content? My evill presaging mind did foretell this misfortune, which hath thus frustrated our desire, and which is more miserable, brought you to this dangerous estate: but most of all withheld me from the sight of my beloved, and causeth him both to augment his cares, and suspect our loyalty. What will he thinke, when he seeth no performance of that which was promised, but still stayeth for our coming, and yet be frustrated? For the knowledge of our mischance can by no meanes come to his hearing: Would to God that I had ended my accursed life by the hands of those enemies, rather then to have survived to endure this extreame care. No hard fortune can be compared to that I endure, nor no care comparable to my grief.

First, to see you thus grievously wounded; Next, to be disappointed of our desire: and lastly, to frustrate the Knight of Fame of his expectation. What shall we now doe? How shall we recover this mishap? Or what meanes is there left, that may a litle the least comfort to our hearts in this extremitie? Instead of the content I expected by enjoying his presence, I am returned to my wonted bondage: and see my friends all murdered and environed with foes. Peace, peace (quoth Marcellus) good Angelica cease these complaints, and in this extremitie, imitate the old phrase, Make a vertue of necessity, and with patience give attendance for better successe: for now in these perplexities, there is small hope of present amendment: for that worthy knight no doubt, is of such wisdom and prudent government, that he will judge the best of our estate, and carefully provide for his owne safety. With that Angelica burst forth into abundance of teares, saying, Aye me poore wretch, I shall never then see him againe. With that she departed wringing her hands, and making great lamentation, so that Marcellus seeing her sorrow, was ready to worke his owne decay by his vexation.

Now

Now those Bands, of Souldiers, belonging to Camillus, who presently after his departure from the Castle of the Golden Tower, enduring many restless passions, for the want of Angelicaes presence, with whom he was greatly in love: with all speed mustered by those Forces, and sent them by shipping towards the Tower, with intent to besiege the same, and suddenly to surprize Maximus at unawares, and so to get the possession of Angelica: and coming towards the Golden Tower with a few in his company, whilst the rest marched after him, he met Marcellus and Angelica, and knowing them, thought without any more trouble to take her away, but was disappointed as is declared.

The knight of Fame being with old Jabine, spent most part of the day in conference with him, marvelling that he heard not from Marcellus: but when it was dark, his mind was possessed with exceeding care and vexation, and being without any hope of his coming, he was as much grieved how to satisfy Jabine, whom he thought would now suspect him of falsehood, and might suppose that he came not from Marcellus. Wherefore he said as followeth.

Father, I marvelle I have not heard from Marcellus according to his promise, which maketh me think some crosse mischance hath hindered him, that may breed in you some misconceit of me that have in his name come unto you, which if you do, you shall much injurie me: for it was he that sent me hither, as I could assure you by divers probable reasons.

Sir Knight (quoth he) I pray be not troubled, with any thought, for you are welcome to me, though Marcellus had not sent you, which I make no doubt of, but so well do I love him as that whatsoever cometh in his name, shall by the strickt observance I owe to that name, command me any service,

Afterwards they went to their repast, with such sparing dyet as the Priest used, and after Supper to bed: Where the knight of Fame could take no rest at all, but yet lay very quietly, because he was loath to trouble his Host: with which restraint of liberty of speech, and other passions, that oppressed his senses,

fences, he endured that tedious night in great torment, which seemed longer then many nights would have done, if he might have had liberty to utter his lamentations, which boyled in his breast like the violence of a mighty flame, pend within a small compasse.

Early the next morning, Jabin went forth for to provide food, and left the Knight of Fame alone, who then uttered many complaints, but at last finding fault with himselfe for urging that effeminate kind of lamentation, he striving to overcome his passions, which the more he laboured to allwage, the more they increased.

In this sort he continued all that day and the next, and many dayes after, till being in good hope of Marcellus approach: but when he saw so long time past, and he could hear no newes from him, he began to accuse himselfe of discourtesie, and disloyalty for breaking his promise: and withall grew into a ferred persuasion, that both he and Angelica had quite forsaken him: which added griefe to grief, and more care and vexation to his mind, not knowing what to do, nor which way to shape his course: that arming himselfe one day, he mounted himselfe and warred in a melancholly study toward the Golden Tower, and by chance met with two of Maximus knights, who were exceedingly astonishd at his sight taking him to be a ghost but he drawing nigh to them, they began to fly. which he perceiving, thought to slay the one of them, to have some further speech with him, that charging his Lance at him, and hitting him full, overthrow him to the ground: the other being therewith exceedingly terrified fled. The Knight of Fame alighting, coming to him that he had overthrow, said as followeth.

Knight, thou needest not to have fled from me, for I intended thee no harm, but was desirous to know some newes of thee, which if thou wilt tell me, I will let thee depart: otherwise, thou shalt never escape my hands. The knight marvailing to hear him speak, whom he thought had been a Ghost, made this reply, Pardon me good Sir, for I took you to be another then

then I see you are but if I may know what you will command me, I will do it, (Quoth he) Tell me how fareth *Marcellus*? Sir (quoth he) at this instant he lyeth very weak, by reason of many grievous wounds he received not long since; where he declared the whole truth of that which had happened by *Maximus* meanes, since which time (quoth he) the King hath set such secret watch about the Tower, that none goeth in nor out without his privy.

The Knight of Fame having heard his speeches, departed back to Jabin, to whom he declared the truth of all that he had heard: being very sorry for *Marcellus* his hurt, and well weighing every circumstance of that report, thought that when *Marcellus* was gotten with *Angelica* out of the Park so slightly attended, it was to come to him: which added some comfort to his heart, being fully assured thereby, that *Angelica* had not forsaken him.

By this time the Natolian that escaped from the Knight of Fame, was come to the Golden Tower, and coming before the king, told him that he had met the knight of Fame, whereat the king began to laugh: but presently came the other, who justified the same words, alledging that it was the knight of Fame, and that he had both talked with him, and knew him, affirming the same most constantly. *Maximus* wondering thereat, was almost astonishd at their words, that he determined to send all his knights to search for him, and the occasion now most fitly served: for the Peoples had according to his command, gathered a number of Forces together, which *Camillus* seeing, being unprovided to withstand such Force, but coming for another intent, immediately returned with his Souldiers towards his Countrey, and *Maximus* now seeing the Coast cleare of enemies, presently sent out knights every way to find out the knight of Fame.

This newes was soone come to *Marcellus* and *Angelicaes* hearing, which filled their hearts with exceeding care and sore leaſt he should be apprehended: this bred new sorowes in their troubled thoughts, but principally in *Angelicaes*, whose

whose love was grown to such perfection, that it was impossible to remove the same: that getting to her Chamber, she entered into many heavy complaints, able to have rent the stoutest hearts of the cruellest Tyrants: whom Anna comforted by all possible meanes she could devise: to whom Angelica said, Oh Anna (quoth she) little dost thou know the torments my heart doth endure, for wert thou so much enthralled as I am, and to so worthy a Knight as he is, thou mightest then have some insight into my sorrowes, but being ignorant therein, how canst thou give me counsell, have I not cause to sorrow; nay, rather to runne mad with sorrow, to see the danger that worthy Knight is now in, having so lately escaped a most miserable death, by my Fathers censure; And without cause, who not contented therewith, nor satisfied in his mind, hath now sent out many Knights to search for him: who if they find him, will bring him back, or by violence destroy him, whose death shall be the end of my life: for I have vowed, if my Father seek his ruine, he shall also see my death, for I will not live an hour after him: in which complaints she still continued without intermission.

It fortun'd most happily that Jabin was gone forth of St. Austins Chappel, and left the Knight of Fame in his Cell; meeting with many of the Natolian Knights, who demanded if he saw not such a Knight. (describing so well as they could) the Knight of Fame, whom he answered all after one sort, that he had not seen any such: but marvailling at their earnest inquiry, he demanded what the Knight might be, one of them told him, that he was called the Knight of Fame, who lately arrived in that Country: and was kindly entertained by Maximus, but especially of Marcellus, and having in some sort offended the King, was by him afterwards thrown into the Lyons Den, by reason of a Letter the King of Lybia sent, wherein he accused him to have dishonoured Venola, his onely Daughter, whom that day was seen and spoken withall. Jabin hearing his speeches, wonder'd thereat: yet notwithstanding was carefullest the Knight of Fame should be found abroad: whom

he

he now began greatly to esteeme, both that he deemed him to be sprung of royal blood, and also for that Marcellus made estimation of him, who he thought knew him clear of those accusations. or else he would not have favoured him so much. that with all speed he hasted unto his Cell, where being entered he found the Knight of Fame very sad, and fast bolting the Chappell doore, he came to him saying, worthy Knight, I am glad that I have found you here, for were you abroad, there are so many Knights in search of you, that it were impossible for you to escape. For me (quoth he) I think you are deceived. Pray (quoth he) if you be called the Knight of Fame, and lately escaped out of the Lyons Den. With that his colour changed. Pray (quoth Jabin) feare not, you shall be here as safe as your heart can wish, for this place is no way suspected, therefore thinke your selfe secure. Then Jabin declared unto him all that had hapned, and what he had heard, whereupon the knight of Fame likewise finding him faithfull and secret, declared unto him the whole discourse of his travels, only leaving out the Vision that appeared to him in Thrace. asking his counsell what to doe; and entering into many sad discourses, how he was still crossed in his expectation: and withall told him, that he knew not which way to travell in search of his Parents, which if he could attaine, then he would not doubt, but to revenge the injurious wrongs done him. Sir knight (quoth Jabin) I think it best that you travell in search of them, and that presently: in the mean time, these troubles by forgetfulness will be well over blown, & then you may have the better opportunity to go forwards with any intent, you shall afterwards put in practice; for if you stay here, you may unfortunately be descey'd; for the Kings Jealousie is such, that he will leave no means unattempted to work your death.

Father (quoth he) your counsell is good, which I will put in practice, not voluntary, but forced thereto in regard of mine owne preservation: requesting this one favour at your hands, that you would by some meanes remember my humble duty to that honorable knight Marcellus: and tell him that if he shall not be long ere I returne: desiring him in the mean time

(according to his former courtesie, which hath been extended farre beyond my desert) to remain my friend, and remember me to Angelica. I will (saith Jabin) fulfill your request in every respect. But first (saith he) I think it most convenient you change your armour, for that in that you are easily known, and I have one within, that is every way of as good proof. The Knight of Fame liked his devise exceeding well, and armed himself in that armour, which was very rich and costly, gilded all over with gold and Amell, without any devise to be known by: and in that armour the next night he departed, taking his leave of old Jabin, with many courtesies, being most unwilling to leave his company: and parting with a heavy heart. for that he went to undertake a new travail, which might detain him long from returning to Angelica: and by good Fortune, that night got out of the Country, and past the search of the Natolians, whom hee did not care to meet withall, but that he would not thereby hinder the speed of his journey.

## CHAP. XXI.

How the Knight of Fame arrived in the country of *Bohemia*, and redeemed *Violetta* from *Archas*. How *Archas* was put to death. How the Knight of Fame came to the knowledge of his Parents, and after that, departed againe towards *Natolia*,



After that the Knight of Fame was past the bounds of *Natolia*, he arrived in an exceeding great plain, where he saw many ready Pathes, but knew not which of them to take: at last, a sodaine thought and remembrance of *Parismus* entred his fancy, which so fully possessed his mind, that he thought thereof, would by no means remove, which was so effectually wrought in him by a natural effect. for there were his Parents, and no where else,

else, which caused nature it selfe to pittie his restless passions, and no longer to procrastinate his felicity, that he fully and resolutely determined to travell thither.

Whither afterwards with long travell he attained, having great desire to see *Parismus* againe, to whom his heart had bowed everlasting Friendship. And now drawing nigh the Court, in the afternoon when the sun had with his scorching beames made the season here, he heard a grievous complaint, as it seemed to his hearing of some distressed Lady, which made him stay to listen, which way that cry came, and by the voyce, drawing nigh unto the place, he espied under the shadow of a heap of Olmes, a knight in Armour, and a Lady at his feet, who were the same that made the heavy moane. The knight of Fame coming near them, they both espied him, to the Ladies comfort, but the knight presently took up his shield, and addrested himself for his defence.

The knight of Fame well noting the Ladies countenance, remembered that he had seen her, but he could not remember where, which caused him, the more willingly to help her: being otherwise of his own virtuous inclination, ready to succour any distressed Lady: that coming to her, demanded her cause of sorrow: but she being ready to make him answer, and holding up her hands to crave his pittie, the other knight setting his sword against her breast, bowing, that if she spake one word, he would thrust the same through her body: Which the Knight of Fame seeing, thinking he went about to slay her, with his sword drawn rusht violently against him, and overthrew him, but giving him leave to recover his feet, he said: *Trayterous villaine*, why offerest thou this Lady, this discontented being ashamed she should declare thy treachery, which manigre thy heart, I will know before we two part: with that he lent him such a blow that he made him stagger: the knight thought himself now in worst case then ever he had been: but notwithstanding he resisted the knight of Fame most courageously; for a space, but he being the most gallantest knight in the world, soon brought him in great danger of his life; which



When the Knight saw and felt, he staped himself, and said: Knight, before the combat continue any longer, let me know your name? I will not shew thee that favour (quoth the Knight of Fame) but with thee yield thy self: neither will I shew thee that favour (quoth he) with that he began the combat againe, being scarce able to lift up his sword, by reason of his faintnesse by effusion of blood, intending to end his life: Which the Knight of Fame perceiving, clasped him in his armes, and with violence wryng his sword, out of his hands and by force made him yeeld, having no weapon to offend himself nor his adversary.

The Lady seeing her self thus fortunately delivered, coming to the Knight of Fame, desired him to pity her estate, and not to forsake her, untill she were come to the Bohemian Court. With that the Knight of Fame was exceedingly glad, saying Lady, I will not forsake you but see you there in safety, for thither am I bound. What I pray (quoth he) let me know your name, for that I have I am sure seen you about the Forrest of Arde. Violetta with that was drawne into a great admiration what he should be, at last she said, my name is Violetta, that am ordained to perpetuall misery, being indeed by the treachery of a disloyall Knight named Archas, driven to wander thitherwards. The Knight of Fame then immediately remembering her, but being unwilling to displeasure himself, questioned no more with her, but onely asked her what that knight was. Sir Knight (quoth she) I know him not, nor why he hath offered me this outrage. Which said, the Knight of Fame forced him to go with them, and so they departed towards the Court where very soon they arrived. Now it happened that Parismus at that very instant was in the Court, who espying Violetta accompanied by two knights, the one of them being grievously wounded, and as it were by his countenance and manner of forced coming, seeming captive to the other, and not knowing of any misadventure that had befallen her, wondered the more, and coming to her, not well knowing in what sort to salute the knights, being ignorant of the cause of their coming

ming, he demanded where she had been? My Lord (quoth she) this knight meaning the knight of Fame hath preferred me from the dishonour of this most discourteous knight, intended against me, as I will declare unto you presently. With that Parismus most kindly embraced the knight of Fame, departing altogether into the presence, where was the King and Queene, Pollipus, Laurana, and many others. Pollipus seeing Violetta amongst those strange knights, marvelled thereat, but she coming before the king, upon her knees, desired justice against the wounded knight, the king told her she should have justice. Violetta then said as followeth. Most mighty King, I beseech you regard my complaint: revenge the monstrous wrong done me by this most wicked and abominable homicide, who hath offered me abominable outrage; for this afternoon attended by my Damosell, I went forth of the Court into a Grove adjoining to the garden to recreate my self in the cool shade: where I had not long stayed, but this discourteous villain surprized me, and caught hold of my Damosell, who made great exclamation, fearing my harm, whom he bound both hand and foot: threatening if she made any noise to murther her. Which done, he took me by violence, and halting and pulling me most rudely and discourteously, would have conveyed me I know not whether, untill this valiant knight by good fortune hearing my complaints, redeemed me from his Tyranny. The king hearing her speeches, commanded the knight to discover himself, but he being exceedingly ashamed, and loath to be known, refused the same: but at last, by some of the Bohemian knights was unarmed. When presently Violetta knew him, wherewith she gave an exceeding start, as if she had been affrighted at his sight. Parismus, and Pollipus likewise knew him, certifying the King that it was Archas; that had before offered the like villainy to Violetta, which the King well remembered.

Then he said: Cruell tyrant, what excuse canst thou invent to shelter this villainy: What canst thou alledge in thy defence, but that thou oughtest to suffer the most reproachfull death that can be invented; but this sentence will I give of thee,

not to favour thee, but to deal justly with that knight, whose prisoner thou art, and therefore as he by right hath conquered thee, so we will that he be thy Judge.

The knight of Fame had all this while diligently viewed Lauranaes beauty, her countenance and every part of her behaviour, that he took great delight in viewing her, but hearing the kings speeches, he unarmed his heart: whom Parisimus soon knew, and most lovingly embraced: likewise Pollipus and Violetta knowing him, saluted him with many courtesies. When presently Parisimus declared unto his father, that it was the famous knight, that was called the knight of Fame.

The king hearing that it was he, of whom he had heard so many honourable reports, rose from his kingly seat, and embraced him most lovingly, and every one in generall, seemed to be most exceedingly delighted with his presence.

Laurana beholding his countenance felt an exceeding throbbing suddenly possesse her heart: withall, such violent blushing flash in her face, that she wondered whence such suddaine motions should proceed, and was constrained to turne aside, least any should perceiue her blushing countenance; and withdrew her self to a window, this alteration being wrought in her by a naturall instinct, which she was altogether ignorant of.

The knight of Fame not unmindfull to satisfie Violettaes; wrong, by some revenge against Archas, most humbly thank the king for honouring him so much, by giving him authority to give his doom: but quoth he, I humbly intreat your highnesse to pardon me, and desire your wisdom to whom he hath been offensive, to use him as you please: For it were great presumption for me in this strange place, to censure of him in your majesties presence.

When the king called Archas commanding him to declare what moved him to commit that outrage to Violetta, but he assuring himself of no lesse then death, would make him no answer. Whereupon the king commanded him to be had to prison, and

and appointed that the next day, he should lose his head: which was accordingly performed: who might peradventure have been pardoned, but that his own conscience accused him more then those whom he had offended, and so according to his owne folly, which had brought him to commit all those wicked acts, even so he was his own Judge. For that his guilty conscience would not suffer him to ask pardon after this judgement given every mans mind was at quiet, having sufficiently scanned the circumstance of Violettaes misfortune.

The knight of Fame was royally entertained, and honourably feasted by the king of Bohemia, especially Parisimus and Laurana used him with exceeding kindnesse, being for that night vnten to part from him without any conference. But Laurana was so exceedingly troubled with his remembrance, that she could scarce take any rest at all that night, for thinking on him, not knowing what should move her to such unwonted alteration: yet in the morning, when Parisimus and she were in some conference about the knight of Fame, she said: My Lord, I know not what should move me to think any such thought, but I am perswaded, that his arrivall will bring us either some unexpected joy, or suddain sorrow. For since I first saw him my heart hath never been quiet: neither can I though I strive to the contrary, once put his remembrance out of my mind: Which hath so fully possesse my fancy, that I could take no rest this night.

My self (quod Parisimus) have felt the selfe same Passion, not only now, but also at my first meeting with him in the Forrest of Arde, which maketh me partly of the selfe same opinion with you, and also desires to know of whence he is. In this and such like communication, they continued some time, till Parisimus left her, and went to the knight of Fame, who was already in company of Pollipus: Whom Parisimus most kindly bled, and afterwards being at a most royall Feast, which was prepared onely for his more honourable welcome: After Dinner, being requested by Parisimus (who was desirous to know of whence he was,) there being the King and

Queene

Queen, *Parismus*, *Laurusa*, *Polippus*, and *Violetta*, and others others, he began to declare the whole discourse of his travells to them in this sort. If I should declare my name and birth (quoth he) I know not how to begin: For that I my selfe am ignorant thereof, but so much as I can remember, I will hide no part from you. I was brought up in a Country of *Tartaria*, called the *Island of Rocks*, my parents, for any thing I know being poor, or whether they were or no, I know not; but when I was of some remembrance, either my Mother that brought me up, or rather my Nurse (for she would not suffer me to call her Mother) departed from her habitation I know not with what intent: but by the way a Lyon slew her, whom I pursued to his Denne: Where being come, I could not returne backe to my Nurse, by which meanes I stayed in that place many yeares: untill on a time she appeared to me in a Dreame: warning me to forsake that unfrequented place, and go to the *Castle of Rocks*: which I presently did, then not knowing what a *Castle* meant: Where, at the first, I was roughly handled, but at last I was kindly used by *Tyresus*, who brought me up a long time: with whom I departed to Sea: where by a mighty Tempest, the ship and all that were in the same were cast away, my selfe onely was cast on the shore in *Thrace*: Where I was succoured by the good Duke *Amasenus*, in whose Court I was often like to be destroyed, by some of his Knights, that envied me: from whence I departed to the kings Court, hearing of a generall Triumph that was held: the kings Daughter being appointed the conquerours reward: whom I wanne, and was determined to have married: from which I was warned by a Vision, which willed me to surrender up my Title in *Phylena* to *Remulus*, to whom she was before betrothed, which I did; and also that I would travell in search of my parents; which the *Vision* told me was of kingly race. And withall gave me another command that I should love no Lady, untill I had found out that Lady was shewn me in the vision; this did greatly trouble me, when presently came news of *Tyrides* death, soon to *Amasenus* who

who was slain by *Brandamor* in rescue of *Venola*, whom he had the custody of: Upon which occasion I travelled first to *Lybia* and from thence to the *Forrest of Arde*, thinking that *Venola* had been the same Lady appeared to me in the *Vision*. Where I met with your Highnesse, and with you departed to the Court of the King of *Lybia*, after *Venola* was redeemed, as your selfe remember, who was not the Lady I went in search of. Afterwards when I had thought to have departed with you towards this Country, *Venola* by subtilty, causing me to take a sleepe Potion, frustrated my desire, which they did to stay me with her, upon a pretence of great Love, as she bear to me, which one afterwards made me acquainted withall: which when I heard, being enjoined to place my affections on another, fearing some mischance might arise by her Love, and finding out with what subtilty they had frustrated me of your company, I departed without knowledge of any from thence. And at last after long travell, arrived in *Natolia*; where lying downe to rest my selfe being weary, it happened the Lady *Angelica* (the most fairest Lady living, to passe by;) whom after I had seene, I perfectly knew to be the Lady that appeared to me in the *Vision*, having after such good successe, that respect that I was entreated by *Maximus* the King at the *Golden Tower*, and there grew into great acquaintance with *Marcellus*, I had not long remained there, but the king of *Lybia* (as I suppose, perswaded thereto by *Venolaes* meanes) wrote a letter unto *Maximus*, that he would for his sake either send me to him, or else he revenged on me by my death; alleging that I had dishonoured his Daughter: which accusation was most false and untrue. Hereupon the king without bearing what I could say in mine owne defence, immediately cast me into a Denne of fierce Lyons, who refused to hurt me; where I remained many daies, having no food but such as was cast to them: from whence afterwards I escaped by the keepers meanes, whom I compelled to send for *Marcellus*, who took me out of the tower, and sent me to an ancient friend of his, named *Iabin*, priest of *S. Austins* Chappel, promising to come to me,

me the next day, but was disappointed thereof by such meanes as is not yet come to my knowledge.

Upon a day I went abroad from the Chappel, and by misfortune was espied by some of the kings knights, who certified him (as I thinke) that I was alive: Whereupon he againe most unjustly sought my life, and sent out thousands in my search: from whose hands I escaped, intending to find out my Parents, and so travelled hitherwards. This (quoth he) is the brief, and true rehearfall of my travells, and bringing up, so farre as I know: having nothing whereby to be otherwise known, but a Jewell which my Father gave me great charge to keep, whose mind I have fulfilled. With that he paid out of his bosome the Jewell, which he continually wore about his neck: which Laurana having diligently viewed, perfectly knew to be the same she had left with Parismenos in the Island of Rocks: whom she assuredly (both by that and many other probabilities) knew to be her Sonne, that suddainly before them all, she caught him in her armes, and cried; Oh my Sonne Parismenos, thou art my sonne: many times kissing and embracing him. Her strange behaviour drowe them all into admiration. When suddainly the place where they were began to waxe dark, that they could scarce see one another, and they heard a voyce, which they knew not from whence: which sayd; Parisinus welcome thy Son, Parismenos, long time absent from thee: thou needest not doubt of it for none is so like thee in heretofore qualities; which said, the darknesse presently vanished.

By this they all assuredly knew, that the knight of Fame was Sonne to Parisinus and Laurana; who likewise assured himselfe that he had found his Parents, presently he kneeled downe: whom Parisinus, the King, the Queene, and Laurana, most lovingly all at once encompassed with their kind embracings, rejoycing most exceedingly for joy that he was found, being unable by words, welcomes, embracings, or otherwise, to expresse their gladnesse. Parisinus rejoycing that he had so valiant and vertuous a Son, the King and Queene, glad that

in their old age to see so vertuous an impe, sprung forth of their issue to succeed in the Kingdome. And Laurana with tears of joy expressing her content, in that she had found her Sonne, whom she thought had been destroyed long ago: that no heart is able to expresse the joy that possesseth their hearts. Pollipus and Violetta, they likewise embraced him being as glad as any of the rest, of his safety. This newes was soon spread through the whole Court, and from thence flying same soon brought the newes thereof to their Citizens, who of their own accord rung their bells, made Bon-fires, and Triumphs, throughout the whole City: Whereon all sides, were such exceeding rejoycings as is impossible to be exprest.

Many dayes afterwards the knight of Fame, who now shall assume his right and proper name Parismenos, continued in the Bohemian Court honourably entertained, and highly esteemed of the Bohemian States: Who grew into an exceeding love towards him, and was kindly beloved of the King and Queene: and especially of his Parents who thought themselves most happy and blessed to have such a Sonne: whose fame was spread through most places of the world, and that every mans eares were filled with the report of his honourable deeds.

Now that Parismenos had thus happily attained the knowledge of his Parents, the want whereof had long time filled his mind with care, no other thought but of Angelicaes Love could take place in his heart, which (though his cause of joy otherwise was sufficient) filled his senses with sadnesse, and quite extinguished those delights, that they seemed to trouble his mind, being rather tedious then comfortable, adding no ease to his cares, which were augmented to an exceeding height by reason of Maximas cruelty, which he saw so much aggravated against him, & he knew it a thing impossible for him to attain the least favour at his hand: who likewise kept Angelica guarded so strongly, & so narrowly payed into all his actions, that it was impossible any way, either to come to her speech, or to send to her: that with divers cogitations his heart was tormented

tormented, his countenance darkned, and he spent his time most commonly in sadness: being seldome drawne to any mirth: which was generally noted of all men, but especially of *Laurana*, who could never be quiet but only in his company.

And on a day missing him, she rested not untill she had found him out, being gotten into the most solitarie place of the Garden, leaning himself upon his elbow: who esping her, raised himself from the ground, blushing at her presence; to whom she said.

Why how now *Parismenos*, what sadness is this that possesseth your mind, that maketh you so to estrange your self from company, to delight in solitariness? Is there none so highly in your favour, that they may know the truth thereof? Or is your cause of care such as none can remedy, or not counsell you for your ease? I am sure there are many would not refuse to use their endeavours to pleasure you, especially my self would both willingly do my best to comfort you, and know the cause if it be not too secret.

*Parismenos* with humble reverence made her this answer: I beseech you do not thinke me so undutifull, nor my cause of care so secret, that I would conceale the same from you: but were it of much more importance, I would willingly reveale it to satisfie your mind: which I have omitted as unwilling to trouble you therewith, and for no other respect.

Then I pray (quoth she) let me know, is it not Love? Yes, most dear Mother (quoth he) it is Love, and to that beautifull Lady *Angelica*, who beareth me like affection: but so farre am I from enjoying her love, as that it attainteth my heart with care to think thereof, which is the cause of my sadness: and which will increase rather then diminish, if I do not shortly travaile thither, being now assured of all other doubts, and having finished my travell in search to find you out. Therefore I most humbly beseech you to procure my Lord and Fathers consent to my speedy departure: For without the fruition of her heavenly sight, my life will be but wearisome. *Laurana* hearing his speeches, perceived indeed that his affection was great.

great, and therefore not to be removed, and well knowing by her own former experience, that Love was incurable, she was the more ready to pittie his passions that she promised to further him in what she could, being now assured of the cause of his sadness.

## CHAP. XXII.

How *Parismenos* after he came to the knowledge of his Parents departed into *Natolia*. And how he met with *Marcellus*: and what afterwards befell unto him.



In few dayes after *Parismenos* returned back again towards *Natolia*, but with much sorrow (in the Bohemian Court for his departure) spending much time in travell, untill he arrived at *St. Austins Chappel*, having gotten him other Armour because he would not be known: and knocking at the Chappell door, presently old *Jabine* came out, to whom he discovered himself: who knowing him, rejoiced exceedingly at his presence & safety, desiring him to come in, for that he had newes of importance to tell him.

*Parismenos* coming to him for no other intent: but to hear newes from *Angelica*, willingly went in with him. And *Jabine* began as followeth. Most noble Knight, I will declare unto you all that I have learned of the estate of *Marcellus*, near as I can, After that you were departed from hence, the *Natolians* having continued their diligent search some three dayes, in the end returned to the Court, frustrated of their desire; Whereby *Maximus* gave no credit to their report, but soon forgot the same, remaining in great quiet.

*Marcellus* by this time had recovered his health, letting passe no time, came hitther, thinking to have found you here, but perceiving by my report of your departure, he seemed to be quite overcome with grief, and declared to me all that had happened to you in the Golden Tower, which you had declared on-  
to



to me before: and withall, manifested what had hapned unto him and Angelica; and how he was so grievously wounded: then Jabine declared the same, even as Marcellus had told him, in the very same manner as is before declared, when he determined to have conveyed Angelica to St. Austines Chappell the same day his Father was on Hunting. And (quoth he) Marcellus having told me this, withall shewed me with what sorrow Angelica endured your absence.

Parismenos having heard his words, which yeilded him full assurance of Marcellus his friendship, and Angelicaes constant Love, was therewith exceedingly comforted, rehearsing to him, how fortunately he had found his parents.

Jabine then began to use him with more reverence, and more fervently to affect his company: good, that at Parismenos request, he went towards the Golden Tower, to see if hee could by any meanes speak with Marcellus, which he willingly at his request did, and brought newes back, that Maximus was departed with the Queen, Marcellus and Angelica, towards the City of Ephesus; which thing he learned of such as were guardians at the Golden Tower.

Parismenos hearing that, immediately departed thitherwards, and entering the City, he rode presently unto the Court, where he met a knight, whom he desired of courtesie to give notice unto Marcellus, that there was a knight who would speak with him; which at his request he presently went and performed: and finding Marcellus in the Kings great Hall, he told him, that there was a strange knight at the Court gate, that was very desirous to speak with him.

Marcellus marvailling who it should be, immediately went out unto him, being a knight of exceeding vertue, in that he would not refuse any courtesie, and though he were Son to a mighty King, yet he disdaind not to fulfill his request, though he neither knew him, nor the cause of his coming.

Parismenos beholding him, immediately alighted from his Steed, and with a kind behaviour said: Most noble and courteous Prince, I desire to have some few words in private conference

erence with you from the knight of Fame, Marcellus bearing him name, Knight of Fame, desired him to say on: For there were none then present but such as he trusted.

My word (quod Parismenos) because I know not whether I may discover my self or no with safety, I am the Knight of Fame, and now altered in name, but not in good will to you. Marcellus hearing his words had much ado to refrain from embracing him, but yet for that he would not have any note the same he abstained: but said; Most noble Knight nothing could have brought more joy to my heart then your presence doth, being a long time severed from you by fortunes unconstant mutability, who altereth the estate of things, according to her variable disposition; trusting you have not misdoubted of my good will, though I came not to St. Austins Chappell according to my promise, which I was about to perform, but that my intent was crost. But seeing you are thus happily returned and have as I hope attained the knowledge of your parents, in whose search old Jabine told me you were departed, I desire you repose that assured confidence to my trustiness, and I will labour to procure your content every way, to my uttermost power, your safety and return will bring no little joy to my sister Angelica which is impossible to give her knowledge of: for my Father hath now guarded her more strictly then ever before, neither is she here in this Court as the common report goeth but still remaineth in the Golden Tower, which I will declare to you hereafter. In the mean time, because you shall not be deserv'd, I will send my Esquire with you unto an ancient Ladies house of good estimation, where you shall be kindly entertained for my sake, whether I will repair unto you: and where if it please you stay, untill I can work such meanes, how to bring you, that you may speak with my sister Angelica.

Parismenos hearing his courteous speeches, yielded him most hearty thanks: and for that Marcellus was sensible of his Fathers suspicion, without any more speeches, desired Parismenos with his Esquire unto the Ladies house, whose name was Madam Pandora: who taking Parismenos by the

the hand conducted him in and bled him most kindly.

After dinner was past, Marcellus came thither to him, thanking *Panora* for entertaining his friend: then he most lovingly embraced *Parismenos* (who by reason of his long travail, and exceeding cares, was so much altered, that had Marcellus met him in the street without any further knowledge that it was he, he would hardly have known him) who with the like behaviour, greeted him again: declaring to him his whole travailles in search of his Parents. Marcellus hearing that he was son unto the most noble Prince *Parismus* and *Laurana*, heirs unto the two famous Kingdomes of *Bohemia* and *Theffalic*, said: Most noble Knight, how miserable should *Natopia* have been esteemed, if it had been the destruction of so honourable blood, and what cruelty might have bene imputed to my Father, to have given you the sentence of your death: And how unfortunate hath our blood been, in missing to be affianced to so honourable and kingly houses. But notwithstanding all this, my father too much overburdened, with constant regardeth no such honour but rather dishonoureth his house and stock with his fearfull suspect, wha ever since your departure from the Maiden Tower, grew into such furious conceit, of *Angelica*, that every day he was in a manner her keeper: and in the night he caused her to lodge in his owne Chamber, the doores whereof he would lock with his owne hand, and keep the keyes, which was procured by the vaine surmise of a dream, wherein he dreamed that *Angelica* should be stoln from him: this miserable life continued not many dayes, which wel I may term most miserable) being intangled with so many cares as I know posselt his heart, till at the last he wrought this devise, thinking under that to ease his cares, and prevent all those mischieses which he feared: he gave out speeches many days before he came from the golden Tower, that he would depart to this City, and withall: it was reported in every mans voyce, that *Angelica* should no more be kept in that Tower, but that she should likewise depart with him, which all the Nobles and Lords of the Land were glad, the

Knights

Knights and Ladies her attendants rejoiced thereat, and the same thereof, was soone spread through the hearing of bordering Nations, and from thence to far countries, my self among the rest was exceedingly glad, especially *Angelica* most of all rejoiced thereat.

Now my Father seeing the joy that was made thereat, was the more troubled in his senses, that coming to a Damsell of meane birth, & of much beauty, who in countenance much resembled *Angelica*, he won her by many Protestations of great preferment, and with many threats of great severity if she would not condescend to follow his counsel, to do whatsoever he commanded her, Her did he cause to come into his owne Chamber, and secretly (without the privy of any but the Queen) to attire her self in *Angelicaes* richest ornaments, appointing certaine Damozels to attend her, that knew not *Angelica*, or at least knew her not from *Angelica*.

As for *Angelica*, the very same day when he meant to depart he committed her to the custody of foure Chuchmen: who vowed not to let any come either to the sight of her, or speech of her, without he brought her Fathers Letter to that effect, signed with his own hand and signet, removing all her former Guardians, and appointing new, that know nothing, but that *Angelica* was departed with the King, from whose knowledge likewise, he had given the Chuchmen especiall charge, to keepe her being there.

All the Ladies likewise that attended her, came away with him knowing no other but that *Angelica* was in his company, leaving no other to attend her, but one Damozell, named *Anna*, which she obtained of my Father, with many instant intreaties, And having effected every thing according to his fancy, he departed thitherwards: the Damozell so artificially behaving her selfe, that neither my selfe nor any other perceived but that it was *Angelica* indeed. And being arrived in this place, he committed this supposed *Angelica* to such strict custody, as before he used in committing her to be kept by these Damozels that indeede thought it had been *Angelica* whom

whom he bound by many promises, not to suffer any to come to her speech. But I longing to have some conference with my sister, whose heart I knew was oppressed with many cares for your absence, sought means to come to her speech, which I was long without obtaining: but at last, by means of one Damoszell, whom with many intreaties I had won, I came to her, and taking her by the hand, I began to use many speeches to comfort her: and withall to enter into such conference, as would have betrayed all the secrets that ever had passed betwixt me, Angelica and your self, but the damozell hearing a vertuous mind, and willing (as she afterwards told me) to betray my secrets to her privacy (which could not proceed but from a marvellous good disposition) suddainly break off my speeches saying.

My Lord, I beseech you be advised to whom you Speake vnlesse you will commit your secrets to one, that you would not otherwise trust, neither will I presume being vnworthy thereof, to participate your Counsels: For I am not *Angelica*, But your poore Hand maide *Dulcia*. At which wordes, I was halfe astonished, and blessing her indeede perfectly knew her: Which without she had betrayed her selfe I should neuer have done.

Withall, my fancie began inwardly to commend her courtesie: or rather vertue, that refused, (though she condescended to my my Fathers will (to betray me) knowing the whole depth of my secrets: and wondering how mine eyes were blinded, that could not before descry her.

I requested her to tell me the occasion why she supplied Angelicaes come, the truth thereof, she declared vnto me, in manner as I have now told you: withall requesting me upon her knees, not to reueale that which she had of duty, good Will and affection told me: which I promised I would and meane faithfully to conceale from all but your selfe. Now there resteth nothing, but how to worke meanes that you may come to Angelica.

Parismenos hearing how stricktly his Lady was Grieved, was suddenly stricken with silent sadnesse, so thinke

of the impossibilities that hindered his content, and his minde was so oppressed with care, that he forgot how to study for his own abail.

Marcellus seeing him fallne into that heavy dumpe, rebited him from the same, with this comfortable speech: My deare friend abandon this habite of care, and revive your drooping heart with hopefull comfort, for my self will worke a meanes how you shall have the custody of *Angelica*, which I will effect very speedily, if you will stay here, but while I can bring the same about. Parismenos being comforted with his courteous promise, gave him thanks in these speeches.

Most noble Knight, how may I expresse sufficient thanks to you, for becomming so kind and faithfull a friend unto me unworthy? Or which way may I recompence the least of your good deeds, that have in all abundance tasted of your honorable bounty: for which I render you thanks as all the recompences I am able to make: vowing if ever you need my help in any thing never to desist to hazard my life for your sake. And since you have of your owne vertuous disposition, voluntarily (nether drawn by intreaty nor hope of recompence) promised me your assistance, which onely may be the meanes to worke my everlasting felicity, I beseech you to go forwards therein, that I may therby be much more indebted, as well for that, as as for many other your princely courtesies: which though they pass vnrwarded yet they shall never rest ungratified in my dutifull deuotions, which by good right, are eternally bound to require your good will.

Worthy friend (quoth Marcellus) leaue of to vse such thanks to me that request nothing at your hands but love and friendship, which am unable to merit any such recompence as you kindly yeild: but I pray you be merry yet in my absence, with this kind old Lady, whilst I put my purpose in practice, which so soone as I have brought to perfection, I will returne and not before, till when I take my leaue, committing you to your owne hearts desire, which I wish. Which wordes being ended, with many courteous farwells he departed the Chamber:

Chamber; and coming to *Panora* (who before had bene his Nurse, and loved him most dearly) whom he requested in most earnest sort, to use his friend as kindly as she would use himself. she promised so to do: and likewise performed it, in using *Parismenos* so kindly, that he could not chuse but greatly extoll and commend her courtesie.

Now let my muse returne to speak somewhat of *Angelica* who after she saw that she was frustrated of her desire, which was to depart with the King according as himself had given out speeches, and not to be any longer intyalled as she had a long time before been, and now perceiving that her father had both deceived her in that, taken away all her damozels, changed her Guard, and appointed her to be guarded by such jealous Slaves as would nether, scarce day nor night suffer her to be out of their sight, thought her self not only in as bad case as before, but rather in a thousand times worse, being deprived of many pleasures which before she enjoyed: but never esteemed of them untill now she was restrained, missing the comfortable presence and sweet conference she was wont to enjoy with *Marcellus*, & especially fearing never to see the Knight of Fame againe, she wholly gave her mind to sorrow, spending her time oftentimes in teares, and bewayling her sad estate, that had not *Anna* in some measure comforted her she would have overwhelmed her tender heart with those teares, and have shortned the date of her precious life, thinking every hour a day and every day a yere: untill she were released from that bondage, in which carefull state she continually remained.

## CHAP. XXIII

How the Knight of Fame carryed *Angelica* from the Golden Tower; to *Jabines* Castle.



AS soone as *Marcellus* was come to the Court, he presently got himself to his Chamber, and there began to study how to compasse that which he had undertaken to effect: at last, he hathought himselfe that if he could devise any meanes to get his Fathers Signet, he would write a Letter unto the Keepers of the Maiden-Tower in the behalf of *Parismenos*, that they should admit him as one of the Guardians, which presently he contrived in this sort,

**T**HIS trusty Knight, on whose fidelity I repose my confidence I have chosen and appointed to be one of your fellowes, and to that effect. I have sent him to you with this letter, signed by my self: whom I require you to admit without any denyall, and keep this as your warrant to do the same.

*Maximus.*

When *Marcellus* had wrote this Letter, and imitated therein so neer as he could his Fathers hand, which he knew they were not greatly acquainted withall, he wrought such meanes that he got *Maximus* signet, and sealed the same: which when he had signed, the next morning he went to *Parismenos* and told him what he had done: who liked thereof very well, and (quoth he) if I may once be admitted amongst them, let me alone with the Eunches, to come to *Angelica*, neither will I be denyed, since I have this good meanes: that presently he armed himself, for that he would not use any, no not the least delay, which oftentimes bringeth things wel begun to an untoward end; and taking his leave of *Marcellus* and the Lady *Panora*, with abundance of hearty thanks, he departed with

a merry heart towards the *Golden Lamer*, hoping now to enjoy the sweet sight of his beloved, which he never beheld but twice, in all the time he had sought her love. *Marcellus* he departed back again to the Court very sad, for the absence of *Parismenos* and *Angelica*, being likewise much grieved, that *Maximus* his father should withhold any of his secrets from him, which did both disgrace him to such as were strangers, and especially to those Ladies that were *Dulciaes* attendants, which though he knew well enough, yet that took away no part of his conceit of unkindnesse: but most of all he was troubled with grief, to be restrained from *Dulciaes* company, on whom his thoughts had continually run, ever since he had been last with her, for her Beauty excelled all the Ladies of the Court (*Angelica* exempted) & of her vertues he had good conceit by that which he had found in her good dispositions, when she refused to thrust her selfe into the knowledge of his secrets, but rather committed all that the King had commanded her to his secrets, which if *Maximus* should know of, would be as much as her life were worth. These cogitations so much altered his countenance, that whereas before he was of a pleasant disposition, he now began to give his mind wholly to melancholy sadness, often shunning the company of those he was wont to delight in, which *Maximus* noted, especially the Queen both marvelled and was grieved thereat. and finding him out when he was in that heavy pain, she earnestly demanded his cause of sadness, to whom he made this answer. My Father, I know not upon what occasion, accounteth me think, rather as one that would betray him, then as his Son that he restraineth me *Angelicaes* presence, and keepeth his counsels from me: to intrude my selfe into his counsells, I will not presume; onely my desire is, that I may but be admitted to the sight of my Sister *Angelica*.

*Marcellus* (quoth the Queen) I pray the be contented for a time, for thou seest thy Fathers mind, which will impart his secrets to none who if he should know that your sadness were for that cause, would be the more fearful to impart them to

to you which can no way pleasure you, but rather fill your mind with greater cares: which now is more happy then it would be then: for *Angelica* so long as she is in health what need you be so careful for her: then good *Marcellus* rest your selfe contented, and desire not that which will rather adde more trouble to your head. The Queen having ended those speeches, departed and left *Marcellus*, where she found him.

As soon as the Queen was gone, he began again to ponder these things, not knowing why his head should bee thus troubled: for he knew all that he desired, and yet his mind was troubled therewith. that at last, with more advised consideration, he weighed every conceit of his thoughts, and found that neither his Fathers unkindnesse, *Angelicaes* absence, nor his fear of disgrace, was that that troubled him, but onely a good conceit of *Dulciaes* kindnesse, which caused him to enter into a view of her perfections, which his fancie began so much to commend her that he thought her worthy to be beloved and withall, thought why he might not love her, which very thoughts drew to such insight into his own fancies, that he perceived that love had already took possession in her heart, then he began to consider what displeasure it might procure him if he should set his fancy on one so far as his inferiour, and not rather seek the love of some Kings Daughter, that might adde honour to his Title, and not diminish the same: which thought was no sooner began, but it ended, being dashed by another conceit, that *Dulcia* was as beautifull as any as vertuous as any; as courteous as any: and therefore as worthy to be beloved as any: that if he should marry with his equal, he might rather marry him for his dignity, and of a haughty mind to keep her own high dignity still, then for any true love: and if she were his equal, he should rather be subject to her will, then she any way obedient to him, that *Dulcia* would be a loving, kind, and dutifull wife, that she would honour him rather then desire to be his equal, and that she would release no perill, danger, nor hazard for his sake: Thus having spent some time in these cogitations, he resolved to love *Dulcia* what



whatsoever ensued thereon, though he incurred his Parents displeasure, or any other hazard of his honour whatsoever: and with that resolution, he went immediately unto the place where she was guarded instead of Angelica, and by the Damozels, means who before had shewn him the like favour, he came to her Chamber where he found Dulcia all alone very sad, to whom he said, How now *Angelica*, what are you sad? Can I never come, but that I must alwayes find you in this melancholly disposition? What are you sorry to be thus pend from a Husband,

My Lord (quoth *Dulcia*) though I am otherwise sad, it doth me good to see you merry, You are deceived *Dulcia*: I am not merry. My Lord (quoth she) if I should give credit to your words, they shew that you are merry that calls me *Angelica*, yet know the contrary,. Oh *Dulcia* (quoth he) neither doth words nor countenance alwayes bewray the inward thoughts: For this which you take to be mirth in me, is but a forced habite, which I have taken upon mee even now: but knew you the thoughts of my heart you would say I were sad.

My Lord (quoth she) I beseech you pardon my boldnes which I presumed seeing your pleasant disposition, wherein if I was deceived, I hope you will not be offended with me: For indeed oftentimes the heart meditates of many things the mind cannot utter, So doth mine *Dulcia* (quoth he) for I wish thee more good, then I am able to utter; and the cause that my heart is sad, is because I am not able to do thee so much good, as my heart doth wish and cannot utter, I most humbly thank you (quoth *Dulcia*) acknowledging my self farre unworthy such favour, and unable to deserve such good, which maketh me think, you still continue in that forced habite, which maketh me utter these speeches, Indeed well replied *Dulcia* (quoth he) but as I suddainly took that habit upon me, it was gone again before I had uttered these words: therefore you may be assured now, that my words proceed from a true heart, and not from a forced habite. My Lord (quoth she) againe

gaine) where there is such often change of disposition, there can be no constant resolution. Yes (quoth he) that which is of purpose taken to shew mirth is forced: but the naturall disposition still continueth firme. Indeed in few (quoth she) but not in all. Then (quoth he) think me one of those few, My Lord (quoth she) I beseech you pardon me if I do not, for it is given to all by nature, to be more confident then provident. And I answer, I have received more favour at your hands, in suffering me to be thus familiar with you then I am worthy, or ever have deserved: I therefore I crave pardon, hoping that you will bear with my rudnesse.

*Dulcia* (quod he) do not aske pardon when you have not misdone, but believe my Words, without any question only to proceed from the depth of my true heart, which intendeth & wisheth you no lesse good then I have uttered: For I have found such vertue in you, that I am intrahled to that vertue, and desire to be partaker, and possesse that beauty; which hath made me your affectionate friend, and entreate your love, then that which I desire nothing more. My Lord (replied *Dulcia*) my love and duty is such, that I will not refuse any command you shall impose upon me.

*Dulcia* (quod he) it is not such Love as is commanded by duty, noe such friendship as ariseth from fear, but such kind love as proceedeth betwixt faithfull friends, from the yeelding consent of a true heart, and such a Love as hath a further respect then that common duty: for if you know with what fervency I desired your sweet consent to this Love, you would pity my torments,

My Lord (replied she) I beseech your honour do not seek to captivate or intrahle me in loves bands that am free, I am assured your fancy cannot like of one far unworthy that high favour you speak of, but suffer me rather to continue in my peacefull estate, that esteeme my self far from ever enjoying such happiness as to be beloved of my superiour, being already so far bound unto you in all humbleness, that you shall not command me any thing that agreeth with modesty, but I will perform the same. Speake

Speake you from your heart (qd. Marcellus?) I do my Lord (qd. he) Then said he, I commaund you to love me, and if that be too harsh a word, I intreate and desire you, to yeeld me love; for that true love I bear you, being such as is grounded upon vertue, and without spot or blemish of dishonours stain, intending nothing that may disagree with your modesty, but to make you my equall, my companion, and my dearly espoused Wife: Therefore do but yeeld to love me, and thou shalt thereby expel many cares from my heart: which otherwise will increase, to my everlasting torment.

Oy my Lord (quoth Dulcia) I beseech you account me one that will endeavour in all duty to deserve that honour you intend me, which I see so many impossibilities to hinder, that it quite discourageth me from the least hope of that felicity. So you will love me, I care not for impossibilities, neither shall any misery alter my constant resolution. With that he embraced her in his armes, who gave a silent consent, intermingled with teares, proceeding from her tender heart: With whom Marcellus stayed some time, spending the time in many friendly conferences, so that Dulcia was constrained by his intreaties, and her own yeelding heart, to give her consent; both their intents being grounded upon no other purpose, but that which was vertuous and honest.

Parismenos being departed from Marcellus, soon arrived at the Maiden Tower, where he alighted: and coming to the Guardians that kept the Gate he saluted them with a courteous behaviour, & told them that he was sent by Maximus their King, to be one of the Guardians: Whom at the first they denyed, then he delivered his letter which they having read accepted him for one of their fellows, without any further doubt or mistrust.

When he had obtained his desire in this with such a prosperous beginning, he began to comfort himself with hope of further good fortune, continuing all that night amongst the rest of the Guardians, and not once offering any behaviour which might breed suspicion: but behaved himself most carefully both

both in all his words and deeds, as he had good reason: For that they were very circumspect, and almost by reason of the strict charge the King had given them, ready to suspect each other. All the next day continued he in that sort, without any meeting of the Eunuchs: But on the third day he met two of them together, in a place most convenient, and saluted them most kindly, who marveling what he should be, for that he was a stranger, began presently to be jealous of him: but he perceiving the same, told them, he had a secret message unto them from the King: and withall a letter under his hand and Signet to the Guardians which he shewed them.

But to you (qd. he) the King hath sent me with this message, that you shall at all times admit me to Angelicaes presence, who you have the custody of, tho unknown to any but your selves, which he told me likewise, he gave me a speciall charge to conceal from the rest of the Guardians, and hath upon the trust he hath reposed in me, given me authority with you to have her custody, The Eunuchs having heard his message, and withall the Kings privy seal to his letter, written in his behalfe, could not chuse but give credence to the same, supposing that none was privy to Angelicaes being there, but the King, that they made no doubt, but that he was sent by him but would not, trust him, untill they had consulted with the rest of their fellows, unto whom he declared the truth of all he had told them who in generall they admitted to their society,

Parismenos thought himself most happy to have attained this felicity: Where likewise he behaved himself most carefully, telling them, he had a message of secreste to declare to her from the King, which they made no doubt of, nor never denyed. When he espied his fittest opportunity, which was when Angelica was walking alone in a private Garden, being all the liberty she had, and the Eunuchs were gone to dispose themselves, and had put him in trust with the key that conducted to her Chamber: he unlocked the doore, and shutting the same againe, he came to her Chamber, where he durst not be so bold as enter before he had knockt.

Anna being alone in the Chamber, hearing one knock, came to the doore and espying *Parisimenos* in armour, with his sword girt to his side (which he never left off, being in every point armed but his head) marvelled what he should be: to whom he said *Faire damozel* marvel not to see me in armour, which shall never offend you, but be still employed in your defence. I have knockt presuming no further without licence, the cause of my coming is to deliver a message unto the Lady *Angelica* from *Marcellus*. All this time Anna had diligently beheld him: persuading her self, she had seen him before, that she made him this answer, Sir Knight if you come from *Marcellus*, you shall be welcome to my Lady, therefore I pray come in, and I will conduct you to the place where she is.

Then she brought him down a pair of staires, into a garden where *Angelica* was. Who sat at the farther end thereof, in a most heavy and discomfortable sort, seeming to be quite given over to sorrow, leaning her elbow upon her knee, and her head upon her hand, with her back towards them, and hearing them coming behind her, with a suddaine start raised her selfe from her seate, where with her heart panted within her, and *Parisimenos* humbling himself upon his knee, said; Oase not divine Lady to behold the Day of sorrow, created to endure everlasting misery, the most worthy Knight *Marcellus* hath sent me hither whose labour hath caused me to be thus bold, who heartily salutes himself to you by me. *Angelica* all this while diligently beheld him, oft changing her countenance, being procured by the diversity of thoughts; for she supposed it should be the knight of Fame, for that he came from *Marcellus*, but he was so mightily altered, that she was in doubt thereof.

As soone as she had ended those few words, she said: Are not you the Knight of Fame? I am the same most deare Lady (quoth he) with that her heart leapt for joy, and she took him most lovingly by the hand, desiring him to arise, saying: I am glad to see you againe, which I feared I should never have done.

Then presently procured by joy for his sight, and griefe  
to

to think of her own bondage, a flood of Christall teares issued from her eyes: Which attainteth his heart with extreme grief, that he stood like a man sencelesse and confounded in his thoughts, and such passions oppressed her heart, that she was scarce able to uphold her self from falling, which caused the water with violence drawn from his manly heart, and in his eyes: Which never before by any accident were absent; and seeing her in that wofull estate, could not chuse but fold his arm with a fearfull touch about her slender waste, to uphold her, whilst Anna ran for some comfortable water to revive her withall: but coming to her self again, she leaned her head in his bosome: who put his hand between her precious temples to keep it from touching his cold and hard Armour, uttering these speeches.

O how unfortunate am I, that by my disquiet have procured you this disquiet; but before he could say more she answered; But were you hence my griefe would be farre greater. It is not your presence hath done this, but my own hearts cares, that are still allotted to be my greatest comfort: But thinke your self most welcome to me and your presence more delightful then any others whatsoever.

Most vertuous Lady (quoth he) your kinnesse is far beyond my desert, that I know my self altogether unable to render sufficient thanks for, which I have been often made acquainted withall, by the worthy *Marcellus*, and now thus kindly ratified by your own heavenly voice: Which yields me that undeserved labour, as shall bind me in all dutifull bonds of service to command.

If (quoth she) I should do otherwise then love you, you might account me discourteous; Or if I should deny my words past to *Marcellus*, (who loveth you so well, that he will I know conceal nothing from you) you might account me untrue: but seeing you have well deserved the one, and are by his means made privy to the other, I cannot now stand upon new terms of denial, but yield my self in all honourable sort into your custody.

Most sweet Lady (quoth he) if I prove not thankfull, Heavens grant my good deeds may be rewarded with ill: if I remaine not everlastingly true, let comfort hate my soule, the earth denounce my body, and terrour afflēt my conscience: if ever I refuse perill, hazard of life, torment, or other misery, for your sake, let all perill, hazard of life, torment and misery, be my chiefest comfort: if my Love continue not constant: my Faith firm, and my thoughts clear of disloyalty, let those I love hate me: let all men abhorre me, and every creature seek my destruction.

Gentle Knight (quoth she) your words I do constantly believe: therefore be you assured of my constant resolution, which is to rest my self wholly upon your virtues, with that they parted so pure a Maiden kisse betwixt them, being the first that ever she had given or received, that both their hearts seemed to interchange the others place, and to part from their loving breasts with a soft breathing sigh, more sweet then if all the united perfumes in the world had been met betwixt their rosiate Lips.

By this time Anna was returned having spent her labour in vain, for that Angelica was safe. When Parisimenos taking her by the arm, led her up unto her lodging, which when he had done, Angelica desired him to declare by what meanes he had attained that liberty to come to her. And he said, I am amongst the rest, one of your keepers: for behold I have the key that alone conducteth to your Lodging: the Eunuchs have put me in trust withall, who are now gone about some recreation they have in hand: then he declared unto her, the truth of all, and of Maximus policy and how he had caused Dalcia to supply her room at the Court who was of every degree taken for her self. Angelica hearing his report, forced a smile from her chearfull heart: which she had not worn many a day before. Desiring him likewise to declare his travels after he had escaped out of the Lyons Denne, which he did in every respect.

When Angelica heard that he was Sonne to Parisimus and Laurana

Laurana whose name resounded in every place, and that he was sprung of two such kingly houses, her heart was filled with exceeding joy: which she expressed by giving him many kind welcomes: uttering these speeches. My dear Knight (quoth she) I rejoyce to hear that you have found your princely parents. But yet I would you had kept the same from my knowledge as yet, because that you might have had tryall of my good will in your unknown estate. In which you were as dear to me, as you shall be if you were the highest Monarch in the world. But how happy shall I be, if I might in quiet enjoy your presence which I know not how you will effect.

Dear Lady (quoth he) there resteth but your consent: which if you vouchsaf to grant, then, I do not doubt but soone to bring you out of this place without any hazard of your person.

O sweet Parisimenos, the thralldom I have long endured, maketh me desirous of liberty, that am almost tyred with conceit of my fathers credulity, too much addicted to vain report: especially relying upon your vertuous disposition, and desirous to be ruled & governed by your wisdom, whom I have chosen for my only delight. I am most willing to do whatsoever you shall command me too resting in assured confidence, that you will no way impair my honour, which I respect more then my life: but rest at my disposition in seeking any other assurance then my promise.

I beseech you (quoth she) let no evil conceit of me take place in your heart, but be assured, that so long as I breathe, I will not err from your command, in the least undutifull respect, but rest so fully & wholly obedient to your behests, that sooner then I will do or think a thought that shall disagree to your desire, this breath shall leave my breast, and my vitall spirits give up their latest gaspe.

After these speeches ended, & Angelicaes mind fully satisfied, they spent some time in familiar conference, intermingled with many kind behaviours, to the further confirmation of both their loves: till at last Parisimenos enforced, in regard of their duties departed to his charge, whither he was come before they were returned, and at their return finding him there, they made

No doubt of him, but took the charge upon them againe, entering into Angelicaes Chamber to provide her such things as are necessary, who because they should not find any alteration, put on her former manner of sadness, which before proceeded from the depth of care, and this she assumed to avoid suspicion. Parismenos went down amongst the rest of the knights that kept the Castle, keeping company sometimes with them and sometimes with the Eunuchs, that neither of them knew of his familiarity with the other, but both accepted him as one of their company, that he had the guarding of the entrance into the Castle, & also the secret keeping of Angelica, with the Eunuchs: neither of them both suspecting his intent.

Thus continued he amongst them some thre daies, in which time he came often to Angelica & had some conference with her, at last his turn came, that he must both watch, with one of the Eunuchs, and also at the Castle entrance, where likewise, but two kept the watch, which fell out according to Parismenos desire, whose heart was much troubled to effect this business, devising how he should be rid of his two fellows, the Eunuch & the other, that kept the entrance, being unwilling to be esteemed a murderer, his hands being never yet guilty of blood: At last his desire to get Angelica from thence overcame that care, and he resolved rather to be their Executioner, then be disappointed of his intent.

When the time that he should take his place to watch was come, and he & the Eunuch was alone, the rest being gone to their lodging Parismenos being in talk with the Eunuch, suddenly muffled him in his Cloake, so close, that none could hear him cry, and thrust his sword quite through him, which he did with such expedition, that his fellows never heard the noise: And taking the key from him, took him under his arme, and hung him into a dark corner of the Tower. When he had done this, he hastened to his other place of charge: where when he came, he found his fellow Watch-man sleeping for him, but fast asleep, with the keyes of the Castle gate lying by him, whom Parismenos caught in his arms, and before he could recover his senses & crye

threw him down from the Battlements into the Lake, where he was drowned.

Which done he went to Angelicaes Chamber, and opening the door, entered in, and found Angelica in her bed fast asleep: who was in mind at the first to have awaked her, but beholding her in so sweet a slumber, and the sweet regard he bare to her would not suffer him to be so bold, until he was by her a good space, being very desirous to awake her, yet fearful to disturb her quiet rest: at last Anna awaked, who continually was her Bedfellow. Who seeing Parismenos in the Chamber at that unreasonable hour, stirring up her self to speak unto him awaked Angelica, who likewise casting her eyes suddenly on him was somewhat afraid of his being there, but he kneeling down at her Bed-side, said: pardon me I beseech you this boldnesse: now is the time that you may depart, and without any let or molestation, for that my self have alone the keeping of the entrance into this Tower,

Angelica hearing his speech, told him she would presently be ready: When Anna suddenly started out of the bed, and apparelled her self. And Parismenos arising withdrew himself. Angelica likewise made such expedition, that she was ready, before Parismenos was awake, having attired her self with most exceeding rich Ornaments. When she came forth unto him, she said: Now my dearest friend let us go when you please: Then he took her by the onarme, and Anna by the other, saying be of good comfort and fear not, for I dare assure you to passe in quiet, After they were out of the Chamber he locked the door again, and took the key with him, and from thence led her down to the Tower gate: and being without fast locked the same again after them,

And being got quite without the compasse of the Tower, Angelicaes heart seemed to leap forth for joy, demanding of him kind words, whether he would convey her, for (quoth she) if I should be taken againe and come to Maximus presence, my torment and grief, would be worse then I am able to expresse, I have (quoth he) a friend not farre hence, in whose house I dare repose



repose any secret, whither I will conduct you with safety: therefore I beseech you be of good comfort, Angellica passing many a weary step before they attained to the end of their journey. When they were come to S. Austines Chappel, Parismenos never left knocking until he had awaked Jabine who marrelling to hear one knock at that time of the night so unluckied for, and coming to the doo, demanded before he would open the same who was there. Parismenos answered good friend Jabine open the doo, here is none but friends, Jabine presently knowing his voice, opened the doo, and let them in, and in all hast lighting a Taper, he came to Parismenos and embraced him, yet not knowing Angellica but supposing it was she, admired her exceeding Beauty, and with humble reverence he desired her to accept of his poor Cell: where Angellica being weary, seated herself upon his Bed being most glad that she was escaped out of the Maiden Tower, and spending some time in conference about their escape, Parismenos at her request declared the manner, how he had freed himself from those that were appointed, to watch with him: whose wisdom Angellica greatly admired. After many of these sweet remembrances past between them Angellica and Anna fell both fast asleep, being wearied with travail: which Parismenos and Jabine seeing departed into the Chappell to confer about their security: Where we will leave them and speak of the Guardians.

## CHAP. XXIII.

How *Maximus* had knowledge of *Angellica*'s escape, How *Marcellus* with *Dulcia* fled from the Court at Ephesus. And how *Marcellus* in portellus armour came to S. Austins Chappell. And how *Parismus* sent *Portellus* into Bohemia,

**N**ext morning: the Eunuches, according to their wonted manner, came to the place where they thought to have found their fellows, but missing both first marbeling thereat: afterwards conceiving the worst, being apt to suspicion, knockt at Angellica's

lieas Chamber doo, but none made answer: which doo'd them into an exceeding perplexity of feare, then they began altogether to study what this might meane, and going downe they espyed their fellows lye dead before them: whom Parismenos had cast there, that Angellica might not see him: which ghastly sight affrighted them with deadly feare: that with an exceeding outcry they ran down to the Knights that kept the entrance: who marrelling at their sorrow, inquired the cause thereof: who declared how they found one of their fellows slain, and the Knight that *Maximus* had lately sent was missing. He (quod the Knights) hath the keeping of the entrance: but notwithstanding, some of them fearing the worst ran thither, where they found neither him nor the other Knight, that was appointed to watch with him, nor the keyes of the Tower gate. With which newes they returned back to the rest of their fellows, who by this time came altogether.

At which newes one of them said: I see no such cause of sorrow. With that one of the Eunuches said, you know not what we have lost, we are all undone: we shall be hanged, if *Maximus* hear thereof, we have lost Angellica, with that the Knights burst into a laughter. Oh (quoth the Eunuches) laugh not at that which will bring us all to sorrow, we have lost Angellica, whose custody we had, though unknown to you: which the King commanded us to keep from your knowledge, for that he had given out report that she was departed with him, whom I fear me the strange Knight that late arrived here hath carried her away from us all. The Knights hearing his words, were exceedingly amazed thereat, which they were assured was true, by the rest of their fellows. Then going altogether up to Angellica's chamber, and breaking open the doo, they found her not, but well perceived that she was gone away. Then began the Eunuches to roare and cry out like mad men, & the Knights ran up and down like men transformed into amazement: at last, with much ado they opened the Gate, finding the draw bridge let down, and some of them having horse within the Tower, posted every way about the Country, making very diligent

search and enquire after them, and many of them met with Jabine, who answered them that he saw none such whom they credited, for that he was of a man of Religion, which were of most high estimation of every one of these countries, that they esteemed every word that pass their lippes as true Oracles: by which means Parismenos and Angelica were as safe in his custody as could be devised.

Jabine seeing such a number of Knights abroad, returned with that newes to his Cell, which drove Angelica into some feare and disquiet; but Jabine by his comfortable assurances expelled the same from her hart, by telling her, that if all the world were in search of them, yet they would never suspect that place. The Eunuches soon got out of the tower, and fled for fear of Maximus his fury, every man which way he thought best for his own safety. One of the Knights posted with all speed to the Court, and coming into Maximus presence declared the whole circumstance of this tragical event.

Which when Maximus heard he tore his hair, stamped on the earth, raged and railed most exceedingly, calling all the Nobles and Knights of his Court together, commanding them in all hast to arm themselves presently, and be in readiness to go with him, and to stay for him at the Court gate: then might you see Noblemen making hast, some one way some another, some calling for the rest of their Armour, having the one half on, and the other out of readinesse: some in Harneſſe ready mounted, others at every point armed, calling for their Steedes, some ready mounting half unarmed, Knights running this way, servants that way, all stirring and making unwonted haste, and every one in a hurry-hurry.

By this time came Maximus ready mounted, guiding his Spurs into his Steedes side for hast: who was ready to make speed without spurring, commanding his knights to follow him: who hastned after him, not knowing why they made such speed, the Nobles wondered at this newes, some for fear of their husbands harm, for they thought some enemies were approached which might endanger their persons, admitting this strange accident;

hent: some bemoaning the absence of their lovers: all in a wonderfull extasie, the Queen she sate weeping for the losse of her daughter which the King had told her of.

Marcellus he only rejoiced, for that he supposed Parismenos had carried from thence Angelica. Maximus with all hast arrived at the Maiden Tower, where he heard the truth of all, and saw the Eunuch that was slain, and withall, was terrified in what manner the strange knight came, & how that he brought with him a letter signed with his proper Signet.

When Maximus heard this, he grew presently into a passion that it was the unknowne knight that had done that exploit, and carryed away Angelica: then he called for the letter which one of those knights (by ill fortune more careful then the rest, had demanded of Parismenos, after he had shewn the same to the Eunuches as aforesaid) delivered unto him, which when Maximus saw he presently knew that it was Marcellus his hand which caused his eyes to swell with rage, and for that the night was come, he rested in the Tower, commanding and desiring his Noblemen and Knights to post throughout all the country to find Angelica, commanding two of the chiefeſt of his Noblemen early the next morning to post unto the Court, and apprehend Marcellus as a traitor, for conspiring with a stranger to betray his life.

Thus, on a sudden, was all the country spread over with knights, who left no place without of likelihood to harbour them, only Jabines Cell they suspected not, which was so near the Maiden Tower, and withall a place of Holinesse and Religion dedicated to St. Austine whom they worshipped: that of all other places none of the thought they should be there; in which quest they continued very earnest all that night.

As soon as Marcellus saw all the knights & Nobles departed, and all the Court in an uprore, now fearing that if Maximus should see the letter he had given Parismenos, he would know his hand: when all were in an exceeding uprore, he came to Dulcia in great hast, and told her all that had befallen, telling her that he must for a time leave her: so he knew that his

ther would upon sight of the letter be so much incensed against him, that it was meer fondnesse in him to abide his fury: with that Dulciaes heart panted with grief, and her eyes melted into tears, beseeching him most humbly upon her knees, that he would not leave her behind, whose life would be worse then death without his presence: for my Lord (qd. she) if you will vouchsafe me this favour, I will never forsake you for feare of any misery, perill, or torment.

Marcellus took her up with a kind kisse, telling her, that he was most exceedingly glad that she would go with him, being the only thing he desired in the world. Then (qd. Dulcia) tell me what I shall do, and I will do it presently. Quoth he, whilst I hold the Ladies in a talk, whose wits are now troubled, disguise your self, and slip out amongst them, and goe to Panoraes house, and there stay for me. Dulcia then presently cast off her uppermost garment, and put on some of the Ladies as she next found, and locking fast her chamber doore, went through amongst the thickest of them: who seeing her lock the doore, took her for one of their fellows, that had brought Angelica so bad, and so let her passe without suspicion.

Dulcia was no sooner done these staires, but she hastened with all speed untill she was without the Court gate, and from thence came to Panoraes house, where she was let in by Panora, whom she told, that Marcellus had sent her thither, and would himself be there presently. Panora for his sake, gave her kind entertainment. Marcellus seeing all things fall out thus prosperously, and Dulcia pass by, which he noted, he left the Ladies, and presently went to his Chamber, and arming himselfe in some of the German Knights Armour, having none of his own, and went to Panoraes house, where he found Dulcia, and caught her in his armes with a loving embrace: and being all three together, he declared to Panora all that had happened, both to himselfe, Angelica, and Dulcia, & that the knight that lodged in her house was the knight of fame, Parismenos: withall requesting her secretly and ayde, to conceale Dulcia from all knowledge of her being there, where himselfe stayed all that Night: And

And the next day spending his time in much pleasure and kind sport with Dulcia, whom he loved most exceedingly, but without any blenish or thought of intemperance.

Early the next morning came the two Nobles from Maximus to arrest Marcellus, thinking to have found him there, but coming to his Chamber, he was not there nor in all the Court to be found. Which caused an other tumult for his absence, that all had their minds so busied with conceits of meditation why he should be fled, that they were all in a second amazement therewith, though none as yet knowing why he was fled, nor knowing what offence he had committed: the Queen likewise made heart sorrow for his mishap. This newes being come to the Ladies that attended Dulcia instead of Angelica, who thought to carry the report of this newes to Angelica, but enquiring for the key of her Chamber, could not hear of it: for every one made answer they had it not, then began a controversy amongst them, enquiring who it was that came out last, but the truth thereof they could not learn, that they began to suspect each other, and that she that had the key had lost the same, and would not be known thereof: but at last they began to knock, first softly, and then hard: but none made answer, which drove them all into an extreme perplexity, and with much ado, to rid themselves of that fear, they got open the doore, where at their coming they could not find Angelica, but found some of her Ornaments cast in the midst of the floor, that with wringing their hands, tearing their hair, and rending their Ornaments, they made such an outcry and exclamation, that all the Court rung thereof: which caused the Queen, the Nobles, and almost the whole Court gather to that place, where the Queen being come, and knowing the cause of their sorrow, sat down amongst them oppressed with care and uttered these speeches: Hence, peace, give over this vain lamentation, for you know not for whom I mourn, it was not Angelica you had the custody of, therefore cease your lamentation, and give me leave to mourne, that have just cause: who am a party of all these woes, that at once have lost the company of both my dear children, and all procured by Maximus misdeed, who

who left Angelica in the Warden Tower, who is come from thence, and now my Son Marcellus with Dulcia is likewise fled. Aye me, what sorrow is this? Whose grief may be company to mine? Was ever any so miserable as I am made, that at one instant have lost my comfort, my Children, my joyes, & delight? Which that such passions of grief overwhelmed her heart, that her speech abruptly brake off, and more she would have said, but could not, that the Ladies took her up, being faine into a deadly trance, and conveyed her to her bed.

Thus was the whole Court and City repleat with care, every one uttering their lances, the younger accusing Maximus of cruelty, alleging that he was cause of those cares: the elder condemning the two young Princes of lewdnesse and lightnesse, that would enter into these actions without their Parents consent. And the two Noblemen returned again to Maximus with these newes, which added new cares to his troubled head, that Angelicaes escape did not so much grieve him, as that Marcellus should be both ador in her escape, and also would make so hase a choice of Dulcia, with whom at were assured he was fled, neither did all these so much vex him, as that he was disappointed of means to revenge these wrongs.

Maximus continued many dayes in the Warden Tower: calling together all the Knights of the Land, commanding them to make all diligent search, and to appoint some that should stay in every place of the Countrey, and examine every Passenger, for that his mind gave him, Angelica and Marcellus were with in Gerulia: This business was so speedily and exactly performed, that it was impossible for them to escape without being discovered.

Marcellus the next night after the tumults, having by many persuasions and intreaties won Dulcia to stay with Panora, and with promise of his speedy returne, armed himselfe in the Armour he had gotten, and departed from thence, with intent to go to S. Austines Chappell, where he was sure he should hear of Parismenos, and by the way met with many of the Gerulian Knights, who knew him not by his Armour, took him to be a Gerulian

Gerulian Knight called Portellus, whose Armour Marcellus had put on: this Portellus was a Knight of the Kings Court, who not long since was departed into Lybia, without the knowledge of any but Marcellus, who had sent him to view Venolacs beauty, and to learn if he could the original of that accusation that was laid against the Knight of Fame, in whose Armour Marcellus without suspicion, being taken for Portellus.

Early the next morning he arrived at S. Austines Chappell, where he would neither knock nor enter, untill hee was sure there was none to descry him. When Jabin saw him his heart was tormented with fear, demanding what he would have.

Fear not Jabin (quod he) I am your friend Marcellus, with that he entered into the chappel, whom Jabin would not suffer to goe further, untill he had seen his face, which when he beheld, hee embraced him most lovingly, & without speaking a word brought him into his Cell where was Parismenos, Angelica, & Anna, who all at once beholding him, and he them, embraced each other being so glad they had met, that Angelica wept for joy, Parismenos sarfitted with delight, and Marcellus heart was filled with exceeding content: when these stormes of joy were past and somewhat calmed, Marcellus declared to them all what had hapned, and how that Maximus had set most diligent Spies in every corner of the Countrey, and withall, declared the cause why he was fled, the manner, and with whom, his love to Dulcia how he had left her with Panora, and how happily hee had passed unsuspected in Portellus his Armour. Which when they heard they all applauded and rejoiced at his fortunate success: to whom Angelica said with a merry countenance; Dulcia hath lost nothing by assuming my Name and habite, but thereby hath won a constant Knights love, and may hereafter by that means come to be a Queen.

Indeed Marcellus, whatsoever others may say, I perswade and assure my self you have gotten a vertuous, beautiful, chaste, kind, and loving Ladies love, whose good parts I have often commended in my secret thoughts, but now am glad that I have an opportunity to speak of them in your hearing: what though

She be not of blingly race, her vertues are such, as may beset the best Lady in the world.

Marcellus was glad to hear Angellica, so much commend his belov'd Dulcia: that he said: indeed after I have chosen Dulci, I love her, and will hereafter prove true to her: for her beauty, vertue, and good parts do please me so much that if I live to enjoy the Gerulian Crown, she shall be my Queen: withal I am glad you have met your knight of whose company I am sure you are not a little glad. With that Angellica blusht, and he said: nay after blush not, for he hath better deserved your love, then Dulcia hath mine.

In these and such like communications they spent the rest of that day, studying and devising what might be their best course to take in their troublesome affaires.

After that Marcellus had stayed some time with Parismenos and Angellica in St. Austines Chappell he departed again in Portellus armour towards Dulcia, where he arrived to her exceeding comfort without suspicion, wishing that he had been with Angellica, that he might have enjoyed both her and their company together.

After Marcellus was departed, Parismenos and Angellica began to study which way they might escape Maximus his cruelty, being both desirous to go into Bohemia, but they knew not how to passe without being discovered, for that the King still continued his diligent search: and besides, if that let had not been, yet the journey was so long and dangerous that Parismenos was unwilling to endanger her person and health thereby, that he was drawn to an exceeding astonishment, what were best to be done: that being unwilling of themselves what to determine on, they asked old Iabins counsell, who presently told them, that if they liked his simple fare, and that homely cell, where though they were not daintily served, yet they were quiet, that he thought it their best course to stay there still, untill Maximus were out of hope to find them, and had given over his search, or at the least untill Marcellus were returned, whose counsell they both allowed and followed.

Maximus

Maximus still remained in the Golden Tower, freshing his heart with vexation and grief, being put out of all comfort by his knights, that daily returned without any news, that in the end he was so ryled with grief and fared like one in a desperate estate but by counsel of his Nobles, after much trouble and long search, he returned to the Court where the Queen was, to comfort her: who at his coming he found very sick, and in very weak estate, being procured by the grief she had conceived for her Childreus losse. Maximus seeing her in that dangerous estate began to comfort her with many persuasions: but she was so impatient and so full of grief, that she uttered these speeches. Comfort my Lord commeth now out of season, when our griefs are past remedy, which you might have solved when time served: it is your curiosity and too long suspect that hath bred these mischances, you give too much credit to that foul enchantresse, speeches, which your self desire to prove true, or else you would not take those cruell courses you have done with your Children might you not often have married Angellica according to your desire, to many honourable and great personages, what if she be now married, can that endanger your life, unless you will be the willfull Actor thereof your self; But by your severity you have done this which is now impossible to be remedied.

Maximus his heart at these speeches began to melt with lenity, and his conscience began to condemn himself, that now he repented the severity he had used, and accused himself of folly to give such credit to the enchantresse speeches, that he protested if he had his children again he would not restrain them so much of their liberty but that he would let them make choise according to their own fancies: and in this heavy estate we will leave him: devising what meanes to work by gentlenesse to call them home again.

Marcellus all this while continued with Dulcia in Lady Panoraes house, and now hearing that Maximus was returned from the Golden Tower and had given over search, as hopelesse to find either Angellica or him, he determined to convey Dulcia to St. Austins Chappell, for that Panoraes House was the

near



near the Court, and there they might by ill fortune be discovered, that with this resolution he came to Dulcia, and made her acquainted with his purpose, whom he knew would be wholly ruled by him: He did the like to Panora: and the next night he caused Dulcia somewhat to disguise herself, and meet him at *St. Martins Gate* where he would stay for her: For that if he should carry a Lady behind him through the City, he thought he should have been suspected. Dulcia met warily and carefully executed his business, which fell out so happily and fortunately, that according to both their desires, and Marcellus appointment, they met at the Gate, And Marcellus having mounted her behind him with a joyful heart, rode towards the Chappel, where according to his desire he arrived: which brought no little joy to Parisimenos here, that at the first with many courteous embracings: afterwards with pleasant conference they entertained the delightful content of enjoying each others presence. Iabines Cell was now so full of Guests, that it could scarce contain them, that if they had stayed there longer, it would have been more like a prison than a place of content.

It hapned the next morning; that Iabine went to make provision for his Guests and by the way met with Portellus, who was lately returned from Lybia: and coming to the Court, and not finding Marcellus whom he loved most dearly, he wandered in a solitary sad, and heavy disposition, up and downe all the day long and that night: and now espying old Jabin, he came to him, and knowing him said: Jabin, the time hath been, when Getulia excelled in Royalty; but now all things is turned upside down, Marcellus was wont to keep your company, but now no man knoweth where he is: would I were but with him, then my cares would be past. (By *qd. Jabin*) what is your name that knowes me, are desirous to find Marcellus. (By *nam. qd. he*) Is Portellus, Jabin hearing his name, well remembred that he had often heard Marcellus desire that he were with him, said or tellus come along with me, and I will bring you to one that can tell you where Marcellus is: with that they departed backe to the Chappell, where Iabin entred and told Marcellus that Portellus was withont: who hearing his speeches, ran unto him, and

and embraced him, and brought him in, whom Angelica likewise knew and welcomed. Then Parisimenos, Marcellus, and Portellus giving no delay to the necessity of time and business they had in hand, began to consult what to doe, where every one gave their severall opinions, but could agree upon nothing: At last, they called Iabine to their counsell, whose wisdom had much availed them: who presently having such a determination in his minde before, counselled them to send Portellus into Bohemia, with Letters from Parisimenos unto his father, to request his ayde and to send a band of Souldiers, to defend him from Maximus cruelty.

This counsell was exceedingly well liked of all: especially Portellus was exceedingly willing to goe about that business: that presently furnishing himself with horse and armor, having a Letter to that effect from Parisimenos, and the Jewell which Laurana knew him by, which he desired Portellus to deliver unto his Mother, as an assured token that he came from him. He hastned with all speed about his business, and soone arrived in Bohemia, and delivered the Letter and the Jewell unto Laurana. The newes of Portellus coming was soone knowne in the Court, and the cause why he came: which when the Nobles and Commons heard, Parisimus needed not master up men: For every one were desirous to be imployed, and came voluntary, and offered their service, accounting it a dishonour to be refused and within a short space, there were gathered together of Nobles, Knights and Gentlemen, a great number, and to them Parisimus added so many that there were twenty thousand hoysmen in a readines, under the conduct of Pollipus, who was most desirous of that honour, and had gotten Violettaes consent: who withall had marched towards Getulia. Parisimus then gathered together an Army of fifty thousand expert Souldiers, under his conduct and Tellamors, who was but lately arrived at the Bohemian Court with Clarina.

## CHAP. XXV.

How *Maximus* found out *Angelica* with the rest at *S. Austins* Chappell, and banisht *Marcellus*, imprisoned *Angelica* and *Dulcia*, and cast *Parismenos* into a deepe Dungeon condemned to be burnt, where he was ready to be famisht. And afterwards escaped and met with *Pollipus*.



While these things were acting in Bohemia, *Parismenos*, with *Angelica*, and *Marcellus* with his sweet love *Dulcia*, remained in great safety & content, being void of fear to be now discised: seeing they had remained there in safety in all those troubles, and being pent within a little *Rome*, were desirous of some Recreation and in an Evening when they thought none were stirring, they went out of the Cell into a sweet Grove, hard adjoyning therunto: Where they walked up and downe, and at last *Parismenos* taking *Angelica* aside unto a pleasant bank, bedeckt with many sweet Summer flowers and *Marcellus* likewise *Dulcia*, rested themselves not far from them, recreating themselves with sweet embracings.

*Parismenos* had no sooner seated himself, but *Angelica* sat down on his left knee, clasping her right arme about his neck, with a kind and sweet gesture, having her other in his manly bosome, which was unbuttoned by reason of the heate: First making many kisses a Prologue to her speech then she said, My loving Kt. how happy should we be, if we were in *Bohemia*, from the suspition of my father: and how great should our pleasure be, if we might enjoy this happines without fear: but since we can not attain that blessednes: but are hindered from it by many dangers, let us rejoyce each in others company, which I account a joy without compare: & a felicity exceeding all felicities, most vertuous, kind, & dear lady (qu. she) how much fortunate am I to enjoy such exceeding favout as you vouchsafe me without the least merit, that have refused no danger for my sake that have forsaken your parents favour to yeild me comfort: &

most of

of all, that are contented, may rather pleased with the fearfull and solitary estate of my unworthy sake, that have never been meritorious, and that can never recompence such exceeding kindness, *Parismenos* (quoth she) misery with your company is my pleasure: solitarinesse when I enjoy you is more pleasant then all the delightfull pleasures in Kings Courts: and without it, I account my pleasure pain, all company tedious, and all pomp exceeding penury. In these and many other such like speeches sweet embracings, & superabundant overflowing of sweet content, they recreated themselves until old *Jabin* came to them and they departed together to his Cell.

Now it happened according to the unfortunate resolution of hard Destiny that one of the Eunuchs that before was *Angelicaes* keeper being fled from the *Spalden* Tower, after *Angelica* was missing for fear of *Maximus* displeasure, which he knew well could be no less then death, was hidden in that Wood, where he ever since his flight observed him, living upon such food as the place yielded, which was wild fruit and by most subtil fortune lay close in a heap of thick bushes, and heard *Parismenos* and *Angelicaes* speeches, and knew them, and at their departure secretly followed them unto *S. Aust. Chappel* where after he had seen them enter, with all speed that might be, he hied towards the City: and in the morning got thither, whereat the first he was admitted *Maximus* presents to whom he declared how that *Angelica* was at *S. Austins* Chappel where *Jabin* was present, relating the whole truth of all that he had seen and heard.

*Maximus* perceived by his speeches that it was the unknown knight that was with her, which very thought kindled new sparks of ire in his breast, which before he had calmed: that in monstrous rage, he vowed that if ever he caught that unknown Knight to be rebenged on him with severity. Then presently he assembled all the Nobles, Peers, & Knights together again, commanding them with all speed to be ready to go with him, not making the cause known to any: who with all speed buckled on their armour, and at his coming down departed with him, who hasted with all speed towards *S. Aust. Chappel* where he arri-

bed with more then ordinary speed, Angelica at the very instant of their arrival, was faine into a slumber, and dreamed that her Father Maximus had compassed the Chappel with armed men, wherewith her sences were so affrighted, that she suddainly started from the place where she lay, and with a suddain shriek leapt to Parismenos, and caught him in her armes. Parismenos marrelling, and being amazed at her suddain cry, demanded what she ayed, which for fear she could not utter: that he half astonisht, ran to his armour, and armed himself therewith, clapping his bright sword in his hand: which he had no sooner done, but he heard one knock at the Chappel door: which made him know that it was not labin, and looking out at the window, he saw thousands of Getulians in armes, which so appalled his senses, that he was ready to fall down dead. Angelica seeing his suddain sadnesse, likewise stepping up to the window, beheld the Souldiers without, that she fell down with grief: which Dulcia seeing, she with Anna tooks her up, and carryed her into the cell. When Parismenos opened the door, & the Getulian knights offered to enter, but Parismenos setting himself in the door, with his sword point bent against them, told them, that whosoever entred first should die.

With that Maximus asked him what he was, I am (quoth he) inferiour to none, and therefore as good as any. Art thou Marcellus? I am not Marcellus (quoth he) but his friend. Well me what thou art (quoth Maximus) or I hope thou shalt dye, Maximus (quoth he) I am sonne to Parismus of Bohemia, my name Parismenos sometime called the unknown Knight, Maximus hearing his speeches, wondered at them & said, Is not Angelica with you? Yes (quoth he) both Angelica and Marcellus are within. Deliver them (quoth Maximus) to me I will, go, he upon condition you will take them into favour, and remit all former displeasure you have taken against them: and grant me Angelica in marriage: otherwise I stand here to defend them from all the force of Getulia.

Maximus was so enticed with his speeches, that he answered, What madnesse doth possesse thy mind, that standest upon such tearms of resistance, when thou seest thousands of Armed

soul.

Souldiers to encompass thy life, thinkest thou with boasting speeches to avoid my displeasure, and disapoint my revenge: no, wert thou the greatest Potentate in the world, thou couldst not escape my hands: with that, he commanded his knights to apprehend him by force; who presently began to enter upon him, but he (by reason of the narrownesse of the way) stood in his own defence, and slew the first that came; and after him another, and behaved himself so courageously, that which of them first entred, first dyed: and had they all assayed to enter that way, hee would have slain them all. Marcellus seeing what mischief this slaughter might breed, kept between Parismenos and the Getulians, who knowing him, would not offer a blow at him, whilst he spake to Parismenos, desiring him to be ruled by him: who likewise considered that in this extremity it was best to yield, for there was no hope of escape, therefore he agreed to be according to his direction. Marcellus then upon his knee submitted himself to his father. By this time the Getulians had beate down a great part of the chappel, and rushed violently upon Parismenos, who disdaining to be forced to yield, before they could overcome him, sent many of their ghosts to hell; but in the end by their multitude, he was so thronged, that he could not lift his arms to strike another blow, and so was constrained to yield whom Maximus commanded to be first bound. Angelica seeing this, with weeping eyes humbled her self upon her knees to her father, and said; I beseech your Majesty use that Knight honourably, on whose safety my life dependeth. More she would have said, but Maximus cut her off with these speeches: Poor, shamelesse, and disobedient creature, pleadest thou for him, and not rather for pardon for thy owne shamelesse deedes? hold thy tongue, for I will not hear thee speak a word more, with that he commanded them all to be apprehended, and so he departed with them to the Court, first imprisoning Parismenos, and loading him with bolts and fetters of Iron, cast him into a most loathsome stinking, and darksome Dungeon Angelica he caused likewise to be disrobed of her ornaments, and cast into prison with Anna and Dulcia, untill they had more leisure to determine of them.

Marcellus at the instant intreaties of the *Queene* and *Peo-  
bles*, he did not imprison, but with many rebukes and reproa-  
ches banish him his presence: bowing, if that ever he came in  
his sight, he should lose his head.

No rehearse all the severall complaints *Angelica* and *Dolcia*  
made, would be tedious to recount, and too grievous to recite,  
for they were such, as would force salt tears from tyrants eyes,  
pierce the stony Rocks, and mollifie the hardened hearts of the  
most rude, cruell, barbarous, and inhumane sponsters in the  
world, being hardly vied, scantily visted, and badly lodged: that  
*Maximus* often hearing their plaints, pittied their laments;  
yet therewith was drawn to more severity then any way mol-  
lified.

[*Parismenos* misery likewise was nothing inferiour to theirs,  
or rather ten times worse, being alone (they having the benefit  
of each others company, which is a great comfort in misery)  
without light. for the Vault or Dungeon whereinto he was  
thrust had not so much as a crevice, where through any light  
appeared, being large and wide, far from any company, that he  
could not hear any creatures voices, having but once a day food,  
which was bread and water, and of that so little, that it would  
scarce preserve life: clogg and overladen with the bardenous  
weight of chains and bolts: in which sort he continued many  
days without hope ever to escape from that place: Where you  
may suppose his cares were great, and his comforts small.

Many dayes being past, *Maximus* assembled all his *Peo-  
ples* and *Estates* of the Country together, to determine what  
to be with *Parismenos*, against whom many accusations were  
laid, which tended to breach of their *Lawes*, especially that of  
*Angelicaes* Rape, which was amongst them punished with  
death, and that so severely, as that none escaped; whom the King  
in open audience condemned to dye the same death that their  
*Laws* yielded, which was to be burnt.

*Dolcia* likewise they condemned to perpetual imprisonment;  
but for the Kings children, by the *Lawes*, they were to stand at  
their Parents disposition.

This newes was soone conveyed to *Marcellus* knowledge  
which

which struck an exceeding torment to his heart: which rather  
then he would endure to see, he would execute his owne death  
desperately to save his friend, that he feared like a *Spad-man*,  
and wheresoever he came, hee made those that beheld him won-  
der, to see him so altered in gesture, and so suddenly, that hee  
quite forsook the Court, and remained in *Lady Panoraes* house  
so secretly, that none knew what was become of him.

*Parismenos* having continued many dayes in the loathsome  
dungeon, marvelling that he could hear no news from *Angeli-  
ca* and also that *Marcellus* had forgotten to yield him comfort  
in his greatest extremity, thought that they were either impris-  
oned, or else that the King in his fury had executed some cruell  
revenge upon them. These cares on the one side were sufficient  
torments, and his hard imprisonment and cruell blage on the  
other side enough to kill the stoutest heart, that had he not been  
preserved by admirable strange operation, he could never have  
endured these calamities: at last he began to despair of all hope  
and suddenly to recall his senses, and with more comfort study  
how to release himself, and amongst many thousand of devises  
which came into his fancy, he devised how to entice the keeper  
into the dungeon, which he thus contrived. The next time the  
*Jaylor* came to bring him his usuall Diet, he fained himselfe  
exceedingly sick, and groaned, as though he had gasped for his  
last breath. The *Jaylor* hearing him make such moane, asked  
him what he ayed. To whom *Parismenos* said: Good *Jaylor*,  
the date of my life is now at an end, so that I never look to see  
the day light again, being of all men most unfortunate, to end  
my wretched life in this place, that might have lived in great  
dignity in mine own country: but now past hope of comfort,  
only to thee am I able to do good before I die, I have good  
store of gold and jewels about me, which I will give unto thee  
if thou wilt but do thy endeavour to save my life, for that I am  
yet in hope of his mercy; and withall, I will declare unto thee,  
where thou shalt have more riches, then ever thou wilt be able  
to spend: All this will I do for thee if thou wilt helpe me out of  
this miserable life, and yeeld me some of thy help, for that I  
am fallen, and am not able to rise.

Many other persuasions *Parismenos* used, which wrought so effectually with the *Jaylor*, that enticed with hope of finding Wealth and past fear of him that was so weak, he opened the Dungeon without any fear or doubt being therein guided by the Divine providence) and came to *Parismenos*: Who no sooner saw him within reach of his armes (retaining a most manly courage notwithstanding his weaknesse) gathering all his strength together, caught hold on him, and overthrew him, and getting upon him with swift crawling, for that he was not able to stand by reason of his Bolts, and having him under him, never left strugling and striving with him untill he had strangled him.

Then taking the bunch of keys up he loosened and unlocked all the Bolts that were fastened to his Legges Neck, & other parts of his body. Which when he had done, prostrating himself upon his knees, he praised God for that happy successe: Then presently without delay, he stripped of all the *Jalors* apparel, and apparelled himself therewith, adding his body into the further end of the Dungeon, and so went out, and locked the Dungeon door after him.

By this time it began to be dark, which was a means to further him in his escape, inasmuch that in the *Jalors* apparel he went into the Court with the keys at his girdle, and the *Jalors* Hauchion, which he continually wore about him, and met with others, passing by him without suspicion, and from thence he got out at the Court gates being of every one taken for the *Jalor*.

And being without the Court, he never stayed untill he was out of the City, flinging the keys into a poole of water hard without the City gates, and took his journey directly to *S. Antioches* Chappel, thinking there to find *Jabin*, whom the king had mist, for that he was not in the Cell, when *Maximus* had apprehended *Parismenos*. Early on the next morning he arrived there, where at his coming, he found an army of horsemen, that spread all the fields with their troops and presently he knew them to be *Bohemians*, some of them espying him, taking him to be a spy, carried him before *Pollipus*, who was their general.

*Paris*

*Parismenos* being come before *Pollipus*, was by him strictly examined, to whom he said. Wherefore have you brought this Army into *Getulia*? *With* (qd. *Pollipus*) hast thou not heard how *Parismenos* is imprisoned by *Maximus* wrongfully? and moreover, hath judged him to a vile & shameful death, which he is to suffer 6 dayes hence? *Parismenos* hearing his speeches marvelled how he should come to the knowledge of that news which old *Jabin* had told them. *With* that he said, *Parismenos* is not in prison, but is now at liberty, which I came to give you knowledge of, for whom you need not take more care. *Ullain* (qd. *Pollipus*) what sayest thou, is *Parismenos* dead? *With* that his colour began to go and come, and his heart was exceedingly tormented. *Parismenos* then discovered himself, whom *Pollipus* espying, caught him in his armes with a fervent embrace, the rest of the knights thronging about him with exceeding joy.

This newes was soon spread through the whole Camp, who flung by their staves, some their Helms, and every one something, yielding forth many a shout for joy, then presently commandement (intermingled with kind intreaty was given) that none should upon any occasion whatsoever, discover *Parismenos* being among them: being assured of the truth of his escape by his own report.

#### CHAP. XXVI.

How *Pollipus* besieged the City of *Ephesus*, and of the Battell fought with the *Natolians*. How *Maximus* recalled *Marcellus* from banishment, banished *Dulcia*, released *Angelica* out of prison, and sent for ayd from *Barbary* and *Lybia*.



*Parismenos* being thus fortunately escaped from out of prison, and met with *Pollipus*, got him armor, whereby he might easily be known from the rest of the *Bohemians*, and yet not be known who he was, and presently without any delay, he and *Pollipus* marched with their Troops to the City of *Ephesus*,



and begit the same round. Maximus taking this city begit with soldiers, sent out a Herald to know what they were, who brought him word they were Bohemians that were come to redeem *Parismenos*, and to revenge the injuries he had done him upon false reports of the King of *Lybia*.

Maximus hearing that, commanded an Army of twice as many *Natolians* as there were Bohemians, to be gathered together under the conduct of *D. Pridamor*, a valiant and resolute Noble man, who according to his valour at the first approach entered battel with the Bohemians, being men of good experience and expert Soldiers, as little esteemed the *Natolians*, as if they themselves had the odds.

*Parismenos* now thought it time to bestir himself to work revenge, and to make proof of his valour, and being gallantly mounted, he couched spear at a *Natolian* Knight, & pierced the same quite through his body: which done, he drew his sword, & met another with so full a blow, that he tumbled from his horse and was troden to death: another with violence he thrust quite through; the fourth lost his arm: and in this sort he entered into the thickest of them, spending never a blow in wast: but either a *Natolian* lost his life, or some part of his body thereby: that on a sudden the Bohemians had disrankt the *Natolians*, and the Horsemen made an exceeding slaughter amongst them.

By this time *Parismenos* was come into the main Battell, where he met with *Pridamor* mounted upon a white Steed, his Caparisons of beaten gold all beset with pearls and precious Stones, his armor of the richest workmanship, with a Plume of spangled feathers in his Crest, who had vowed to satiate his proud mind with Bohemians blood: at whom *Parismenos* ran, having gotten a spear, and contrary to his expectation *Parismenos* facile encounter, turned his heels upward, and he fell backwards from off his horse almost stricken with his furniture at which the Bohemians gave an exceeding great shout to see *Parismenos* valour: All this time *Pollipus* was not idle, but shewed such exceeding tokens of his valor, that all that beheld them thought there could not be two more valiant Knights in all the world.

After

After *Pridamor* had recovered horse, he kept his band of soldiers more warily in order, and seeing what slaughter the Bohemians had made, sounded a retreat, whilst the Bohemians pursued them even unto their Campe, and slew such a great number, that all the earth was strewd with dead bodies. The Bohemians likewise with joyfull hearts returned to their Tents, growing into such admired estimation of *Parismenos*, that they determined not to leave the least part of his desire unperformed though they atchieved the same with extreme perill and hazard of their lives.

Maximus and the Queen all this while stood and beheld the battell, marvelling what two knights they were, that made such havoc amongst his subjects, that he was exceedingly enraged to see so much of his Country blood shed: that departing downe he assembled all his Councel together, asking their advice and aid in this extremity. Who at the last won him to condescend to these conditions.

That *Marcellus* banishment should be repealed, and that *Dulcia* should be banished and sent out of the city, and that upon pain of death none should succour her; that *Angelica* should be released from prison, and restored to his liberty: that he should send into *Lybia* for the Kings aid against the Bohemians, the quarrell being partly his; that he should send his Ambassadors to the King of *Barbary*, to crave his assistance against the Bohemians.

Which Articles Maximus agreed unto, rather then he would mitigate his ire, and send back *Parismenos* in safety, which his Nobles earnestly required. Then was *Marcellus* banishment repealed, *Angelica* released out of prison, Messengers sent into *Lybia*, Ambassadors into *Barbary*, and *Dulcia* presently taken out of prison, disrobed of her attires, and clad in base and unseemly weeds, and so in an evening turned out at the City gates, in a most poor and miserable estate.

When she saw her self thus used, and knew that commandment was given, that none upon pain of death should succour her, she then thought her estate was miserable, and more wretched.

ched then when she was in prison, whereas yet *Marcellus* knew of her being; but now in this poor estate she (without doubt) should be hated of all, despised, rejected & for want of food famished; yea, and forsaken of *Marcellus*.

When she began to study which way to redeem those evils, wherein she saw nothing but impossibilities: for she thought if she should be taken by the *Natolian* Soldiers, they would use her as a cast away, and not pity her, but rather seek her dishonour, when she was left without means of revenge: and for to seek comfort there, she thought it vain and dangerous, having so many cares oppress her heart, that she was almost overcome with grief. At last she determined to go to the Generall of the *Bohemian* army, whom she thought would for *Parismenos* sake shew her some pity, which she did the next morning: and being brought before the Generall, she kneeled down, and said: Most noble generall, shew pity to a poor and forsaken woman that by fortunes mutability, and *Maximus* his cruelty, is driven to this poor estate, without any desert. My name is *Dulcia* sometimes of good reputation in the *Natolian* Court, till *Marcellus* the Kings son attained my consent to love him, and withall to avoyd his Fathers cruelty, at such times as *Parismenos* had carried *Angelica* from the Golden Tower to *S. Austines* Chappell. My most dear Lord *Marcellus*, likewise conveyed me into *Angelicaes* company where I was taken with her. and so committed to prison. And now *Maximus* (upon what occasion I know not) hath banished me the City, & given comandement that none upon pain of death should succour me: that in this distressed estate I dare not be found of any of the *Natolians*, lest they should (although not of their own wil, yet by the Kings command) work my shame, that *Marcellus* might forsake me: and therefore am come to you for mercy, beseeching you of pity to shelter me with your favour, from those wrongs, which otherwise will be likely to fall upon me.

*Parismenos* knowing her, came unto her, and took her by the hand, saying that the King of *Natolia* should not wrong her in that place.

*Dulcia* steadfastly beholding his countenance, presently knew him,

him and with reverence set at his feet with exceeding joy. But he taking her up again, led her with *Polippus* to his Tent demanding how *Angelica* did, whom she acquainted with the sorrow that she deeply made for his imprisonment and feare of his death & how that when she was banished, *Angelica* was taken into favour again: and how that none knew, what was become of *Marcellus*, wherewith she wept exceedingly: which *Parismenos* seeing, comforted her by all means he could, himself gathering much content from her speeches, of the assurance of *Angelicaes* love towards him.

The Messenger that went into *Lybia*, made great hast till he had delivered his message, which when the King of *Lybia* heard, thirsting for revenge of the Knight of Fame, as he supposed he had done for him, as also to revenge some part of the grudge he bare against *Parisminus*, ever since his being in *Thebais*, and the overthrow he had received at his hands, which he was in mind to have done, when he had him in the Court, but that it would have been too great a blemish to his honor: whereupon he presently mustered all his forces together, and conveyed them by sea into *Natolia*.

Likewise the embassadors that went into *Barbary*, executed their embassage with such eloquence, that *Morocco* the King, collected an army of a hundred thousand Moors, and sent them by Shipping into *Natolia*, under the conduct of his eldest son *Santodelodoro*, a most valiant stout and courageous Prince: which forces soon landed in *Natolia*, and pitched their Tents before the City of *Ephesus*.

*Parismenos* seeing those new come forces, marvelled of whence they should be, but yet he soon learned the truth thereof. *Maximus* likewise had knowledge given him of the King of *Lybias* approach, and of *Santodelodoro* his landing, whom he welcomed with exceeding rejoicings, and entertained them with great costly feasts and banquettings.

## CHAP. XXVII.

How *Parisimus* arrived in *Natolia* with a band of Souldiers, and of his joy for *Parismenos* safety. How *Maximus* appointed *Parismenos* to be burnt. And of the lamentation *Angelica* made with *Marcellus*.

**T**he King of *Lybia* thriving after the Knight of *Farneslife* (whom he now knew to be son to *Parisimus*) used all the persuasions he could to instigate *Maximus* to revenge: who of his owne disposition was ready enough to such tyranny: concluding within three days after to put the same in execution without remorse. And all the *Patollans* remained in great tranquillity, by reason of the ayd was brought them, and the multitude of their Army, which was like the sand in number. *Parisimus* being now come into *Natolia* with his Army, of threescore thousand *Bohemians* and *Cheshallians*, whose approach exceedingly rejoiced *Parismenos* and *Pollipus*. And having pitcht his Tents near unto the rest of his Horse-men, he was met and welcommed by *Pollipus*, to whom he said with a hearty countenance. O *Pollipus*, all the labour we have taken is in vain to save *Parismenos*, onely we may revenge his death: what injustice and cruelty is this the heavens impose upon his head, that ever since his birth hath been everlastingly miserable: Would God he had remained still in *Bohemia*, and never have sought *Angelica*'s love, and that my self with these Souldiers had guarded him, that wee might have either dyed with him, or else have preserved him from that infamous death he is like to suffer.

My Lord (qu. *Pollipus*) *Parismenos* is in safety. How can that be (qu. he) when the report is in every mans mouth that he must dye a most shameful death, and they have him in Prison. *Parismenos* then humbled himself upon his knee, whom *Parisimus* soon knew, and most lovingly embraced him, who certified him of all that had hapned, and that the King of *Natolia* did thinke he was still in prison. His newes exceedingly rejoiced *Paris-*

*Parisimus* heart, and that whereas before by reason of his sadness, the whole Camp had laid aside mirth, now hearing of his safety they reassumed new comfort.

Now the day was come nigh upon which *Parismenos* should be burnt, to which purpose *Maximus* caused a stake to be pitcht in the chiefest place of the City, and that the whole multitude of the Citizens were before the time of execution gathered together to see the same, that the house tops, windows, streets, tarrets, and every place were peezed with their abundance. *Angelica* hearing thereof, began to exclaime and cry out most bitterly, making such mournfull lamentations, that it would have moved a heart of stone to pity her.

When the time of execution was come, *Marcellus* the king of *Lybia*, *Santocledoro* the Queen, and many thousand knights of *Natolia*, *Lybia*, and *Barbary*, were assembled and seated to see the same. And the Judges gone to the Dungeon to bring forth the prisoner, the *Haylois* wife before missing of her husband, had broken open the Dungeon door where she found him dead, and *Parismenos* fled away, and she fearing the Kings fury durst not disclose the same: but apparelled her husband in *Parismenos* garments, and told the Judges that he was dead, who taking it to be the right body, caused certain slaves to take up the same, & in mourning wise brought it to the place of execution: *Angelica* seeing the time was come, and having word brought her that *Parismenos* was already gone with the Judges, began to tear her golden hair, cast off all her ornaments from her head, and raged so extremly, that her *Wamlets* could not hold her, but getting a knife in her hand, she desperately vowed, that whosoever offered but to touch her, she would with the same end her life. With that she ran down out of her chamber into the Court, from thence into the City, and so to the place of execution, whereas the King at that instant was giving his judgment according to the law.

Her Ladies seeing her desperatenesse durst not stay her, but ran after her, and when she came to the place, she first ran to the fire, intending that if she found him there, she would die with him: but suddenly spying the *Heards*, and the Judges standing

by the same she ran thereto, with her golden hair hanging down her shoulders, her eyes swollen with griefe, her Ornaments all broken and tortured, her hands all besmeared with blood, which she had cut with holding fast the knife, and her face with the same blood all besmeared, when with her bloody hands she wiped away the teares that hindered her sight by their abundant passage.

Maximus and the Queen knowing her, ran to her with exceeding hast, the King of Lybia and Santodelodoro were amazed hereat, the Citizens in an uprore, and the Judges offering to lay hands on her, but she starting back, bent her knives point to her breast, protesting to goze it in her heart blood if they offered to touch her. Maximus likewise and the Queen by this time were come unto her, whom she would not suffer to come near her, but vowed to her own death; with which they were all amazed: the Ladies stood weeping and wringing their hands. At last one of the Judges thus spake. Good *Angelica* be quiet, this Knight is already dead in prison.

With that *Angelica* with her hand casting aside the haire which covered some part of her face, holding the fatal knife desperatly, and with an amazed countenance, fixing her Eyes upon her Father, said:

Merclesse and cruell King, what tyranny is this you have shewed, to be the unjust executioner of that most vertuous Knight, who never deserved such rigor, but only came into this Country for my sake, whose death shal be the uttermost date of my wretched life? Heavens grant this wrongfull shedding of innocent blood may not go unrevenge. All plagues of Heaven and Earth light upon their cursed heads that did this cruell deed. Here lies true loyalty, and constant vertue slain. Here lies valour and Knightly honour massacred. Here lies the Knight whose splendor did beautifie the glories of all the Knights in the world. Here lies innocent pittie falsely accused by the disloyal king of *Lybia*, whom were he living, would with his countenance abate thy courage. In him shined all prowess, and by his death what have you gained, but ignominious infamy, perpetuall shame and dishonour.

As she was continuing the length of her speech, the peoples voyces sounded forth the Echo of another dismal cry; for *Marcellus* having knowledge of the execution being in Panoras, house being half apparelled, caught up his sword, & came running towards the place, murthering such as hindered his speed: and with his sword made way for his hasty steps, and leapt to *Angelica* folding her in on arm, and holding his sword lukewarm with blood in the other, saying. O Sister, what joy do I conceive at your loyalty? Now do I see your love Parisimenos, be constant dear Sister, and let us both dy, with him, he would not have refused a thousand deaths for our sakes.

Then began the people to cry out save the Kings children and such an uprore, and tumult arose, that heaven and earth seemed to shake with the noise. The Taylors wife standing by & seeing the two young Princes ready to sacrifice themselves, being assured that none but her self knew the truth, and that it rested in her to save their lives, especially being touched with remorse she suddenly crept to the two young Princes and said; Stay stay, gentle young Princes, and hear the truth of all. This dead body, whom you suppose to be Parisimenos, is the father, though clad in his apparell, for that worthy Knight escaped out of the Dungeon: if you behold the corps, you shal perceive it to be the body of my Husband. With that *Marcellus* started to the Place, and casting of the cloath that covered the same, knew that it was not Parisimenos, then casting away his sword, he embraced *Angelica* in his arms: who seeing the truth of all, and that Parisimenos was escaped, with whom she came of purpose to have dyed, let fall the knife from forth her hand, and casting down her eyes to the earth, was clothed by the Ladies that attended her.

The King was so amazed with this newes, that he stood like one senselesse: The King of *Lybia* for shame of *Angelica*s speeches, bent his eyes upon the earth with sad countenance, and all the whole assembly of beholders, were confounded in their thoughts, and stood as men transformed into admiration.

Presently in the midst of this amoyment, came a knight passing withal speed, his countenance bewraying some Tragickall report, who uttered these speeches: Most noble King, whilst you stand here debating matters of so small importance, the Bohemians have destroyed many thousands of your souldiers, who now run up and down like men agast, for want of their Captaines, that all the fields are strewd with their dead bodies, the dailies stained with blood, and the dry ground is drunke therewith, our enemies arms are tyred with slaughter, and we compelled to flee for fear with speed therefore receive this evil, or else the pride of Natolia is lost.

Then began a new terror, Maximus, the King of Lybia Santodelodoro, Pridamor, and all the Nobles of Natolia, hastened to the Camp, Marcellus ran to get him Armour: the Queene, Angelica, and all the Ladies, went to a Tower to behold this great Battell, most of them to see the Bohemians death, but Angelica to behold the valor of Parisimus, whom she heard was come to redeem his Son Parismenos, and in some sort to see him amongst them her heart inwardly uttering many devoted imprecations for the Bohemian victorie.

Maximus and the rest, by this time were come to the Gates, where they met with thousands of souldiers flying to save their lives, whom they caused to turn back, and being without the Gates, they could hardly passe for the slaughtered carcases of Moores, Natolians, and Lybians, that lay dead, and in the camp they saw such confused slaughters, & heard such grievous cries, that it amazed their senses to behold the same: here lay thousands slain, there lay multitudes gasping for life, & babling in their lukewarm blood: here others lay mangled, with wide gaping wounds, there Horse and men lay both dead together: the Natolians flying, the Bohemians pursuing, and glutting of their swords in blood. When Maximus cheered up his subjects to new courage, and the King of Lybia also, began to gather together his scattered Forces, and likewise Santodelodoro, went amongst his Moores, and those that were before almost vanquished, he gathered to a new head.

Parismenos having knowledge of Maximus approach, never  
left

left untill he had met with him. Whilst when he had obtained, he seemed to stretch his arms, pursuing revenge and brandishing his Sword, smote at him with forcible blows, till he beate him from his horse, and being faine to the ground, he would have troden him to death with his Horse: he bes, but that Pridamor seeing the King in that distresse, with thousands of Natolian Knights rescued him, which before they could attain, they lost many of their lives by Parismenos vallant Chivalry.

Parisimus in the mean time met the King of Lybia and unboyled him, and after him many hundred knights so that none came within compasse of his sword but died. Polipus likewise maintained a cruel fight against Santodelodoro, that thousands of the vanquished Moores lost their lives by his valor: and such slaughters were performed by Parismenos, being the first battell that ever he fought, that both Parisimus and all that saw him admired the same, who had taken Pridamor prisoner, and sent him to his Tent.

The Queen and Angelica all this while beheld the Battell, the one with fear, the other with joy: the Queen fearing of Maximus death, and Angelica in hope that the vallant knight in azured armor, beset with Eagles of Gold, that made such slaughter was Parismenos, which hope was bred by remembering his comely proportion, which with this did not much differ. By this time the night began to approach, & the Bohemians weary of shedding their enemies blood, withdrew them to their Tents, appointing most diligent Watch to be kept throughout the whole Camp. The Natolian and the rest of that party gladd of some respite, retired to their Tents, and numbering their souldiers found the one half of them slain and many grievously wounded, that they could scarce bury their dead. Maximus was gone into the City grievously wounded. The King of Lybia and Santodelodoro staid in their tents in the field. Angelica was returned to her chamber very sickly, by reason of the overmuch desperation, vexation and griefe she had endured that day, being yet more comforted in her heart with hope of Parismenos safety, then she had bin many days before. Marcellus was returned to his house, tormenting himself with exceeding griefe for



Dulciaes absence, fearing that she was perished, that he entred into that kind of lamentation, that *panora* was oftentimes in fear he should destroy himselfe. *Dulcia* was likewise all this while in the Camp with *Parismenos* in very sorrowfull estate, for *Marcellus* want, Thus each of these friends were in safety, but none of them in hope to see each other again.

## CHAP. XXVIII

Of two Battels fought with the *Natolians* Forces: the manner of *Maximus* cruell death: and of the friendly league betwixt *Parismus* and *Marcellus*.

**T**He next morning *Maximus*, the King of *Lybia*, and *Santodelodoro*, with the States of *Natolia* assembled together, to determine the doubtfull issue of this warre, and at last, by a generall consent, concluded to parley with *Parismus*, who presently returned answer, that if the king of *Natolia* would parley with him in the field betwixt both the Camps, he would there meete him, and conclude a peace for one day, which the king of *Natolia* accepted. When they were met; *Maximus* began as followeth: Prince of *Bohemia*, what is it thou cravest at my hands? Wherefore hast thou brought contrary to the Lawes of kings, a Band of Souldiers into this Country, where thou art not to set foot without my licence? *Natolian* Prant (quoth he) I come to see my Sonne, who thou hast murthered contrary to Law, Justice and equity, whose blood I require at thy unjust and cruell hands, also to revenge the manifold wrongs thou hast done him, by the disloyall and false accusation of the king of *Lybia* here present, *Parismus* (quod he) I have done nothing to thy son, but according to the Lawes of this Land, which punisheth raven, especiall of a kings daughter with death. *Maxon* (quod he) never committed any such act but carried away *Angelica* with her willing consent, whereby he is unjustly judged: withal, I demand her of thee, as of right belonging unto him for that she is the daughter,

trothed wife, whom I will have before I leave *Natolia*, or see the ruine of thee, & of thy Kingdome; therefore recle her into my custody. With that *Santodelodoro*, stept forth and said: thinkest thou *Bohemian* to command us in this place, thou art too weak, therefore began quickly, or thou shalt soon see so many Moores here, as shall confound thy senses with amazement, Know (quoth *Parismus*) that which I have said I will perform and so little do I esteem your Forces, that I will yield these Prisoners I have without ransome: then he gave them *Pridamor* again. Many other speeches past betwixt them that in the end *Maximus* was so enraged, that he swore by Heaven and Earth, that he would rather see his own death, his Countreys wreck, and *Angelicaes* destruction, before she should be given to his custody, and so departed.

*Parismenos* was exceedingly troubled when he heard *Maximus* speeches, whom he knew to be of so cruell a disposition, that he would rather indeed see her death, then be cross of his Will, that he continued in great care and continual torment of mind. As soon as they were parted, *Parismus*, *Pollipus*, and *Parismenos*, began to consult what to do, every one being desirous of victory, at last *Parismenos* said: Most noble Father, if I may presume to give counsell to you that are of farre greater wisdom and better experienced in these partiall affairs then I am, this is my opinion, *Maximus* is of that cruel disposition, that rather then he will be contradicted he will see the destruction of himself and his posterity, it is not balow, but wilfulnesse that maketh him resolute: our foes likewise are so much weakened by the last slaughter we made amongst them, that if we can give them another suddain onset they will be utterly dismayd: besides the Kings eldest son *Marcellus* is my dear friend, on whose faith & fidelity I dare repose my life, who if he could attain the City, would be ready to ayd us, therefore so please you, let us give that onset, when they are in their dead sleep, which will bring such terror & amazement to their hearts that they will be like men amazed. *Parismus* hearing his words liked his counsel very well: and thus he contrived this businesse the band should be divided into three parts: the one to be under the conduct of himselfe

the other under *Parismenos* & the third under *Pollipus*: which was so secretly done, that the *Getulians* had not the least knowledge thereof.

About midnight when all things were at silence, and the *Getulians* void of suspicion, the *Bohemian* left their Tents, & *Pollipus* with his forces gave the onset, violently rushing into the *Getulians* Camp, on that side, was next them. *Parismenos* went between them & the City, & the Prince of *Bohemia* marched about with his forces and invaded them on the back side. The *Getulians* being then in their deep sleep, and without the least thought of any such invasion, were so amazed at this Assault, that they ran up and down, some weaponless, and some half armed, and some with their Swords onely undrawn: And the *Bohemians* in the midst of them making an exceeding great slaughter.

The King of *Lybia* and *Santodelodoro*, were so eager, that they ran up & down calling out for their armour, & crying out courage, courage. And being armed, they began to courage their amazed Souldiers with many comfortable speeches, but the *Bohemians* were so thick amongst them, & had so much disordered them that some of the lost their lives as they were putting on their armour: others were slaughtered even whilst the sleep were in their eyes: others stricken dead as they were lifting their armes to strike the first blow: and some slain before they could recal their senses from amazement: there might one hear the dismal groans of murdered souls: there might one perceive slaughter in her royalty, & revenge filling his chaste hart with blood, fear stood trembling in his right brow, terror appeared in the Moors ghastly looks and victory in the *Bohemians* swores: the Prince behind them slaughtering some before they could look back. *Pollipus* before them with his surp, putting their soules from their bodies. And *Parismenos* with his bloody sword cutting off their passage to the City. The Prince met with *Santodelodoro*, & made him flee, to save himself from death. *Pollipus* met with *Pridamor* & gave him so many wounds, that he durst no longer abide his sight: *Parismenos* turned back the King of *Lybiaes* Reys, hasting to the City, and pursued him with such

eager chase, and gave him so many grievous wounds, that had he not withdrawn, and kept himself amongst a throng of *Lybian*s, he had died by his hands. All the *Natolians* were amazed, and terrified in their thoughts, being so cruelly and valiantly assaulted by the *Bohemians*, that they began to fly and forsake the Camp, every one striving to save his life: there was such a cry, that the noise thereof was heard into the City. The Citizens supposing there had been some mutiny in the Campe amongst the Souldiers, ran out at the gates: which advantage *Parismenos* soon espied, and got their possession.

Then began the citizens to cry out and run with amazed terror: the Beacons were set on fire, the Bells rung out with a confused noise and every sign of amazement was made; this noise soon came to *Maximus* hearing, who being with a chaos of confused thoughts caught up a sword, and in a desperate fury ran into the city, the knights betook them to their arms: the Ladies forsook their beds, wringing their hands, and making great lamentations. *Angelica* affrighted with their cries, appalled herself, not knowing what that great tumult should pretend. *Marcellus* likewise was with the noise awakened from his sleepe, and leaving *Panoraes* house with his sword in the one hand and his doublet in the other, ran out into the open streets to see what might be the cause of this uprore. By this time the streets were filled with souldiers, and *Parismenos* was gotten to the Court gates, where he met with *Maximus* the king, but would not offer to touch him, who like a furious, mad and desperate man ran amongst the *Bohemian* souldiers, brandishing his sword, and slaughtering such as stood next him, where he met with *Marcellus* ranging about, stark mad with grief; who desired him to withdraw himself, least he were destroyed by the private Souldiers; but he refusing his counsel and overcome with mad fury, he rushed in amongst the thickest of them without consideration, wounding some, and slaughtering those that offered not to touch him (being before commanded by *Parismenos* not to lay violent hands on him) but his careless surp wrought his own downfall: and his own folly confirmed the Prophecy hee had long time feared: For most lamentably in the throng of the *Bo-*

hemian *Possemen* he was troden to death. By this time *Marcellus* was come to the Court, fearing least the *Souldiers* should enter and affright the *Queen* and *Angelica*. Where he found *Parismenos* (though unknown) keeping the entrance, running at him most furiously; To whom *Parismenos* said *Marcellus* hold thy hands, here is none but friends. With that word, he said, who art thou that knowest me? I am (quod he) a friend to *Marcellus*, & wish you to withdraw your self into the Court, least you be hurt among my *souldiers*. *Marcellus* hearing his speeches, kept within the Court gates. By this time the *Prince of Bohemia*, and *Pollipus* had put the *Norolian* forces to flight, and taken *Santodelodoro* and *Pridamor* prisoners, the *King of Lybia* was fled, and the common *Souldiers*, had ransackt the Camp, and began to sack the City, untill the day began to appear, and the *Prince of Bohemia* and *Pollipus* having attained victory, gave commandement that none upon pain of death should offer to enter the *Citizens* houses.

The *Nobles* seeing what slaughter the *Bohemians* had made how the *Moors* and *Lybians* were fled, and the city ready to be sackt, came to the *Queen*, and certified her the truth of all. Where missing *Maximus*, carelessly ran into the city to look him, rent her garments, and making exceeding moan; and at last, found him troden to death, and not slaughtered by mans force, but by the brute beasts, casting her self carelessly and desperately upon his dead corpe, uttering many lamentable speeches, untill the *Nobles* withheld her from doing her self violence, which she often intended, and taking up the dead kings corpe, carried him to the court with great lamentation.

*Marcellus* coming to *Parismus*, with a kind behaviour, said; Most noble *Prince of Bohemia*, I beseech you stay your incensed wrath, and seek not the ruine and destruction of this city and us: For *Maximus* being dead, there is none that will make resistance, but rather entertain you with willing hearts, being alwayes unwilling to have moved you to seek this revenge: but that it was not in us to contradict *Maximus* will: who was rather led and over-ruled by rage then advice: Therefore we yield ourselves to your mercy. *Parismus* being certified that it was *Marcellus*,

*cellus* who loved *Parismenos*, and was always his dear friend, said, Most noble *Prince*, think that I sought no way to injure you, but to redeem my Son and revenge his wrong: Which now the just heavens have done in my behalf: but what restitution can be made me for his losse, whose untimely death was by *Maximus* cruelty: I seek not your harme, but his recovery: Therefore be you assured of peace, and that I will at your request cease all further strife, upon your *Princely* promise of security. *Marcellus* then said, I have alwayes honoured your name: much more do I affect your presence, desiring nothing more then to be wel esteemed of you, that now *Maximus* is dead, and my self next to succeed in the king dom, whosoever shall offer injury to the worst *Bohemian* *Souldier*, I will hate him whilst I live; therefore I beseech you rest in assurance upon my promise, and purchase such entertainment as this Court can yield, too unworthy to give you welcome. Which words *Marcellus* spake in the presence and hearing of all the *Nobles* and *Peers* of his Land: who likewise (notwithstanding the slaughter the *Bohemians* had made) willingly ratified his speeches, with their unconstrained consent.

*Parismus* then alighted and embraced *Marcellus*, and *Pollipus* did the like: First appointed what the *Souldiers* should doe: and then went into the Court with *Marcellus*.

The *Souldiers* that were dispersed to every corner of the City, returned to the campe, saving only a sufficient Guard of *Bohemian* knights that stayed to guard the *Prince*. *Marcellus* sent out messengers to gather together all the scattered *Troopes* of the *Gerulian* camp, and gave them great rewards: those that were maimed and wounded he also caused to be brought to a place, where they were diligently looked unto by skillful *Physicians*, and every one not withstanding their former discontent was by *Marcellus* highly satisfied.

## CHAP. XXIX.

How *Sycheus*, son to the Emperour of *Constantinople*, *Remulus* king of *Thrace*, and others landed in *Natolia*. Of *Parismenos* discovery: How he was elected *Angelicaes* husband, by the consent of the Peers. And how *Angelica* performing *Hymens* rites, was stoln away by the king of *Tunis*, from whom she was again taken by certain Outlawes.



**M**arcellus having ordered these affairs, and being with *Parismus* and *Pollipus*, the newes was brought that *Remulus* the King of *Thrace* was landed with a mighty band of *Thracians*: & that *Camillus* was likewise landed with a band of well armed soldiers. With whom *Sycheus* son to the Emperour of *Constantinople* had met, having with him a mighty band of *Grecians*.

*Marcellus* hearing this newes, sent out *Heralds* to know the cause of their comming: who returned and certified him, that *Camillus* came to aid the King of *Natolia*, and that *Sycheus* & *Remulus* had brought those forces to the aid of *Parismenos*, but being certified of the victory the *Bohemians* had attained, & also assured of the peace that was concluded, and of *Maximus* death had sent back their bands, but themselves with troops of gallant knights were comming to the Court, *Marcellus* then sending out his Nobles gave them kind entertainment.

*Angelica* being now at liberty came down attended by a gallant troop of beautifull Ladies, her sad countenance betraying her hearts sorrow, and with a most comely and kind submissive gesture, welcomed *Parismus*, uttering these few words:

Honourable Prince in regard of the devoted duty wherein I am bound to your worthinesse, in that you are *Parismenos* father, I rejoyce to see your safety, though I have cause enough of sorrow my self being the chiefest means of your disquiet, and by my unlucky destinies, have been the greatest procurer of these griefes. And since your noble son *Parismenos* for my sake and

and my Fathers cruelty, hath endured many miseries, and death too by all likelihoods, I humbly desire you both to remit all cause of discontent conceived against us: and also to vouchsafe me that favour, as if you know of his abode or safety, you would comfort my heart with that knowledge: for an exceeding fear of his death doth still trouble my senses, which if I were assured of, then would I soon resolve to follow him, for that without him, I am not, for in him I live, and in his death my life consisteth. With that an exceeding overflowing of tears stoppt the passage of her speech that for inward hearts sorrow she could not utter a word more.

*Parismenos* being before not minded to discover himselfe, but seeing her tears and viewing the oft change of her countenance whereby he saw her heart was exceedingly oppressed with care, now put off his disguise, being drawn with joy for her presence hoping for ever to enjoy her without contradiction, & forced by a resistlesse desire, to comfort her, and himself with her. When her eyes were full of teares, her heart of grief, and all sad to see her sorrow, he embraced her in his armes. With that *Marcellus* ran unto him for joy, the Ladies were glad and the nobles were contented with that pleasing sight: and within few dayes cast aside all sorrow for *Maximus* death, because they had lived in disquiet during the time of his reign, onely the Queen rested still in heavinesse.

*Angelica* having found her dear Knight thought to stay no longer in that publike assembly, but departed with *Marcellus* and *Parismenos* unto her Chamber. *Parismus* and *Pollipus* accompanied the Queen, using many perswasions to comfort her. *Marcellus* then being with *Angelica* and *Parismenos* amongst many other speeches could not forget *Dulcia*, on whom his thoughts were continually bent, enduring great care for her: for that he could by no means tell what was become of her: but feared that *Maximus* cruelty had sought her untimely death, to whom *Parismenos* declared both where she was, and how she came thither. When *Marcellus* heart was revived with joy, and both he and *Angelica*, rested in exceeding great content.

By this time *Sycheus*, *Camillus*, and *Remulus* were come to the

the Court, and Marcellus and Parismenos hearing thereof, went down to welcome them. Amongst the rest, Parismenos peeled Sycheus many thanks for his kinde. Marcellus gratulated Camillus friendship. And Parismenos with Remulus renewed their former familiarity. That by the approach of the estates; & a number of knights, that attended them, the Gerulian Court exceeded in royalty, and all in general after Maximus Funerals were performed remained in great joy.

The king of Lybia after his discomfiture, hearing the report of this news departed toward Lybia. Santododoro likewise sent home the remnant of his discomfited Moors into Barbaria, but himself stayed in the Gerulian Court.

Many dayes together stayed this royal assembly in the Gerulian Court in great joy, spending the time in much mirth, and honorable exercises. Parismenos likewise attained the consent of the whole Estates to marry Angelica: and Marcellus had caused Dulcia in most stately sort to be fetched from the Bohemian camp, and to be honored as his betrothed Queen, and by that means all of them enjoyed their hearts content, and delighted themselves with each others sweet presence.

The time for the Solemnization of the wedding being appointed, and much sumptuous preparation made against the day: the knights making ready their costly armors and rich Furnitures for the triumph: the Ladies erecting choise of rich attires and ornaments to adorn their beauties, Princes making to behold the Alt: and every mans mind repleat with joy. And in this sort was every one busied to honor these Nuptials. The Gerulians have a Custome, which is generally observed amongst them, that the Wives the day before their marriage, offer Sacrifice in Hymens Temple, whom the married folkes adore as a God. Which superstitious custome, is in such use and of such high regard amongst them, that they account it not lawfull for any to marry, before they have performed those rights, reporting them for accursed that neglect the same, and esteeming them unright with many blessings, that create those superstitions with most debates.

The manner whereof is this: the Wives are adorned with rich

rich and costly Ornaments, and crowned with Garlands of Flowers, and in that sort they go to the Temple, attended by one Damozell which carryeth their incense, which is Balls of Frankincense, and Rose-water, which themselves cast into the fire that burneth upon the Altar: which done, Hymens Priest saith certain prayers, and bleth to blisse them with many invocations; which likewise done, the Wive continueth after that saying many prayers to Hymen, such as by the Notaries have been appointed.

Now the time of Angelicas and Dulcias wedding being come, for that but one could at once do Sacrifice, Dulcia was appointed to Hymens Temple the first day, and Angelica the next which solemnly Dulcia performed with great pompe. And the next day Angelica attiring her self after the usual manner, was attended to the Temple door by Sycheus, Parismus, Camillus, Santododoro, Remulus, Pollipus, Pridamor, and many other gallant knights, as also by a gallant Train of Courtly Damozels. And entered the Temple onely with Anna, whom she most dearly loved, The door being fastned by the Priest, the knights returned back to the Court and the Ladies departed untill the time of her return, which would be about three hours after.

The Priest having forgotten something that belonged to the Sacrifice, returned back to his house to fetch the same, where he was no sooner entred, but he espied certain knights who suddenly layd hands upon him. The Priest mabeling at this so suddain outrage, demanded what they were and wherefore they came, to whom one of them said: We come for Angelica and her we will have: and therefore speak but one word more and thou dyest. With that one of the chiefest of them, commanded two of his servants to keep him fast bound. Which done, he alone with one more, entred the Temple, where they found her slaving for the Priest. Angelica seeing two knights in Armour enter the Temple, was suddenly agast, fearing some treachery, as indeed so fell out. For one of those knights came to Angelica and told her, that she must go with him. Which said, he took her by the hand to lead her out of the Temple: with that Anna began to crye & cry out, but the other knight drawing forth a dagger,



woze that if she did offer to cry he would split her heart. Angelica well understanding that this villanous act was plotted by treachery, thus said. Villain what outrage is this thou offerest, whither wilt thou convey me, what treason dost thou intend: Peace Lady (qd. he) for I must and will carry you with me: neither make any resistance, for that which I came for I will performe. Then taking her by the arme, he led her by force out of the Temple into the priests house, where she saw the priest laphour. And from out of his house they conveyed her into a litter which was made so close, that though she made great lamentation yet she could not be heard, and causing Anna to mount up behind a knight, they carryed them away with the priest: which they did so closely and with such expedition, that they escaped away undescried, by reason the Temple was on the out-side of the City.

Now this knight that carryed away Angelica was the barba-rous king of Tunis and Irus, who long time before Parismenos arrivall in Getulia, had been a suitor to Angelica, but was denied by Maximus, & departed from thence in a discontented vain, who having sojourned many days in Getulia was well acquainted with their customs and hearing of all that had befallen in the Court and of Maximus death, had many days attended in this opportunity, well knowing before that she would come to Hymens Temple to offer the accustomed sacrifice, came at the very instant and surprized them; and having past without suspicion out of the Suburbs of the city, hasted with all speed he could towards his country. And by the way as they went they entered a thicke Wood, where Irus purposed to rest himself, to determine which way to take, fearing to be surprized, for that he knew she would soon be mist: He had not staid there long, but he was descried of certain knights who lived in those Woods: the cause of whose abode in that place shall be declared in the next chapter; who hearing many lamentations Anna made, set upon Irus whom they thought to be a personage of great estate, by the richnesse of his Armour, which was on the skirts and sides enamelled and beset with rich stones, and all over beset with bleeding hearts of Azure.

Irus

Irus seeing himself thus beset, drew his sword in his defence with that one of the company blew a Horn, wherewith there suddenly came out ten in armour, with the rest of their fellows, equalling the number that was with Irus, between whom began a most sharp Combat, which continued so long that there were some slain on both sides. Hymens priest seeing this, secretly stole away. And Angelica being in the litter, looked out thereat beholding that cruel fight, marvelling what those should be that had stoln her from the Temple, and likewise what those should be that sought to rescue her from them, at which sight she was so exceedingly oppressd with terror, that her vital spirits were ready to give up their latest breath.

This combate continued, till Irus knights were most of them slain, and grievously wounded, saving Irus himself, who being a knight of undaunted courage, continued the combate with resolute great valour against his assailant; who seemed to be a knight of exceeding courage, as he was indeed, & by his great strength soon brought Irus within his mercy. Who fearing his death desired the knight to hold his hands. Tell me then what thou art (quoth he) I will not (qd. he) tell thee my name, but I am of Tunis, Angelica hearing that word gave a sudden shriek, wherewith the knight looking back, beheld her most exceeding beauty, which was beautified with a Garland of flowers, that he stood as one amazed thereat, taking her rather to be a divine then a mortal creature: that he said, What Lady is this that is so fearful to hear thy name? It is (qd. he) Angelica, with that he fell down for faintnesse by effusion of blood. The knight then stepping to Angelica, said: Lady you now are mine by conquest: therefore fear not his name, but go with me, where you shall not want for any thing that you will desire: With that he took her out of the litter, and carried her and Anna away with him, and left Irus amongst his knights almost wounded to death, whereof there was but three of them escaped that cruel massacre.

## CHAP. KXX.

How *Marcellus* finding *Irus*, knew him. Of *Parismenos* sorrow. How he departed in a disguise from *Ephesus*. How *Parismus* departed towards *Thessaly*. How *Irus* and *Parismenos* met in the desert, and what afterwards befell.



**H**ymens Priest having thus escaped, hasted with all speed untill he came to the City: the Citizens seeing him there running as though he were agast, whom they thought had beene at the Temple, for that *Angelica* was supposed to be there even then, wondered thereat: and many of them ran after him, who being come towards the Court met the *Widdegroome*, and all the rest of the States going towards the Temple, who seeing him in that case were given into admiration: but he casting himselfe downe before them, breath not suffering him to utter any longer speech, cryed out *Angelica*, *Angelica*, and after that he had recovered a little more breath he cryed out *Angelica* is betrayed, and stoln away by treason.

With that *Parismenos* was so confounded in his senses, that he was like one senseless, and all the rest were dismayd with fear of this doubt, untill the priest to satisfie them, declared the truth of all that had hapned, and how that he had left *Angelica* in the Wood called the Desert. *Parismenos* hearing his speeches, said, What Knight wilt bring me to that place, with that every one ran for their Steeds, and *Parismenos* amongst them all. was first mounted, and with *Marcellus* posting toward the Desert, *Parismus*; *Sicheus* and all the rest with enraged fury, betooke themselves to their Steeds, that on a suddain the whole country was bespied every way with Knights.

This news likewise came to the Bohemian Camp, that the Horsemen posted every way, the Ladies ran to the Temple, where missing *Angelica* they filled the hollow Vaults thereof, with their cries, the Courtiers were amazed, the City in an uproar, the Queen in great fear,

*Parisme-*

*Parismenos* and *Marcellus* first got unto the Desert, where according to the Priest's speech, with little search they found *Irus* amongst his few wounded Knights almost dead, whose head they had uncovered to give him breath. *Marcellus* soon knew him, and by his armour which *Hymens* Priest had deciphered so well as he could, he knew that it was he that carryed away *Angelica*, *Parismenos* coming to him being exceedingly enraged, offered to have thrust his sword through him. But *Marcellus* staying his hand, said, This is *Irus* the King of *Tunis*, with that likewise he said to *Irus* who knew *Marcellus* King of *Tunis*, What dishonour is this thou hast done to *Angelica*? What which I have done (quoth *Irus*) I repent not, but for that I have so lost her.

With that *Parismenos* said: Where is she, which way went she? Then one of the wounded Knights said, she was rescued from us in this place, and the Knights that have her departed out of the Wood that way, By this time *Parismus* and *Sicheus* was come, and *Parismenos* and *Marcellus*, again hasted that way the Knight directed them. Thus when all the desert was beset and searched throughout with Knights, and *Marcellus* and *Parismenos* were stayed from the hast they made, for that they met with divers Knights that had been in every place of those parts of that Country, but could not once hear of her, or of any Knight, but those of their own company, whereat *Parismenos* at *Marcellus* intreaty, returned back to *Parismus* and the rest, to know their advice, before he went from them, which *Marcellus* seeing, had a great care of him, for that he knew his grief was such that, he would never return untill he had found her, for whom likewise they should take as much care for being absent. *Parismus* hearing the Knights report that had been every way in her search, could not tel what to say, or what to think: but first, he desired those that loved *Angelica*, to poste every way in her search, and speaking to divers of his Knights, he commanded them to depart presently both into the furthestmost part of *Natalia*, and also into the neighbouring Countries in her search which he thought was the best means to find her, for he was sure they could not be travelled far in that short space. Promising to

returne

reward him most richly that could find her, or could hear of her shode: with that the Knights departed every way.

*Parisimenos* was exceedingly tormented with grief, and thought himself negligent to stay there, and not to be in her search: but not knowing which way to take, his senses were so dailed with that grieuous conceit. To whom *Parisimus* said: Be of good comfort *Parisimenos*, for we shall hear of *Angelica* again: therefore I pray do not you leave us too, least our care be as great for your absence: for there are so many Knights in her search, that she cannot by any meanes be so secretly conveyed hence, nor so speedily, but we shall hear thereof.

My Lord and Father (qd. he) I beseech you let me make some diligent search for her, otherwise my mind will not be satisfied: and I beseech you to return to the Court with these Nobles, and leave me alone in her search, that amongst the rest, I that have most cause, may according like a friend, do my best to find her. As for my safety, take you no care, for be you assured, I will preserve my self from danger onely for her sake: which liberty if you grant me by leaving me here alone, it shall be a great deal more pleasing to my mind, then to be detained in the Court in ease and idleness.

If you promise me (qd. he) faithfully to return again, I will give my consent, but yet go with us to the Court, this night, & tomorrow depart. I will my Lord (quoth he) return tomorrow: for this night I may sooner find her then hereafter: for that notwithstanding our search, she may be in this Desert, which it is be so, they wil convey her hence this night. *Parisimus* & the rest, seeing his resolution, & trusting to his promise to return, left him & departed to the Court with *Irus*, for that the night drew nigh. *Marcellus* would have gladly stayed with *Parisimenos* but that he saw he rather desired to be alone: for he like wise having as heavy a heart as any of the rest, departed.

*Parisimenos* being alone by himself, began to study, what to do sometimes thinking he was within the Desert, where she might be for that it was of an exceeding great compasse, then he remembered that one of his knights told him that they left the Court, which bred a contrary persuasion in him, that they were departed.

departed, and gone some whither else, that in a multitude of thoughts not knowing what to do, and having in these cogitations spent most part of the night, without the least hope, at last tyred with grief, and filled with care, he alighted from his steed whom he tyed to a Bush; and sat himself down under a Tree, as one that had quite been given over to careless despair, where he will leave him to speak of *Angelica*.

The knights that rescued *Angelica* from *Irus*, presently conveyed her to the thickest of the desert, in the midst whereof he had a Cave or rather Labyrinth most artificially framed wherein were many roomes, vaults, and turnings, not made by Nature, but by the Art and industry of skillfull workemen, and with great cost. In which place in times past the Giant *Malaschas* kept his secret abode. Into this place they brought *Angelica*, and comforting her with many fair speeches, which were most sharp to her hearing refusing all comfort, desiring to taste any food which they offered her, and shunning their company, till at last the chiefeest of them said, Lady be not thus impatient, nor use me not so discourteously, as to shun my company that have deserved no such hatred, unlesse it were in doing you good for I have released you from the Bondage you were in, by meanes of those that had you in their custody, that had as it seemed by your Damozels complaints, with violence brought you to that place. For my self, I will use you as honourably as your heart can wish, neither shall you have any violence offered you, but rest in as good security as you can desire. For this place harboureth no tyrants or discourteous creatures, but such as are of vertuous inclination, although by the cross mischances of hard destiny we are driven to live in this place. And not so much by destiny as by the cruelty of *Maximas* King of this Country, to whom never any offence was given by any of us: for know Lady, that my name is *Ieonius*, sometimes Duke of *Sextos*, but now banished by your father *Maximus* from my Dukedome, by the false accusation of *Pridamor*, and the Kings malice who accused me of Treason and Conspiracy with the King of *Tanis*.

How long since attempted by treason to betray his life, and

to attain your possession; Wherein the Heavens know how innocent I was. And not contented with my banishment, and confiscation of my goods, he also sought my life with great cruelty, promising great rewards to them that could find me out, or bring him my head. This is the cause of my desolate life, wherein I find greater quiet then in Courtly pompe. Therefore I pray you be contented with such homely entertainment, as my poor habitation yeeldeth, whether you are as welcome as you should be to the place you desire to be in.

Angelica hearing his speeches was more grieved then before, for that she feared he would in revenge of her Fathers cruelty still detain her there, that with the feare shee had taken by those outrages, such a passion oppress her heart that shee fell down dead: and Anna seeing the same cryed out most lamentably, and did her endeavour the best she could to recover her: Which when they had done, Leonius helped to convey her to one of those rooms very sick, and in great danger of her life, being diligently tended by Anna; who had all things necessary to comfort her in that extremity, where there was no want of any thing.

Leonius having left Angelica with Anna, came amongst the rest of his company, having been sometimes knights of good estimation, likewise by misery driven to that Society having lived in that place many years: Where they were as secure, as in the safest place in the World, where they kept themselves close not once stirring abroad; for that they knew the whole Court would be in an uproar for Angelicas absence: By which meanes, the diligent search that was made, was all in vaine: For divers knights had passed over the Case, yet could not discern the same, the entrances thereto were so secretly contrived, neither was there any direct path to be seen: For Leonius living in continuall fear of his life, was careful thereof.

Parismenos continued all that night, sometimes resting himself, and againe sometimes tracing up and downe the solitary desert: Where he met with many furious beasts, and heard the notes of many Birds, that flye abroad onely in the night,

night; and uttering many a sad groaning sigh, and many a mournful speech: sometimes lamenting his own hard hap, and then her misfortune: not knowing whether himself or Angelica were more miserable, accounting himself most unfortunate to be parted from her, but her in much more misery, to be under the government of Strangers.

Again, marvelling what they should be that had so rescued her from Irus, but most of all could not imagine to what secret place they had so secretly conveyed her, finding so many causes of care, and so little hope of comfort, either by hope to find her, or by consideration of these sad events, that his heart was replenish with fear: his head was full of troubles thoughts, his senses dulled with sorrow, and his fancy overburdened with conceit; his body wearied, and his eyes swollen with griefe: that all the night nor the day finding no hope of comfort, he wandered toward the Court, like one not caring what he did, no whether he went, letting his steed carry his head in careless sort, that he seemed to mourne with his master, and being come to the Court, he was kindly vied and comforted by his father, and his friends,

Marcellus and Remulus, by all the best persuasions they could use, gave no ease to his restless cares: There was now such an alteration, as if all things had changed their hue: The knights that had prepared furniture, attired to adorn the wedding, had put on mourning: the Ladies that before rejoiced, turned their joy into weeping, and their pleasure into mourning: forsaking company, and choosing dark corners to weep in. The Citizens whose hearts were on the height of delight, were now growne penible: and their countenances bewrayed their grief.

The great preparation stood at a careless stay, neither going forwards nor backwards, and all things in such a confused alteration, as though all things had been quite given over to alteration, that even the vainest sort of people, that had delight to see shewes, were grieved to be frustrated of their desire.

In this sort continued they many dayes, being void of all hope, but onely to hear some welcome newes by such knights

as were gone in search of Angelica: whose diligence they knew would be great in that behalf. Many dayes after continued Angelica in that Desert place, very dangerously sick. so that Anna thought she could not by any means escape.

Parisimenos likewise continued in the Natolian Court, until all the knights that went in search of Angelica were returned, without any news at all of her: which drove Parisimenos into new conceits and thoughts what to do: for his care for her absence and fear never to see her againe made him weary of his life, weary of all company, and weary of the Court, which seemed to him no more then a place of discontent, and the sight of some of their mirth encreased his woe, that he determined to leave the Court: and spend his leathed life, in some solitary place: And at last he thought, in the Desert where his love was lost, to lose himself that very shortly after arming himself in a murrey armour, he secretly in an evening got from the court and hasted with such speed as his speed could make towards the Desert.

He was no sooner gone, but he was as soon miss at the court for whose absence great sorrow was made. And the next day many of his knights went in search of him: from whom he secretly shrowded himself, and saw some of them: Whom had they seen him, they could not have known him in that disguised Armour.

Thus many days past in his search but being still frustrated, they were all out of comfort, especially Parisimus, Pollipus, and Marcellus were very sad, but yet in hope of his safety: although they knew not where he was, for they were assured he absented himself of purpose.

Within short time after, there arrived, certain knights that brought Letters out of Bohemia unto Parisimus: which certified that his Father the King was very sick, and not to live long and therefore desired him to returne, which caused Parisimus to leave the Getulian Court, and gave order to Pollipus to march away with the Bohemian souldiers, being most unwilling to leave his son Parisimenos behind him, but because he saw there was no remedy to recture the least of those evils, or recover him  
for that

that he absented himself voluntarily, and he was peradventure travailed far from that place, Parisimus taking his farewell of the rest, accompanied by Sycheus (first having let Iros depart, and forgiving his offence for his part) he departed, leaving Marcellus very sad for his absence. After his departure, Marcellus sent away the King of Tunis, upon certain conditions between, them concluded. Remulus sojourned for Parisimenos and Angelica's misfortune departed towards Thrace, And Camillus and Santodelodoro to their own Countries.

And within few days after, Marcellus was with great solemnity wedded to Dulcia; the preparations being exceeding, but yet darkened by the absence of Parisimenos and Angelica, and the rest of the Estates that had been assembled, that it seemed like joy and mourning intermingled.

Iros being departed from the Getulian Court, glad of his own safety, for that before he feared his life, but much more sad, for that he was disappointed of Angelica: By the way as he returned to his Country, being unaccompanied he entered the Desert, his mind being drawn with desire yet to see the place where he lost her, near unto which Parisimenos remained, who espying Iros presently knew him and supposing that he had escaped from the Getulian Court by stealth, thought now to be fully revenged on him, for that he alone, had by his cunning treachery, onely cross his contented happynesse, rowled himself from his covert and pacing towards Iros, who was likewise on foot, for that he could not enter the Wood on Horse back, and drawing his sword, without speaking a word, let dye a forcible blow at him; which lighted upon the well tempered steel, yet bruised the flesh upon his arm: Iros being therewith enraged drew his sword, between whom began a most fierce and cruell Battell, which continued a good space, untill Iros had received some grievous wounds, and marballing at his enemies valour, thus spake to him.

Knight (quoth he) who art thou, that offerest me this outrage? I know thee not, neither have I offended thee. I am (quoth he) Parisimenos, the greatest enemy thou hast: and do so mortally hate thee, that I will have thy life before I depart: Which  
R 3 that



that he assailed him most furiously, and gave him so many mortal wounds, that with much effusion of blood he fell down for dead. Parismenos having brought him to this estate, espied another knight coming out of the woods-side, to whom he said Knight who art thou: the knight looking back, seeing his sword bloody, and his Armour battered, seeming to have come from some great skirmish, and observing of him to be peremptorily examined, answered. What art thou that examinest me in this place.

Parismenos being exceedingly enraged before by the smart of some wound he had before received, said, I am one that will know who thou art, before I leave thee: and with that word, he took at him, The knight likewise drew his sword to revenge that blow, but he was so far unable to withstand Parismenos, that he was soon by his unconquered Chivalry most grievously wounded, and in some part disarmed: Parismenos striking another terrible blow at him, hit him right where the armour was broken, and with violence the sword pierced his heart, and he fell down dead, without speaking a word: which done, Parismenos pulled off his Helmet, to see if he knew him, but he knew him not.

Sir Iconius hearing the noise of the clashing of their armour, being then abroad, drew towards the place where Irus lay gasping for breath: Whom hee presently knew to be the same knight, from whom he had before rescued Angelica, and putting off his Helmet, presently knew him to be his dear friend Irus, for whose sake he was banished. So taking him up, he conveyed him to the Cave, with great diligence labouring to revive him, which by his industrie he did at last attain unto.

Anna coming to have a sight of this knight's coming in, presently knew him by his armour to be the same that had with violence taken both Angelica and her out of Hymens Temple: and enquiring of the knight his name, they answered none of them knew him, for none but Iconius knew him. Angelica being now somewhat better recovered, Anna made known to her what she had seen, but could not learn the knight's name. Anna (ad-  
He)

He) never enquire his name, but blew him well, and thou shalt soon find him to be Irus King of Tunis: For diddest thou not hear him say, that he was of Tunis, when Iconius rescued me from him: Being much more miserable by his approach: For Iconius and he are of such familiarity, that whereas before I had almost won his consent to convey me to the Getulian coast I am now out of all comfort of that, for Irus will rather seek to convey me into Tunis: So that now I fear me, I shall never see my beloved knight Parismenos, but must be subject to his power, who I know will according to his barbarous disposition, use me badly, that I know not Anna what to do in this extremity, but rather then I will subject my self to his will, I will sooner be the Executioner of mine own death, and first tear my accursed heart out of my troubled breast.

Anna then comforted her by many persuasions putting her in some hope, yet in the end to attain a happy issue, to all these unfortunate events. Parismenos having slain the knight, returned to the place where he left Irus but found him not: which made him marvel what was become of him, thinking that he was escaped and fled.

And again, being weary and somewhat wounded, he got himself to his secret covert to rest, where he determined to spend the remnant of his life: Where he continued many days; In which time Irus being in the Cave with Iconius, had recovered health, and knew Iconius his old friend to be the man that had before endangered his life, by taking Angelica from him, & leaving him to Parismenos, for which he had now made amends, by bringing him to his Cave that was likely to perish, so that when he came first to the knowledge of these things, he uttered these speeches.

How fortunate am I good Iconius, to fall into your kind hands, that otherwise could not have survived: I have long since heard of your banishment from the Getulian Court, and enquired for my sake: And withal heard he Maximus sought your life: who being come to my knowledge, I sought diligently to find you out, with intent to have carried you with me into Tunis: but since now I have so happily found, & have much more cause

to love you let me intreat you to leave this Desert, and depart with me to Tunis, where I mean to prefer you to greater dignity and honour then ever you had in *Gerulia*.

I thank you (quoth *Iconius*) but I marvell what misadventure hath now brought you into this country, and especially into this place unfrequented, with such hazard of your life.

Good friend *Iconius* (quoth he) I will declare unto you the truth of all. Then he declared the truth how he had stoln *Angelica* out of *Hymnos* Temple, & how she was rescued from him in that place: And withal declared all that he knew of the estate *Gerulia*: and of his latest coming from thence: and how he met with a Knight in that wood, that had brought him by his valiant behaviour near his death.

*Iconius* hearing the report of the variety of his adventures, made him this answer. Warden me noble *Irus* for it was my self that took the Lady *Angelica* from you, not knowing what you were who is within this Cave.

*Irus* hearing his speeches, caught him in his arms for joy, saying. My dear friend *Iconius*, was it you that took *Angelica* from me? How was it, that I knew you not, nor you me? And how fortunate & ten thousand times blest may I be by your means if you continue my faithfull friend as heretofore you have been by letting me have a sight of *Angelica*? My Lord (quoth he again) I have not forgotten nor yet once diminished my former friendship, but will commit the custody of *Angelica*, to none but your self: for none but your self are worthy of her, or none so worthy, onely if you please to follow my counsell, do not at the first, motion your former sute unto her, but use her kindly: and rather for a time dissemble the extremity of your passion: for I perceiue she is most deeply enthralled to the *Bohemian* Knight *Parimenos*: at to make any other love to her, at the first, will rather encrease her affections but when she is without hope of finding him again, then time will soon alter her mind, for womens affections, are subject to variety. *Irus* then told him, that he did like his counsell exceeding well: and withal, yielded him many thanks, for that he had so found his most true and loyall friendship.

*Iconius*

*Iconius* being departed from *Irus* came presently unto *Angelica*: whom he used most kindly. And taking occasion for that he found her weeping he said: Fair *Angelica* I much marvell why you torment your self with these griefs, when you see your self in safety and out of danger, have I yet deserved no better opinion at your hands, that have been so carefull for your health and safety. I beseech you abandon this your sadness, and entertaine some rest to your unquiet breast: which I see is ready to be overwhelmed with griefe.

*Iconius* (quoth she) what heart oppressed with so many cares, & vexations, as I have endured could refrain from grief? What eyes that have beheld such cruelty, can abstain from shedding infinite floods of brinish salt teares? What creature subject to misery, could contain her selfe within the bounds of reason? And when all these are hapned, and so many occasions of discontent, concurred together: yet in the midst one mischief greater then all the rest is befallen me,

Is not *Irus* that cruel King of Tunis, within this Cave, my great enemy, my living foe, that hath brought me to this misery, who is your professed friend? To whose counsell you will rather yeeld, then any way confirm your promise to me past, to convey me to the *Gerulian* Court, but if you remain constant, then I have the lesse cause to fear *Irus*, but if you condescend to be ruled by his wicked persuasions, then I know my sorrows will be everlastingly lengthened. *Iconius* hearing her speeches, thought it best to glaze with her, and therefore made her this answer.

Good Lady, cast aside such fear, for *Irus* shall not so much over-rule me, as once to make me falsifie my Word: neither do I think he is of any such disposition, but if he be, I care not for what I have promised I will undoubtedly performe: and would have done it before this time, but that your health would not permit the same.

Many oter speeches past betwixt them, till at last *Iconius* left her, and going to *Irus*, told him all the speeches that had passed between him and *Angelica*: who by *Iconius* counsel dissembled his affection, and though he were often in *Angelicaes* company,

pany, he made no shew of such earnest love, yet carelessly made recital of his former detestations: which he so cunningly dissembled, that Angelica began to rest in assurance of Iconius fidelity: and in a persuasion that Irus had given over his hat Love, & by that means she began to gather more comfort to her abated spirits: which by reason of those troubles she had past, and her late Sicknesse, were brought into a weak operation. And many days it was, before she had recovered her health, which Iconius still made his excuse, to the frustrating of her desired departure.

Parismenos likewise at this time wandred up and down the Desert, living poorly upon hard and wild fruit, and lying upon the earth in his armour: that the haire that then began to grow, had with a careless growth shadowed some part of his face. He was grown to a great length, and his complexion, so much altered by care, that he could hardly be known of those that were familiarly acquainted with him before. In which time of continuance in that place, he had at several times met with Iconius his consortes, and slain them because they refused to yield to him, and denyed to declare what they were, having taken an oath, & made a firm vow with Iconius before: not to reveal, which they Religiously kept, though in other matters they observed no civility: At last, Parismenos met with another of their fellows, which he set upon, and soon brought in hazard of his life, but he being of a more cowardly disposition then the rest, fled, and with much ado escaped from Parismenos.

And coming to Iconius told him what he had seen and how he was handled by a strange knight or rather a Savage man, that hunted the Desert; then Iconius willed him to declare what armour he had on. That can I do (quoth he) for the same is so overworn, old, and battered, that neither the color, nor other device therein can be discerned. Assuredly (quoth Iconius) it is this knight that has slain so many of our company as we have found dead, which make me think, he is some distressed Knight, or banished as my self is, which maketh me pity his case, and could wish that he were with us: which peradventure might give him some comfort,

many

many other speeches they had of him, being yet of no mind to seek him out, which Iconius determined to do afterwards, And thus continued Iconius consulting with Irus, how to win Angelica's favour. Angelica likewise rested in hope, that Iconius would convey her to the Court, and Parismenos continuing his solitary and austere life in the Desert.

### CHAP. XXXI.

How treacherously *Irus* used *Angelica*. How he was murdered by *Anna*. And of *Parismenos* arrivall at *Iconius* Cave. How he rescued *Anna* from a most violent death, and of other accidents that befell.



Afterwards when Angelica had fully recovered her health, then Irus thought the time most fittest served to insinuate himself into her favour, for the fierce flames of his restrained affections did furiously boyl in his breast: by Iconius counsell, would he oftentimes frequent her company, and in such sort, as that he seemed to pity her Passions, and would oftentimes enter into discourses of great penitency, for his outrage committed against her: but in such sort, that he craved her good opinion of his good intent towards her.

This behavior he used so long, that Angelica began to conceive well of him, and to remit some part of her conceived displeasure and also her fear of his further cruelty: and many times Iconius and all the rest of their company, being out of the Cave, left Irus alone with Angelica. who behaved himself in such decent sort, and with such kind behaviour towards her in every respect that Angelica thought, he had utterly abandoned his former rude and uncivil behaviour,

Iconius afterwards one day being in talk with Irus, espied one of his associates come in grievously wounded, who declared unto them that he had met with a strange Knight, from whom he had hardly escaped with life. Iconius hearing his speeches,

was

was much troubled in his mind, to know what he should be, that within some three dayes after, making Irus privy to his intent, went out of the Cave (accompanied by all the rest of his fellows) to him, seeing Irus alone in the cave. And after Leonius departure seated himselfe downe in a melancholly study thinking himself too foolish to live so long in the sight of his beloved Angelica, without any hope of her favour, and also began to perswade himself that Leonius had some other intent then he made shew of, which might disappoint him of obtaining her custody: he then began to recal to his secret view, her divine perfection, which thought inflamed his heart, with such desire, that the love earnest affection which he had by Leonius counsell restrained, burst out into an exceeding inflamed lust: that he presently went into the place where Angelica was, who expected no other proffer of behaviour, but that which he had before used suffered him to sit down by her, & entered into communication with him as formerly she had done: but he having his mind meditating how to satisfie his desire, beheld her exceeding beauty with a greedy eye, & devoured the piercing power of her conquering beauty, with such desire that it augmented his affections, and set on fire his now intended purpose; to attain the conquest of her love, and the possession of her person, that he seized his hand upon hers, grasping the same sometimes strictly, & then again playing with her dainty fingers, setting his eyes upon hers, making a sad sigh a prologue to his speech: he said,

Most divine Lady pardon me, if I presume beyond the bounds of your favourable licence, to touch your precious hand, or if I enter into speeches that may disagree with your fancy, or shew the integrity of my devotion: but for that I rely upon your benignity, and have long time by fear to be offensive, rather indured inward and secret torment, then upon presumption procure you any disquiet, have concealed my love duty and affection, to your perfections. Now finding you at leisure, and feeling my own torments increase, humbly beseech you, pity my long continued griefs, & grant me some favor to revive my heart with comfort, for you know that I have long time been enthralled to your beauty, and bound to apply my fancy, to merit your favor,

which

which love hath ever since continued constant and immovable, and will still so continue whilst my life doth last, which love compelled me to that boldnesse, to bring you from the Natolian Court, with intent to carry you into my Country, and there to make you the Governour and ruler of me and mine. And now that you have had this tryall of my constancy, what need you deny me your favour, considering there is no knight hath attended your liking with more fervency.

Angelica hearing his speeches, would have taken her hand from him, but he still held the same, whilst she answered: I had thought you had forgotten your former desire, and would not have troubled me with the same, but especially now, when you see I am not to make any change of the choice, I have already made. Therefore I should account it great wisdom in you, to abstaine from desiring of that which you have been so often denied and see so much unlikelyhood to obtain: for should I now yield my self to please your fancy, I should dishonour my name, my stock, and reap continuall ignominy, and scandall to my selfe and you: and besides my disloyalty, breed everlasting discord and war, betwixt you and the noble Prince of *Bohemia*, who is of such force and invincible strength, that he would waste your Country, and never give over untill he had wrested me out of your possession, therefore I pray you give over your sute, which may (if obtained) bring so many adherent miseries and inconveniences, as you will soon repent you. I beseech you (quoth he) let not vain supposell of *Parismus* strength or *Parismus* revenge, procrastinate my desires, for I esteeme them as nothing in my country, being of sufficient strength to beat a mightier foe backe, Therefore sweet Lady grant me your love without the which I cannot live, and armed therewith, I shall be of sufficient strength to resist any foe: therefore deny me not. Which said, having her hand still in his, he pulled her to him suddainly, and clasping her in his armes, he by his strength, took from her a sweet kisse: with which she was so much moved, that with a suddaine start she sprang from forth his armes, and fearing to be again so surprized, would have departed out of the roome, which he perceiving, having armed himselfe with impudency, ran after and caught her in his armes, and by force brought her back, whilst she struggled to get from him, but he being too strong for

for her held her so fast that she could not stir, but with cheeks as red as scarlet, said. If ever you expectabant at my haunts, leave off, and do not seek to attain my love by violence for if you do, I swear by heaven, I will rather suffer you to tear my heart in pieces, then yield you any labour: therefore, if there be any virtue, humanity, or good nature, or courtesie in you: let me go.

Irus was nothing dissuaded with her speeches, but now that he had begun, lust and immoderate desire urged him on, that he held her the more straitly: and by constraint bereft her of many kisses, with that she gave such shrieks that the hollow vaults of the Catherang there with: and Anna came running in, before whose coming, he used her so indecently, that she cried out unto Anna for help, who used her uttermost endeavour to rescue her mistress from forth his power, and shew'd her from dishonour, which with most violent and indecent behaviour he proffered, and at last she got from forth his hands, wearied with resistance, and falling down upon her knees, said. Irus be not so inhumane as to despoile me of my honour, but desist from this shameless impudency, which will make you odious in the sight of heaven. What will my life do you good, which with that is lost? What pleasure can you reap with this violence? Or what benefit can it be to you to spill my blood? Seek not my love in this sort, which will turne that good opinion I had of you to hatred, and if you will needes have the fruition of my love, let it be honourable sort, and not with such unreadiness: with that a flood of brinish teares, ran down her cherry cheeks: whilst he stood over her like a ravenous Lyon over ailly harmlesse Lambe, ready to devour the same. When so Irus stood ready to seize upon her againe, his heart panting with striving, and his vaines swollen with desire, no more mollified with her lamentations, then the hardest Adamant with the fall of soft Snow. And casting a most bitter countenance on Anna, who stood not farre off and onely hindred his lust, he suddenly caught his dagger in his hand, and ranne after her to have stabd her, which caused her with an exceeding out cry, to run out of the room. and he after her. And Angelica calling after him. Stay good Irus stay: and when he was returned, she as fast flying from him: and seeing Anna out of the room, he caught hold of her, and pulled her to him, holding his dagger in his hand whilst she lay trembling at his feet

said

said: Angelica, my resolutions is to obtaine thy love either by force or fair means: therefore give consent or I vow I will never desist though it cost thy life. Angelica hearing his speeches, said. Irus good Irus let me alone and use me not thus shamefully and indecently, and I will tell thee my mind for were it not for thy usage, and uncivill rudenes being never in my life before so used, thou mightst peradventure have had a greater favor with my consent. therefore I pray thee be not so inhuman, and thou shalt see I will do more with gentlenes, then thy rudenesse can compell me to.

Which that he turned himself from her, whilst she arose from the ground, she was no sooner upon, her feet but her senses failed her: and the lively red, faded out of her crimson cheeks: even whilst Anna cryed help help, she fell down in her armes dead then Irus with Anna, did the best he could to recover her, beginning to weare madde with grief. for within short space she began to draw in her sweet breath again, and lifting up her eyes, with a grievous sigh, she said. Oh Irus, cruell Irus. When Anna seated her upon the bed, and she said, Irus had not thought you would not have used me thus cruelly, but shew some signes of vertue in you. And rather then you shall offer you shall offer me any more such violence, I promise you that I will depart with you into Tunis, and I will yield myself to be in honourable sort at your direction.

Angelica (quoth he) give me possession of your love, which is that I desire, and without that I cannot be satisfied. Why Irus (quoth she) will nothing satisfie you but my dishonour? What rage ruleth your mind, what lust is that possesseth your heart? Is this the honorable mind should be in a King? Good Irus be not so cruell, I am not cruell and it is but folly to stand upon tearmes of deniall. Irus (quoth she) then let me request this one favour, leave me alone some space to confer with my maid, and I will send her for you ere it be long. Irus being in some hope to attain his desire, finding her speeches so gentle thought that her maid, would perswade her rather to yield, then to hazard his fury, told her he would do that at her request, and so departed.

He was no sooner gone but Angelica with weeping eyes wringing her hands, and making exceeding lamentation, intreated Anna to counsell her what to doe. Mistress (quoth she) if you would with



With fair promises cause him to desist untill more convenient time. or that you could delay him off till *Iconius* return, then there were some hope to escape. Oh *Anna* (quoth she) if he come in againe, it will be impossible, for his fierce and beastly desperate rage is such, therefore, if thou lovest me do one thing at my request, and I shall thinke my self satisfied.

Mistresse (quoth she) whatsoever it be I will do it. Nay but *Anna*, thou shalt sweare or else I will not trust thee, neither will I reveal it unto thee. Dear Mistresse (quoth she) I swear by Heaven and all happines, I will perform the utmost of your will. Then *Angelica* taking up *Irus* dagger, which he had carelessly left on the floore, gave it her, and said. I account my honour dearer then my life, and had rather dye in this place, then live in continuall shame and reproach hereafter. Therefore *Anna* I charge thee by al the duty and love, thou bearest me, by the honour thou owest to chastity, and by the oath thou hast made, to sheath that ponyard in my breast, to rid me from his tyranny, which if thou refuselt to do, my self will without intermission execute. With that *Anna* clasped fast the dagger in her hand, with her eyes overflowing with teares, said.

Mistresse I bow to Heaven I will never execute that deed, neither shall your self do it, but first give me leave to try: if I can perswade *Irus* from his purpose: with that taking the dagger in her hand, she went to seeke him, but hee being gone from *Angelica*, swoln with lust, and panting with striving, layd himselfe downe upon his bed, meditating one what he had done, and what further pleasure he should reape, if she gave her consent, his desire being somewhat allwaged with his late striving with her, and his senses overcome with these meditations, he was faine fast asleep, lying upon his back, his doublet unbuttoned, and he yet sweating, in which sort *Anna* found him and coming to his bedside, seeing him fast asleep, having his dagger in her hand, thought to stick the same to his heart: with that an exceeding trouble affrighted her heart, and all her body and joynts shooke for feare, but remembering how cruelly he had used her Mistresse, and what a desperate case he had left her in, & what outrage he might intend, having given them but little time of consideration, and withall that *Angelicaes* life and her owne were likely to satisfie him and nothing else, but most of all finding so fit an opportunity

opportunity to be forever rid of him. she lifted up her hands, thinking the heavens favoured her, and allotted that as a meanes to perswade *Angelicaes* honour, praying the heavens to strengthen her: aiming right in the middle of his breast, which was unbuttoned, with both her hands she smote the dagger so far into his breast, that the point appeared at his back, with which he gave an exceeding groan, and starting up whilest she fled, he pursued her, seeing himself mortally wounded, and followed her even unto the room where *Angelica* was, by which time his vitall spirits decayed, and he fell dolour dead, tumbling in his goze: with that *Angelica* gave an exceeding shriek, not knowing what *Anna* had done: But viewing him, she perceived the dagger gozed in his breast, and *Anna* told her what she had done. With that *Angelica* was exceedingly affrighted, and said *Anna* how shall we now be rid of his hateful carcasse.

Sweet Mistresse (quoth *Anna*) be you of good comfort, and let me alone: and with that arming her self with her wonted boldnesse, whilst her hands shooke and trembled with feare, she took him by the heels, and dragged him forth of the Caves mouth, and tumbled him into a pit hard by, and cast a great many leaves and mosse upon him, that his body was quite covered from sight, which done she returned, and told *Angelica* what she had done.

*Angelica* seeing her self thus fortunately rid of *Irus*, whose fury had brought her self in danger, said. O *Anna* what power was it, that animated and strengthened thee to that boldnesse, how shal we satisfie *Iconius* at his return, who loveth *Irus* so well, that he will soone misse him, and if he know what we have done, we shall be in some danger of his fury, Thus do my misfortunes daily encrease, and one misery followeth in anothers neck, to augment my cares.

What thinkest thou is become of *Parismenos*? Doest thou not think he taketh my absence grievously? yes I fear me *Anna*, hee is too ready to surfer with grief, and thereby may much indanger, his health and besides, I perswade my selfe hee is wandred from the *Natalan* Court, into farre Countries in my search. If *Iconius* find how we have used *Irus*, then will he forever detain us here. How often have I been crast in my love? being now in worse case then ever I was, and more unlikely to come to enjoy my *Parismenos*, then when my father imprisoned me so closely in the Maiden Tower

Tower? No time ye els me any rest from trouble: no place giveth me security, nothing but sorrow is allotted to my portion, and nothing but endlesse and perpetuall sorrow attendeth my steps.

Dear Mistre Ne(quoth Anna) I beseech you adde comfort to your heart, for I will undertake to satisfy Iconius and make a currant excuse for Irus absence: and howsoever it falleth out, you shall be no way troubled therewith. In such such speeches they continued on, till the night drew nigh and they expected Iconius return: Where we will leave her.

Iconius being gone out of the Cave, with an intent to find out the strange Knight, tracing down most part of the day before he could find him: But at last coming by the place where he had rescued Angelica from Irus, Parismenos espied him, having but two Knights at that time with him, and came out unto him. Iconius espousing him coming to him, said Knight, I have wandered all this day, to seek you but was frustrated till now the cause was, for that my Knights were sometimes slain, and often wounded by your valor, that maketh me desirous to know the cause of your discontent being willing to do you what pleasure I can, and also to be acquainted with you: therefore I pray you let me know what you are.

I am (quoth he) a miserable wretch ordained to everlasting torment, banished from joy, exiled from content; wretched and unfortunate: I seek no company, nor desire acquaintance: I care not for ease, but discontent pleaseth me best: This life I lead not by constraint, but that none so well agreeth with my fancy: care keeps me company, and this Desert is fittest for me to dwell in. Sir (quoth Iconius) it seemeth some great mischance, hath driven you voluntarily to take this course or else the cruelty of friends hath exiled you their company. Both (qd. he) but what are you that seek so much my acquaintance and knowledge.

I am (qd. he) a man as miserable as your self, subject to as many misfortunes as your self: and every way filled with discontent: if I should name my self you know me not, having lived many yeares in this Desert: a disconsolate and disquiet life, my habitation being but simple, whether I come of purpose to bring you: for that you noble Chivalry maketh me to honour you: where if you love to live in discontent, that place yeeldeth nothing but sadness, yet with security,

Parismenos

Parismenos having well noted his speeches, began to marvaile what he should be hearing him say, he had lived many yeares in that Desert, thought it good to see his habitation, and therefore said: Sir Knight, although I know not whether I may with security give credit to your speeches, or no, yet if you will vouchsafe me such kindness, I will accept thereof, and for a time, contrary to my purpose, take some ease.

Sir (quoth Iconius) you shall upon my faithfull promise rest void of treachery, and be as secure as my self. These speeches past, they departed towards the Cave, continuing as they went in some conference: where they arrived even at such time as Angelica had ended her speeches: And being entred, Iconius told Parismenos that was his habitation, whither he was welcome: Then stepping into Angelicaes room, he thought to have found Irus there: but seeing her bewine and in what sort both she and Anna sate by her weeping, he came unto her with a kind behaviour, demanding her cause of sorrow: But she casting down her eyes to the earth, made no answer. With that he began to suspect Irus had done her some wrong, and marvelling that he could not find him with her, nor in the other room he returned to Anna, and asked her if she could tell where he was: who made him answer that she knew not where he was now; but that he had bin there not long since. With that casting his eyes down to the earth in a stupor, he clapped the floor stained and besprinkled with gore blood, but therewithall his heart began to swell, and looking with a fearfull countenance, he asked what blood that was: with that Angelica cast down her eyes, and Anna blusht, but he being desirous to know, demanded againe what blood it was? Anna then answered, it is some of Irus blood spilt by himself, woe (quoth he) did he that deed? Because (quoth she) Angelica would not give consent to his wicked Lust. Where is he now (said he)?

I know not, answered Anna, neither do I care. With that Iconius perceiving the tract of blood that went out of the chamber, followed the same to his bed, which he found all bespattered therewith: and again followed the blood to the Caves mouth that he was assured that Irus was slain, that in a monstrous rage he ran in again to Anna, saying: Irus is murdered, and you have done the deed.

Anna then knowing her selfe guilty, stood as one confounded with fear: but at last, rebiving her self from her dumps she said: If I did murder him, it was but to save my own life, and Angelica's honour.

With that he was so enraged, that he drew his sword, and in a fury would have slaine her, but that she with all speed ran out of the room, and he after her ready to strike her dead. Parismenos hearing that noise and seeing Iconius pursuing the Damoszell, being of a quick conceit even as the blow was descending slept under the sword, and caught the blow, which otherwise had parted her life.

Iconius being enraged took another at him. until Parismenos drawing his sword, said: Hold thy hand and know whom thou striketh, or I will goze my sword in thy heart blood. Pardon me good Knight (quoth he) rage made me forget my self. What Damoszell is that (quoth Parismenos) you would have slain? It is (qd. he) one that hath murdered my dear friend. By this time some of them had caught Anna, and brought her back; whom Iconius offered again to have slain, but that Parismenos having seen her countenance knew her: and saying Iconius again, said. Be not so rash without advisement, to lay such violent hands on a filly Damoszell, and before thou execute revenge, be better advised, and first know the truth of the fact she hath committed, and upon what occasion she was urged thereto.

I will not (quoth Iconius) follow your counsell; but now she having confest the deed, I will be severely revenged by her life and nothing else shall make me satisfaction for his blood, which she hath shed.

Discourteous Knight (qd. he.) art thou void of humanity, or do I wish thee to do any thing that disagreeeth to reason? I sweare by Heaven let but a hair of her head perish by thy accursed hand, and thy death shall be the ransom: here I stand in her defence, and therefore the proudest of you all touch her, and if you dare. With that Iconius said: dost thou requite my friendship in this sort, to take part with mine enemies? or tell me dost thou know that Damoszell, that thou standest so peremptorily in her defence? I do nothing but that which every knight is bound unto: which is to defend Ladies wrong; neither do I know this Damoszell, but will defend her to,

for that she is an ady; until I may know, whether you offer this out, rage against her wrongfully or by just desert: Which once tried, does then what thou wilt, with her. When Iconius said, Damoszell tell me why thou stealest him? Anna made this answer: We offered violence to Angelica, and with his ponyard attempted to slay her: who will tell you the truth of all. With that they altogether, went into the room where Angelica was.

Parismenos beholding her, had much ado to withhold himselfe from bewailing what he was: but yet with constrained forbearance, he stood still, and heard her declare Irus wicked behaviour, and in what manner she had wrought revenge against him.

With that Iconius said: Wicked woman, couldest thou not have wrought some other meanes to disappoint his intent, which I can hardly believe, but that thou must murder him? Heaven and earth shall not drive thee from my fury: For being the untimely death of that loving kind and courageous King, neither shall any thing but thy destruction appease my wrath, for the losse of my deare friend Irus.

Parismenos hearing him name Irus, said: Alas! that treacherous and disloyall villain, Irus, that slabe; Damoszell thou hast well revenged the wrongs he hath done me, upon his own accursed head; and therefore will I be thy defence, and shield thee from harm; For had I met him my self, I would have done no lesse then thou hast done: he was the most dishonourable knight that ever drew breath.

But tell me (quoth he to Iconius) what art thou that offerest such cowardly violence to restlesse Ladies, and imprisonest them in such sort, and also bearest so disloyall a mind, as to uphold him in his villany.

Iconius was so enraged with his words, that he said: base villain, did I but lately take thee up as a run-away, and brought thee to my Cell, of pity to succour thy distressed estate, and dost thou thus requite my kindnesse, to become my examiner.

Parismenos hearing his speeches, so much disdained them, that he let flye at him with trell violent blows, and with such fury, that he drove Iconius backwards out of the room: and withall gave him so many wounds, that had not some of his Associates kept to him, he had been slain: When three of them at once assailed Parismenos,

lent by his invincible valour, first one of them and then another, lost their lives: which Leonius seeing, he would have said have stayed to have spoken to him; but his heart being set on revenge, and desiring to have the possession of Angelica again, followed his fight with such rigor, that he had well near slain Leonius.

By this time some of the other came in: which seeing Leonius in such danger by the valour of that one knight, advising his Cavalry, they set to rescue him from his violence: which when they had done, Leonius said: I might tell me what thou art, that knowing thy name, I may know whom it is I resist thy name (quoth he) is Parismenos. With that Leonius flung away his sword and says: O most honorable knight, I beseech myself to your mercy for that very that name do I honour, wishing that it is against my will, that ever I offended you.

Parismenos hearing his words, says: And if thou art my friend (quoth he) I am sorry that I met thee: but that I have hurt thee, which said he, called into the boome, where Angelica was, and coming to her, not being able to use any delay, but forced by desire to comfort her heart, by giving her knowledge of his safety, pulling as he passed about the high beheld his face: he said: O deare Lady, up Angelica, behold your good friend Parismenos. Angelica then knowing him, with a modest behaviour, clasping her arms about his neck, and sending a number of sweet kisses upon his Lippes: which done, and withdrawing her arms again, he eyes melted into a river of tears, and afterwards, says: Welcome my deare Lord Parismenos, I am glad yet to be my bride. Well have I now prevailed against calamitie, for your fight hath banished him my breast: how miserable and dangerous, was my estate once this day: and how happy and serene thousand times blest am I by your presence? If you do account your self happy by my presence (quoth he) for ever shall you be happy, for never will I depart from your sight. But ten thousand times more then happy do I account my self, to be so esteemed of you, that have never deserved any favour, but by my evil fortunes have brought you into these calamities. Nay, good Parismenos say not so: for not you, but the unlikly accidents have ordered me some sorrow, but in the end have repaid me double with this content.

In these and such like speeches did they expresse their joyes, for each others presence and preservation: till Parismenos buckling on his helmet againe, went out to see whether Leonius did pretend any treachery against him, but him he found unarmed, and his knights dressing his wounds: and seeing Parismenos well armed (as fearing to dishonour himself) he gave him such assurance of quiet, both by his own firm word and the protestations of all the rest, that Parismenos rested in some assurance of peace: and Leonius after hee had his wounds dressed, came with his souldiers to the place where Angelica was, and said:

O Most divine Lady, I beseech you pardon my offence, I confesse I loved you well, because he was my deare friend, and finding no such misbehaviour in him as hee I knew him, I could not believe her report, until I saw you justify the same, and for amends I offer my self to be at your disposition: desiring you to term my preferred offence for I am death: And withall I beseech you make no doubt of my good meaning, for that I have bent my whole endeavors, with truth to be at your command, neither harbor any further conceit of violence to be offered you in this place.

Having ended these speeches he presently caused good meat to be prepared for them, and they were served in as cleanly and decent sort as could possibly be afforded in that place.

CHAP. XXX. II.  
How Parismenos got shipping for Germany. How they were betrayed by Theoretus. And how after a stormy Tempest, and escape from drowning they were preserved by a Fisherman of Thessaly.



Parismenos now having againe attained Angelicaes possession, the want wherof had before long time oppressed and vexed, his troubled heart with care, and having refreshed themselves with the repast Leonius had provided: whilst Leonius and his servants (went by Apnaes direction) to the place, where the dead body of Iudas lay to bury the same he took Angelica in his arms, placing himselfe in the view of her attractive beauty amongst the rest, uttering these speeches.



My dearest Love, I hope you wil pardon my speeches, if they proceed from a bolder familiarity then heretofore: for that now having obtained your gentle consent to perpetuall love, and having dedicated your selfe as mine to dispose of, I shall not fear in boldnesse to call you mine owne, and assume such interest as you have kindly granted. Now these misfortunes are thus overblowne, though with your misery, which hath been my torment, I beseech you banish from your mind the remembrance of former sorrow, and repose your confidence in my fidelity: For since I have enjoyed your presence nothing shall make me part from you, not so much as out of your sight: Neither will I (untill I have conducted you unto the place I most desire) by no misadventure be drawn from you, neither is my mind now in quiet, for that notwithstanding my shew of credence, I give no trust to Iconius truth: but will trust him so farre as I have tryall of his Loyalty, and not otherwise: but to morrow morning, so please you: we will leave this place, and betake our selves for some course of security: for I see that being in this Countrey, I shall never be in security, but many will seek to crosse my content, although I may repose assured confidence in your vertuous kindnesse, which hath been extended farre beyond the bounds of my desart; and Marcellus friendship I know is firm, and that I might I am sure, repose my life with assured confidence on these firm foundations, yet I feare mee, that some misfortune or other will still crosse our content: and againe, when we think our selves in most security, then our hap-piness into adversitie, that I know not well what course to undertake, that may agree with your liking, and give me any assurance of quiet.

Angelica perceiving that many cares oppress his heart, in regard of her welfare, and seeing with what affection he tended her quiet, she made this answer. My beloved Lord, how unfortunate may I account my self in this, that my misfortune procureth you so much disquiet? I beseech you rest in assured confidence of my constancy, that shall continue inviolable for ever, being subject to so many misadventures, that I have procured both mine own and your most miserable torments: being of the mind that you are, that this Countrey will never yeeld us security: Therefore if you can advise me to take any other course with you, which may give us any assur-

ance

rance of rest, be assured that notwithstanding to attempt the same might incurre thousands of inconveniences, I will most willingly, undertake the same, and with more constancy then you can impose upon me: Therefore I beseech you counsel me of any course that shall agree with your fancy, and that and nothing else shall please me, for I commit my self wholly to your disposition: and therefore as you determine of your self, so determine of me, for I account my self no other then your self. *Parismenos* made her this answer: Then Lady: I think it best woforsake this Countrey quite, and begin to take our journey towards *Bohemia*, where I dare assure both you and my self of quiet and rest.

I am (quoth *Angelica*) wholly to be directed by you, and my desire is no lesse then yours to attain that heavenly place: for I account both my parents, friends, and Countrey as nothing, in respect of the Love and duty I bear to you.

After these speeches past, *Iconius* was returned from burping *Jrus*, whose mind *Parismenos* felt in these speeches. Now is the time, that the Princess and my self must make tryall of your friendship, which is your consent and company to a matter of importance, for our departure out of this place.

My Lord (saide *Iconius*) whatsoever it be to pleasure you, and the Princess, if it lie in my power to further the same: I vow and protest to use my uttermost endeavour therein. Then this it is (quoth he) *Angelica* and my selfe are agreed to leave this Countrey and not to returne to *Ephesus*, for divers occasions that I will hereafter make you acquainted withall: but to travail towards *Bohemia*, and afterwards give *Marcellus* knowledge of our safety: therefore I ask your counsell for the best course to be taken for our furtherance herein.

My Lord (replied *Iconius*) to undertake the *Travaille* by Land, would be ever tedious and dangerous, by reason of the long space betwixt this and Germany, and the many rude and Savage Villages we must passe by: therefore I think the best course is, to get shipping which may land us somewhat nearer the Countrey, and then our journey by Land shall be the lesse. And to that effect, I have this to further us: Certain Merchants of *Jaly* have continuall *Travell* in this countrey, with whom we may get passage thither,

and



and being there, our desire is more easie to be obtained, and the place where these Italian ships do lie at Anchor, is not far hence: but that with a little labour we may convey the Princesse thither. I like your counsell exceeding well: quoth *Parismenos* but how shall we come to have conference with these Italians?

My Lord (said he) let that be my charge, and so please you, I will depart to put the same in execution presently, and you in the meantime may remain with the Princesse, and be assured of my fidelity: for heavens grant my overthrow, if I deal not faithfully: with that he departed and *Parismenos* returned to *Angelica*, spending the time with her in great content, until *Leonius* return.

Early the next morning, *Leonius* returned to the Mesart, and certified *Parismenos* of that which he had done, which was this: There was then in the Harbour a ship of Italy, that was ready to depart towards that Country, under the Government of *Theoretus*, an Italian Merchant, with whom *Leonius* had agreed for their Passage, not telling him what they were that should go with him, and withall, promised him to return that forenoon or not at all: *Parismenos* hearing his speeches, was exceedingly glad thereof, and presently made *Angelica* acquainted therewith, who most willingly gave her consent, and presently they departed towards the Haven, being in all but eight persons. And coming to the ship, they were kindly received of *Theoretus* the master. Who having seen his voyage, and having no other thing to say for, the which serving, hoisted saile, and with a merry Gale they lanch'd into the deep: *Parismenos* coming to *Theoretus*, demanded which was the nearest course to Germany, for that he was bound thither: Sir (quoth he) if it please you, after I have landed in *Italy* and dispatched some business, I have there of importance, I will then be ready to convey you to the nearest Haven that lyeth towards these parts, so that you will content me for my voyage.

My friend (quoth *Parismenos*) if thou wilt do me this friendship, I will content thee to the uttermost of my desire: Then he returned to the place where *Angelica* was, coming thither with a full heart of a happy and speedy voyage.

Some dayes they continued on their course with prosperous success: till *Theoretus* told them he was within two dayes sailing

of Italy, where accordingly he arrived. where *Parismenos* and *Angelica* refreshed themselves, until *Theoretus* had ended all his business, and was growing to a composition with *Parismenos*: it fortuned that there was then in the place where they arrived, a knight of Slavonia named *Arenus*, who had secretly beheld *Angelica's* beauty, and was so surprized therewith, that he began to devise what means to use to possesse her, and hearing that they were bound for Germany, and supposing *Parismenos* had been her husband, he used the more expedition, his desire being grown to that extremity, in the small time of their abode, that he thought it impossible for him to live without the fruition thereof. And oftentimes growing into conference with *Theoretus*, he understood the truth of all by his report. And *Arenus* finding some hope to bring him to condescend to his practise, upon a time began to commune with him, and in the end, convinced with him for a summe of money, to convey them for him, into what place he would. With whom *Arenus* dealt so cunningly, and so strictly, that he bound him by many oaths, to perform the same which he for greedinesse of the sum of money, was most resolutely determined to do.

Now the time of departure being come, *Theoretus* with a dissimbling countenance colouring his intended villany, came to *Parismenos*, and told him that his business was ended, and the wind still fresh for their departure.

*Parismenos* being glad thereof, and having before agreed with him for the price of his Passage, brought the Princesse along with *Leonius* and the rest, where they found *Arenus*, whom *Theoretus*, told, he was one that was likewise travailling to some part of Germany. *Parismenos* little suspecting their drift, accepted of his company and used him kindly. *Arenus* put on such an outward shew of honesty, and framed himself to such a kind of behaviour, that *Parismenos* grew into great good liking of him, and into such familiarity, that he told him what he was.

*Arenus* hearing that he was Sonne to *Parismenos*, then grew into protestations of reverence and duty that he bore to him, and into many such other like bewees of dutifull regard, that *Parismenos* related to him the whole summe of his estate, and what the Lady *Angelica* was.

And some two dayes they past in this sort, *Parismenos* and *Angelica* with a joyfull heart going towards their misery, and nothing misdoubting *Theoreus* treachery, thought themselves sailing toward Germany, when indeed they were a quite contrary way. When suddenly an exceeding tempest arose, and the winds began to blow and rage exceedingly, the rain began to fall in such abundance, that the Ship was ready to be drenched with the same.

Which cruell Tempest continued for the space of two dayes, and two nights, in that most raging and extreme sort, that there was none but expected present destruction: then began *Parismenos* to curse himself for leaving the Country of *Naxolia*, and committing himself to the mercy of the Seas, of whose fury he had before tasted. *Angelica* was in great feare of her life: *Theoreus* conscience began to accuse him of villany, and *Arenus* to repent his treachery: and whilst they were in this extremity of fear, the ship wherein they were, was by violence driven upon a Rock, and there split in sunder, that they were all driven to shift for their lives. *Parismenos* being amazed at this misfortune, yet had a speciall regard to the Princess, whom he caught in his armes, & with her got on to a piece of the Ship, that with the violence of the Sea, was parted from the rest, which was not likely long to support them. And the rest some drowned, and some by other admirable meanes preserved. When presently the storm began to cease, and the Sea, suddenly did grow calm, it chanced that a Fisher-man was not farre off in harbour, who beheld this shipwreck: and with all speed seeing the storm ceased, dashed with his boat thitherwards, and first came to *Parismenos*, and *Angelica* who even then were ready to perish: for *Angelica* affrighted with the terror of death, being with fear and weaknesse not able to support her selfe upon the piece of broken ship, was fallen off, whom *Parismenos* had held up by her garments, being with every little motion himselfe ready to overturn, and so to perish together: to whom the Fisherman approached and by the Divine Providence, came at that instant to preserve their harmless lives, and took them both into his Boat, and at *Parismenos* request hastened to save as many as he could possible of the rest, when presently *Parismenos* espied *Anna* tumbling up from under the water, whom by good fortune he caught hold of, and drew up to him, who by that time she had

aboyled

aboyled abundance of water out of her mouth, began to revive: by this time the Fisherman had gotten in *Iconius* and *Theoreus* both of them being in great danger of death, or in a manner dead, but all the rest were quite drenched, and neither they nor any part of the Ship to be seen: presently the Fisherman conveyed them to shore, not far from which place was his house, whether likewise, after they had all recovered their senses, he brought them.

*Parismenos* glad of that fortunate escape, and seeing in what weak estate the Princess was, desired the old Fisherman and his wife, to do her uttermost to succour them in that distresse: and having a speciall regard of *Angelica*, he with the old woman named *Dorella*, disrobed her of her wet ornaments, and the old woman put her on dry linnen, the best she had and got her into a warm bed, which greatly revived her abated senses, *Dorella* likewise had the like care of *Anna*, being of such a good and vertuous disposition, that of her own pitifull inclination, she would have hazarded her life to succour them. *Iconius* by this time had fully recovered his senses, but *Theoreus* still continued in great danger of death.

How *Osiris* hearing of *Parismenos* landing in *Thessaly*, carried him to his Cattle. By what unexpected meanes, *Dionisus*, *Parismenos*, *Olivia* and *Laurana* met them at a Banquet. How they were with Pomp conveyed to *Thebes*, and afterwards married with great Royalty.



All things being in as good order as might be, and *Theoreus* well cherished as could be in that place, the night began to approach, when *Parismenos* being in the Chamber with *Angelica*, drying himself by the fire, uttered these speeches to the Fisherman. Good Father, what recompence shall I ever be able to make you for this kindnesse by whose means our lives are preserved: But assure your self, that henceforth, I will prove so grateful, that you shall not say, but your guests were friendly in rewarding, as you were kind and liberrall in succouring us. And because you shall not be ignorant to whom you have done this friend

friendship, know you, that you have saved the lives of two young Princes. The old man hearing his speeches, told him, that all that he had should be at his command. In these and many other speeches, they spent the evening till Dorella had provided their supper, and dressed the best meat she had to comfort Angelica, who was well revived and cheerful, in whose company, Parismenos and the Irishman and his wife, staid all that night, because indeed there was no other bedding: in which time, Parismenos comforted Angelica with many speeches, who was only glad to see him in safety.

Early the next morning, Theoretus having with much ado gotten into the room where Parismenos and Angelica were, and seeing himself past hope of life, uttered these speeches. O noble knight, I humbly beseech you to pardon and forgive that grievous and heinous offence I have committed against you, and that most vertuous Lady, by the instigation and incitement of Arenus, who was a knight of Slavonia, with whom I had agreed for a sum of money, to convey you to his Country, whose intent was to betray the Lady into his keeping: but both his wicked intent, and my treason, is now by the divine providence prevented and my self left to your mercy, beseeching you to pardon my monstrous misdeed: which when he had said, and they but a small time considered of his treachery and their admirable preservation, even when Parismenos was ready to speake to him, he gave up the Ghost and dyed: which when they beheld, the old Irishman presently conveyed him out of the room, and afterwards buried him.

Parismenos then growing into a deep consideration of his estate, and withall, what he had ever past, entered into these speeches. Was ever any man so unfortunate as I am to be tossed with so many miseries, driven from place to place, and yet can attain no harbor of quiet? Were it my destiny to endure these torments alone, then could I with more patience overpasse them, but all that ever came into my company, are with me subject to the like misfortune: would we were now again in Natolia, for I am further from the hope of attaining to Bohemia now, then I was then: we are now driven past our knowledge into a strange Country, and far from all meanes of redresse.

Could I but find means to send to Bohemia, to give my noble Father

ther knowledge of my abode, then might I be in some better hope of safety. Angelica seeing his labours, accompanied his complaints with her weeping tears, which augmented his heaviness and sorrows to a greater and higher degree, that he was ready with her to shed some tears, but that his manly heart would not suffer him.

Dorella likewise being by, and hearing his complaints wherein he named Parismus (whom she had heard married the Princess Laura-na) to be his Father, could not be in quiet untill her husband was come in, to whom she declared the truth of what she had heard. The old man hearing that, presently came into the place where Parismenos was, and said unto him. O my wife telleth me, how that you named your self son to Parismus, which maketh me bold to ask you whether she said true or not, whereof I most earnestly desire to be resolved.

Good Father (quoth Parismenos) I am son to Parismus: but what maketh thee thus desirous to know that? Because (quoth he) I know that noble Prince, and would not doubt (ere long) but soon to bring you where he is, and to use my best endeavours to further you in that behalf. For know, most noble Prince, that now you are come into the Land of Thessaly where great Dionisius is King.

And moreover I may boldly assure you, that both the famous and worthy Prince Parismus, with the Princess Laura-na, are now in this country at the Court, in the city of Thebes. The occasion of whose arrival here, was by reason that Dionisius became extremely sick and sent for them: who came thither to visit him not many dayes since.

Parismenos heart was so revived with the hearing of his words, that he embraced the old man with exceeding joy and gladness, being scarce able to contain himself within the compasse of moderate rejoicing: then presently coming to Angelica, and taking her by the hand, he most earnestly desired her to be of good comfort, for that their estate was farre better then they before thought it had been: whose heart was likewise revived in a sudden disposition to a comfortable affection: For whereas before she was terrified with fear of drowning, possessed with a wearisome conceit of further travell, driven into a strange and unknown place, far from her desire, and contrary to her expectation: and withall, saw Paris-

menos, sad and carefull heart oppress with much grief, which grieved her more then all the rest. But now being in safety and in Thessaly, where she should soon meet *Parismus* and the *Princesse Laurana* the thing she most desired, and also seeing all her sadnesse turned to joy, and every thing fall out most prosperously, even according to her hearts content, she seemed like one newly revived from death to life. And with *Parismenos* and the rest of that small company rejoiced exceedingly, casting aside all further shew of discontent, and spending the time they had to stay there in great pleasure, the rather for that *Angelica*, *Anna*, and *Jeonius* were now in perfect health.

And on a time *Parismenos* seeing nothing to hinder his determination, demanded of the *Fisherman*, how farre it was to the City of *Thebes*. My Lord (quoth he) it is somewhat nigher miles which is our best way to travaill thither (quod *Parismenos*) My Lord, quod he, were much for that fair Lady to travell thither on foot, but if you would be raied by me, you should go to a noblemans house within two miles, whose name is *Ohris* the only man that the King loveth who I know will bid you welcome, and furnish you with all things necessary, and agreeable to your estate: being indeed the most kindest nobleman in the world. *Angelica* (quod *Parismenos*) of this Noble personage have I heard my father *Parismus* and the noble *Polipus* give many commendations, therefore so please you, we will go to his house. I am exceedingly well contented (quod *Angelica*) My Lord quoth the *Fisherman* so please you, I will give him knowledge of your being here. Doso, said *Parismenos*. The *Fisherman* presently hasted towards *Ohris* Castle and soon arrived there, and being brought before him declared all that had hapned.

*Ohris* at the first gave no credit to his speeches, but said: My friend thou bringest me newes that I can hardly believe: therefore tell mee how thou knowest it is *Parismenos*? He hath told me that he is son to *Parismus*, and the Lady that is with him is daughter to the King of *Natolia*. *Ohris* then presently commanded his Gentlemen to mount themselves, his Lady likewise named *Udalla*, and her Ladies and Gentlewomen were suddenly in a readinesse, and all things necessary in decent manner, to conduct them on wards on their way, with the most state that might be, was prepared, and in that sort, with exceeding joy they rode to the poor Cottage that sheweth such

Nobl

Noble Personages: which the *Fisherman* soon gave *Parismenos* knowledge of, who presently went out to meet *Ohris*, and at the entrance of the way he met him, and with a courteous behaviour they saluted each other. *Ohris* saying: My Lord, because I know you not, I beseech you pardon me, if I demand whether you be the *Prince* or no: I am (quoth he) the most unfortunate *Parismentos*, never made happy till this hour: Then said *Ohris*, In all duty I bid you most heartily welcome into *Thessaly*: which will account it selfe thyce happy by your arrivall. *Udalla* then came and embraced him, shewing by her courteous behaviour manifest tokens of joy for his presence.

Then they three together went in unto the *Princesse Angelica*, whom both *Ohris* and his Lady saluted with most reverent behaviour, desiring her to leave that place, and sojourne in their Castle: whither she should be as welcom as heart could wish: whose kindness both she and *Parismenos* accepted with many thanks, and in most stately manner departed thitherwards. The Ladies attending on *Udalla*, saluted the *Princess* with great reverence, growing into admired estimation of her beauty, the like whereof they never saw in any, but in the *Princess Laurana*.

*Parismenos* would by no means leave the old *Fisherman*, and *Dorella* behind him, but took them along with him, having a speciall regard to reward them kindly that had preserved his and *Angelicaes* life. *Angelica* and *Parismenos* soon arrived at *Ohris* Castle, where they were so sumptuously and shrewdly entertained, as that they exceedingly admired the Noblemans bounty: And being entered the Hall, they beheld many stately descriptions of the famous acts of the *Princes* of *Greece*, and amongst the rest, the whole History of *Parismus* wars with the *Persians*, so lively portrayed, that it would have held them with great delight to behold the same, and coming into the inner Rooms, beheld them so richly furnished, that they grew into admiration thereof, whether *Ohris* and *Udalla* welcomed them with such hearty kindness, that they could not chuse but grow into admirable conceit of their honours, liberall, and befitting the estimation to true honour.

There was a most costly Banquet, furnished with all sorts of precious Delicacies made ready: whither they were with in most

E

space



space invited; Where they heard the sound of much sweet Musick, and beheld the hearts of the whole company belonging to *Osiris*, as it were revived with joy for their presence, which filled their senses with an unthought-of content of delight, which by reason of the former misery they had endured, seemed a Haven of happiness, and a Paradise of pleasure.

And in this sort they spent the day, and at night were conducted to severall lodgings, *Parismenos* by *Osiris*, and others knights that sojourned in this castle and some that attended him. *Angelica* by *Udalla*, and many other gallant Ladies, and beautifull Damozels, with exceeding stateliness and courtesie.

And being alone by themselves, saving that *Anna* was *Angelicaes* bedfellow, which come she was not to resigne, till *Parismenos* should take possession of the same: He on the one side meditated on his happy fortune to arrive in that place, and admired *Osiris* courtesie, and was most of all affected with joy, that *Angelica* was so kindly welcommed to that strange place being far from her owne friends and country, that he did not onely rejoyce at their kinnesse for his own part, but especially for hers, whose content he wished and desired more then his own: And withall, being now in *Thessaly*, his heart was so fully possess'd with desired content, that he seemed not to lack any thing he desired, but only to enjoy *Angelicaes* sweet, divine, and pure loves possession; which he was likewise in assurance to enjoy within that space.

*Angelica* on the other side, spent some part of the night in communication with *Anna*, which added a delight to her senses, relating her misfortunes past, her happy preservation, the courtesie and gentle good nature she found in the fisherman and his wife, which caused her to conceive a persuasion, by the kind and beautifull entertainment she had found in *Osiris*, that the *Thessalians* were people of an exceeding courteous disposition; Whereas many other people both poor and Noble, were rude and barbarous, that she might thinke her self a thousand times blest, that she had made choice of so honorable a knight as *Parismenos* was, and one that was sprung from the race of such noble Parents, and such naturall, kind, and loving subjects, that her heart with these cogitations seemed to be absolutely happy

happy, and her senses were filled with such delightfull content, that in these heavenly meditations she fell into a quiet and easie sleep.

The next morning *Osiris* and *Udalla* were up, ready to use their best and bittermost endeavours to expresse their liberall good will; but the Princes kept their beds longer then usual: For that on the one side, they had spent much of the night in the meditations aforesaid: and on the other side, having been so long time oppressed with carefull cogitations, their senses being now at rest, they slept with great quiet, and at such time as they were awaked, had all things in such ceremonious kind and stately manner ministered unto them, that they could not chuse but admire the same, being loath to motion their departure to the Court, lest *Osiris* should thinke they did not accept of his kind entertainment.

Whil实现 all remained in this great delight in *Osiris* Castle, report had blazed into the hearing of others of the Nobles and knights of the Kings Court, the joy and great feasting was kept by *Osiris*: which was made in such sort, that they were assured some great Personages were arrived there, but none knew what they were, that this newes was so open in the Court that it came to *Dionisius* hearing: who most of all marvelling thereat, and having now fully recovered his health, determined for his Recreation after his long sickness onely with *Parismenos*, and some few of his knights to prosecute secretly to *Osiris* Castle, both to recreate himself, and to know what those should be he entertained, and especially for that he loved *Osiris* exceedingly well: Which determination he made *Parismenos* acquainted with, and the next day accordingly performed the same (which was the third day that *Parismenos* had been with *Osiris*.) And being arrived at the Castle even about noon, he and *Parismenos* entered, whom the Porter well knew, and presently *Dionisius* (not suffering any of his servants be met to give *Osiris* knowledge of his approach) mounted the staires into the great Chamber, where even then *Parismenos*, *Angelica*, and all the rest, were seated at a most costly Dinner.



*Parisius* still stayed with the rest of the knights without the door. *Oliris* soon espied *Dionisius* and suddenly starting from his seat upon his knee did him reverence: *Udalla* and the rest that knew him did the like, whilst *Dionisius* said: *Oliris*, you see a bold guest comes without bidding, but if you had been kind, you would have made me partaker of your mirth. *Parismenos* was so amazed, that a good while he could not tell how to behave himself, but perceiving that it was the King, he with *Angelica* drew towards him, and humbly prostrated themselves before him upon their knees, being unable by the suddenness of their joy to speak.

*Dionisius* not knowing them, and marvelling to see them kneel, was half astonish'd, until *Oliris* to rid him from that doubt, said: My Lord, this knight is Son to the noble Prince *Parisius*. Before he could say any more, or *Dionisius* once salute them, *Parisius* was entered, who at the first knew *Angelica*, and by her his Son, whom otherwise he should not have known, he was so much altered, whose sudden sight so unexpected and so far from his thought, and so contrary to his expectation, and so impossible to his persuasion, made him transformed into a kind of admiration, whether that it might be possible that it was they, or that it was some illusion: but *Parismenos* likewise espying him in such a state, immediately rose from the ground, and upon his knee did him reverence, and *Parisius* embraces him with a most kind, loving, and joyfull behaviour.

*Angelica* likewise knowing him, bent her devotions with all humble reverence to show her love and duty, whilst he raised her from the ground, and embraced her in his tender arms, being unable to expresse his joy to see them there.

*Dionisius* likewise embraced them with great kindness and welcomed them with tears of joy. Sometimes folding *Parismenos* in his arms with a loving behaviour, and holding *Angelica* by the hand, being loath to let the same go, and unable to expresse his inward joy, that he, *Parisius*, and all the rest, were possess'd with such content, as would make a skillfull pen to describe. Their welcomes, kind embracings, gentle speeches, and other signes of contented joy, were such as passeth my uttermost skill to relate and decipher.

*Dioni-*

*Dionisius* then desired them to seat themselves again to their banquet, and he and *Parisius* would bear them company: then they again seated themselves, and himself by *Angelica's* side, using her so kindly, so lovingly, and so familiarly, and with such exceeding mirth, pleasantness, and merry countenance, that *Angelica's* heart was possess'd with joy thereat: *Parisius* admired the same, *Parismenos* rejoiced thereat, and *Oliris* and *Udalla* took exceeding joy thereat, having not a long time seen him so pleasant.

They would have waited, but he commanded them to sit down and be merry. The Noblemen that came with him, which was Lord *Remus*, and others others, he commanded to sit down, uttering these speeches. My noble Children, the great joy I conceive for your presence is such, that it fills my senses with exceeding content, and were *Olivia* and *Laurana* here, I would make account this were the best, most pleasing, most contented, most royal, and delightfull day that ever befell, but since they are absent let us be merry: *Oliris* bid us welcome, for we are all your guests. *Parismenos* and *Angelica*, welcome into *Thessaly*, welcome to your Grandfather, and so exceedingly welcome, as your hearts can wish. *Parisius*, who would have thought that these had been with *Oliris*, what fortunate destiny hath brought them hither? or how are they so happily met to meet us here? Well, did but *Olivia* and *Laurana* know of their being here, they would not long be absent. He had no sooner ended that word, but *Olivia* the Queen, and *Laurana* entred the chamber (the news of his secret departure from the Court, and his intent being told them, they followed him to *Oliris* Castle.) To whom *Olivia* said, My Lord, it rejoiced me to see your Highness so merry. *Dionisius* hearing her speeches, suddenly started, and seeing her and seeing her and *Laurana* there present, said: So marvell though I be merry, having the fair Lady of the Golden Tower by the hand.

With that the whole company rose from the Table, and *Parismenos* knowing his Mother, revered himself before her upon his knee, whilst she (knowing him) embraced him most lovingly, not knowing how suddenly to rejoice sufficiently, *Angelica* not knowing him, but supposing that was *Laurana*, her heart being only devoted to *Parismenos*, thought it her duty to reverence his Pa-

rents so much as himself: therefore with him she did reverence to the Queen and Laurana. And after many greetings, salutations and welcomes past, Dionisius again uttered these speeches.

I know that all here present are exceedingly glad for the safety of these two young princes; then laying a part our salutations, which cannot be suddenly exprest, let us once again, and this third time, seat our selves to this Banquet, and leave all other ceremonies till afterwards for we are determined to bid them welcome, and they shall know that we love them. But first let us refresh our stomakes with *Osiris* costly cheer, and afterwards we will desire to know the occasion and manner of their arrivall into this Country, which was never absolutely happy before this time.

Then they all seated themselves again in great content, Dionisius not suffering Angelica to sit from him, but close by his side, betwixt him and the Queen, every one expressing exceeding joy for their unexpected safety and arrivall in the Country. After dinner was well nigh ended, which was over past with pleasurable content on all sides, and was performed by *Osiris* in great pomp. *Parismus* desired *Parismenos* to declare what misadventure had befallen him since his private departure from the Court at *Ephesus*; and by what occasion they arrived in that place.

Then *Parismenos* declared the truth of all, how he met with *Angelica*, of *Irus* death, *Arenus* and *Theoretus* Treason, and of their preservation by the Fisherman, which greatly delighted them to hear. *Dionisius* then said, which is *Iconius*? Then *Parismus* called for *Iconius*, and he presently came: Whom *Dionisius* *Parismus*, and the rest used most kindly. And the Fisherman and his wife, were by *Dionisius* highly rewarded, and afterwards promoted to great dignity.

Some two dayes they stayed altogether in *Osiris* Castle, spending the time in exceeding mirth. And at last, in great Royalty departed towards the Court, at the City of *Thebes*. Where there were infinite numbers of people with joyful hearts gathered together to welcome them; expressing such joy as is not to be described. And afterwards *Parismenos* and *Angelica*, in the presence and assembly of *Marcellus*, *Remulus*, the King of *Hungaria*, the King of *Sparca*, and divers other noble personages, were with,

with most exceeding royalty affianced together. And after *Dionisius* was dead, *Parismenos* was crowned King of *Thestaly*, and lived all his life time after in great quiet and blessed content, with the fair *Angelica* his Queen: Increasing the honourable fame and dignity of the Kings of *Thestaly*: having one only Sonne and a daughter, whose fortunes and adventures filled the whole world with their fame.

FINIS.



L O N D O N :

Printed by *Bernard Alsop*, dwelling in *Grub Street*,  
near the upper Pump, 1 6 4 9.

